

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4701: 4800

You're Chu Feng? - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4701: You're Chu Feng?

Chapter 4701: You're Chu Feng?

Chapter 4701: You're Chu Feng?

Most of them were disciples of the North Tortoise Hall, but there were some elders amongst them who had come over to watch the commotion.

Even from a distance away, Chu Feng could already figure out the reason why they were gathered around his residence. That was because a disciple of the East Dragon Hall was currently standing at the entrance of it—Tu Yuanyuan.

Tu Yuanyuan had already changed into the clothes donned by disciples of the East Dragon Hall. Put that together with her beautiful appearance and her unconcealed cultivation, it was no wonder why she would become the limelight.

“Chu Feng, you're finally back!”

With Tu Yuanyuan's sharp eyes, she swiftly noticed Chu Feng even before he came close. She rose into the air and flew over to his side.

“So he's Chu Feng!”

“I heard that his cultivation is already at rank one Utmost Exalted level, and he rejected all of the invitations from the East Dragon Hall...”

“That fellow is bound to become a notable figure in the future.”

“It's no wonder why he's able to win the fancy of a junior from the East Dragon Hall right after joining the sect. Ahhh, I'm envious!”

Discussions broke out amidst the crowd as envious and admiring gazes were directed in Chu Feng's direction. Most of the female disciples were eyeing Chu Feng with deeper intentions in mind, and some of their faces reddened while staring at him.

“News sure spread fast here.”

Chu Feng was surprised at how everyone seemed to have already heard of him even though he had just joined the North Tortoise Hall not too long ago. In any case, this wasn't necessarily a bad thing.

His motive for joining the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was to save Zi Ling, but saving Zi Ling was no easy feat. After all, the one who had imprisoned Zi Ling was the sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. In order to achieve his goal, he had to first make a name for himself within the sect, possibly even becoming the strongest disciple here.

Otherwise, there was no way he could win the acknowledgment of the sectmaster and save Zi Ling.

“You were looking for me?” Chu Feng asked.

Even though Tu Yuanyuan was beautiful and had treated him warmly thus far, Chu Feng didn't have a particularly good impression of her even though he didn't detest her.

He knew that the reason why Tu Yuanyuan was treating him differently was because she was aware of his reputation in the Holy Light Galaxy. She knew of the strength and potential he wielded, and that was why she was approaching him. Her intention was never pure in the first place.

This could be seen from how she asked Hua Xu whether he was in closed-door training before entering the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. She could have told everyone about his affairs, but she chose to keep it to herself. She didn't want others to know how formidable Chu Feng was as it would be easier for her to get closer to him that way.

“I'm just here to visit you. No matter what, we're disciples who have joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at the same time. I can be considered your junior, right?” Tu Yuanyuan asked with a smile.

“Then, Junior Tu, what business do you have with me?” Chu Feng asked once more.

Seeing how Chu Feng was as nonchalant as before, Tu Yuanyuan pouted in dissatisfaction. With a deep sigh, she leaned toward Chu Feng's ears and sent a voice transmission to him.

“Are you unhappy because I didn’t tell the others about your accomplishments in the Holy Light Galaxy?”

“You do know about my affairs after all,” Chu Feng remarked.

“Of course I do! I didn’t say it out loud because I thought that you didn’t want them to know. If you want me to reveal it, I can tell them how formidable you are right now,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

“If you want to say it, go ahead. If you don’t want to, so be it. This has nothing to do with me,” Chu Feng said.

“If you’re going to leave the decision in my hands, it goes without saying that I’d keep the matter to myself,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

“Oh? Why is that so?” Chu Feng’s curiosity was piqued.

“For one, they might not necessarily believe it even if I tell them about it. However, if they do really believe it, that makes things even more complicated for me. Wouldn’t I just bring myself more love rivals?” Tu Yuanyuan chuckled.

Her honesty made Chu Feng think a little better of her.

He wasn’t averse to smart people; he just preferred people to be straightforward with him. Tu Yunayuan’s candidness scored some brownie points with him.

“So, Junior Tu, is there any important matter you have for me here? Otherwise, I’d like to take a rest. Don’t worry, I’ve taken how you spoke up on my behalf when Hua Xu provoked me earlier to heart. I’m a person who repays my debt, so if you need my help in the future, as long as it’s within my means, I’ll lend you a helping hand,” Chu Feng said.

“Ohhh! You said that you owe me one yourself. Hmm, I guess I should start thinking about what I want from you. Alright, I shan’t stand in the way of your rest anymore. I’ll see you around, cold-natured Senior Chu.”

Tu Yuanyuan took out a scroll and passed it to Chu Feng before turning around to leave the area.

“Cold-hearted Senior Chu, if you have time, do drop by my place. I don’t know whether the others in the East Dragon Hall would welcome you, but you can be certain that I’ll welcome you!”

Tu Yuanyuan waved at Chu Feng before flying into the distance.

Chu Feng unrolled the scroll and saw that it was a map. It was pointing out where Tu Yuanyuan’s residence in the East Dragon Hall was.

Out of respect, Chu Feng accepted the scroll.

He was planning to enter his residence right away, but unexpectedly, the disciples all around suddenly swarmed in. They wanted to get acquainted with Chu Feng.

“What are all of you doing? Don’t you find it disgraceful to be fawning on a new disciple like that? Scram!”

Unexpectedly, a loud bellow suddenly sounded, and the crowd around Chu Feng quickly scattered in all directions.

Following that, three male disciples from the North Tortoise Hall walked in. Their cultivation was much higher compared to the rest of the disciples gathered around, being at Utmost Exalted level.

The leader of the trio seemed to be the bald man standing at the center, and he was the one who spoke up earlier. He was at rank two Utmost Exalted level.

The other two men following them were at rank one Utmost Exalted level.

“You are Chu Feng?”

The three disciples began assessing Chu Feng with a lofty gaze.

“Yes. Do you have business with me?”

Chu Feng’s attitude wasn’t particularly polite. He wasn’t a rude person, but he tended to treat people how they treated him. If the other party treated him courteously, he would treat them courteously as well regardless of their cultivation level. Similarly, if someone spoke to him rudely, he wouldn’t see any need to remain polite no matter how powerful they were.

The three of them had been looking at him with eyes filled with contempt, so there was no way Chu Feng would take it kindly.

Clearly, the three men didn't expect a new disciple like Chu Feng to dare speak to them rudely too. Their faces immediately darkened.

Chapter 4702: Senior Song

"Brat, you're quite arrogant, aren't you?" the bald man asked.

"Speak if you have business with me. Otherwise, pardon me for not having the time to entertain you," Chu Feng replied impatiently.

"Bloody hell! How dare you speak to me in such a manner? Do you know who I am? I am Zhang Kuang! To dare to put on airs before me, you think I dare not beat you up?"

The bald man raised his arm threateningly, showing that he wouldn't hesitate to strike Chu Feng if he continued speaking rudely to him.

The crowd quickly scattered out of fear of being implicated. They looked at Chu Feng with eyes filled with pity, thinking that he had offended someone whom he shouldn't have. **ⓃⓅⓂⓔ-ℒℬ-In**

However, contrary to everyone's expectations, Chu Feng didn't lower his head. Instead, his eyes turned wintry cold.

"Let me warn you, you better not try to touch me. Otherwise..."

"Otherwise what?" the bald man asked menacingly.

"If you want to know, go ahead and give it a try," Chu Feng replied.

"Heck! You think I really dare not to hit you, huh? I'm Zhang Kuang!"

The bald man was ready to strike down on Chu Feng, but in the last moment, he suddenly found himself hesitating. He had caught sight of Chu Feng's gaze, and he suddenly had a feeling that he was staring into the depths of the abyss. A shudder ran down his spine as he got a feeling that he would suffer a tragic fate if he were to push on here.

He couldn't believe it, but he was actually scared of Chu Feng! An unspeakable terror was swallowing his heart, consuming his soul.

“Senior Zhang, calm down!”

“Senior Song only told us to bring him over, he didn’t instruct us to take care of him!”

Seeing that the bald man was put in a difficult position, the other two rank one Utmost Exalted level disciple quickly stepped forward to help him out.

“You nasty brat! In view of Senior Song, I’ll let you off this once! Now, you have to follow us somewhere else!”

Even though the bald man had put down his upraised hands, he still continued speaking in an authoritative tone that made it seem as if he was ordering Chu Feng around.

“Who’s Senior Song? Is he an elder of a disciple?” Chu Feng asked.

“Why? Are you not going to meet him if he’s not an elder?” the bald man asked in displeasure.

“If an elder wishes to meet me, I’ll head over to pay my respects. However, if it’s a disciple who wishes to meet me, he can pay me a visit on his own.”

After saying those words, he began walking toward his residence.

“Hold it right there! Chu Feng, you should know that Senior Song is no ordinary disciple! He’s the strongest disciple of our North Tortoise Hall. You might not know Senior Song well because you have just joined our sect, but I advise you to head there obediently. Otherwise, you won’t be able to bear the consequences of your disrespect!”

The two disciples beside the bald man quickly spoke up.

Chu Feng had joined many sects before, so he was familiar with this development of affairs. It was just the strongest disciple of the North Tortoise Hall feeling threatened by a formidable new disciple, so he wanted to establish his dominance over him.

A senior should be taking care of his juniors instead of picking on them. Chu Feng already had his own judgment on what kind of person Senior Song was, and his instincts told him that he wouldn’t get along well with the latter.

Since that was the case, there was no need for him to maintain politeness.

Unexpectedly, just as Chu Feng was about to turn him down once more, Yu Sha's voice suddenly sounded in Chu Feng's ears.

"Chu Feng, you should just head over to take a look. It'd only be a short while anyway. If they still try to mess with you afterward, the fault is at least not with you. This is Miss Eggy's intention too. She told me to try to keep you out of trouble wherever possible."

Had Yu Sha just persuaded Chu Feng normally, he would have probably just shrugged it off. However, when she raised Eggy's name, he found himself compelled to go along with her.

"Lead the way," Chu Feng said.

"Tsk... I thought that you would have more backbone, but it looks like you're all bark and no bite. I guess that's to be expected. After all, there's no one here who hasn't heard of Senior Song's reputation!"

The three men gleefully insulted Chu Feng after seeing him coming to a compromise. This made Chu Feng's eyes turn cold once more.

"You lot sure are shameless."

A sudden insult caused the three men to turn around, only to realize that Chu Feng was standing still, looking at them with eyes filled with hostility. The earlier words came from his mouth.

"Were you the one who said those words earlier?" the bald man asked.

"Why bother asking the obvious?" Chu Feng asked.

"Bloody hell, you really think I dare not hit you? I am Zhang Kuang!"

Zhang Kuang could no longer bear it anymore after being put down by Chu Feng time and time again. He raised his hand to strike down on the latter.

Tzlala!

However, a streak of lightning suddenly flashed past, and a silhouette descended from the sky to the ground. When everyone took a closer look at what was going on, they all froze up in shock.

The one who was smashed into the ground was not Chu Feng but the bald man!

The bald man hadn't suffered any severe injuries, but there was a bloodied handprint on his face. Clearly, instead of hitting Chu Feng, he ended up getting hit instead.

But this couldn't have been possible. Wasn't Zhang Kuang was rank two Utmost Exalted level whereas Chu Feng was only at rank one?

Everyone turned to look at Chu Feng once more, only to come to a realization.

There was a mark of lightning crackling on Chu Feng's forehead, and the prowess he was emanated was no longer that of a rank one but a rank two Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

"Lightning Mark! He cultivated the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique!"

"How formidable! It's no wonder why he dares not snub Zhang Kuang despite knowing his cultivation level!"

"This new disciple is truly fearsome. I was still harboring doubts when I heard that he defeated the East Dragon Hall's Xu Cheng in a single hit earlier, but it looks like those rumors are true after all!"

Fear was in the eyes of the disciples looking at Chu Feng.

To be able to defeat even someone of Zhang Kuang's caliber, it was made plain obvious that Chu Feng was not a pushover, be it in terms of strength or personality.

"Chu Feng, you... Just you wait! Senior Song will surely avenge me! You better be prepared!"

The other two disciples were afraid, but they still let out threats to uphold their reputation. Unfortunately, the sight of them fleeing with Zhang Kuang looked hardly flattering at all.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng simply sneered coldly before returning back to his residence.

A while later, an even louder commotion occurred outside his residence. Chu Feng could sense that there were over a hundred people soaring in his

direction before landing right in the midst of his residence. All of these people were at Utmost Exalted level.

“Chu Feng, come out!”

As soon as they landed, they began shouting at Chu Feng, taunting him.

“This is bad! Senior Song actually came here personally.”

“If an elder doesn’t stand up for him here, Chu Feng would really be a goner!”

Those surrounding the area knew that there was further drama awaiting them, so they chose to linger around the area. As a result, the crowd was even greater than before. Looking at the hundred cultivators gathered in the area and the man standing at the forefront of the group, some of them shook their heads in pity while the others smiled in glee.

They knew that Chu Feng was not a pushover, but with how the situation was developing, it was likely that he would suffer greatly from his earlier arrogance.

After all, these hundred cultivators were the strongest disciples of the North Tortoise Hall at the moment.

Boom!

The door to the residence opened, and a man walked out.

This person was no other than Chu Feng. He was already prepared to meet with the strongest disciple of the North Tortoise Hall.

“Senior Song, he’s the one! He’s the one who hit me! I told him to come along with me to meet you, but he...”

The bald man Chu Feng had struck earlier on ran to Senior Song’s side and began uttering all sorts of falsehoods about Chu Feng, hoping to stir enmity between the two of them.

Pah!

Unexpectedly, before he could even finish his words, Senior Song raised his arm and struck the bald man on his cheeks. His strike was far more vicious

than Chu Feng's, marring the bald man's face and nearly disfiguring him for good.

"This..."

Everyone was taken aback by his action. Even Chu Feng was surprised too.

He wondered if he had misunderstood the situation, that Senior Song wasn't as vile as he thought him out to be. It was then that Senior Song suddenly walked over to Chu Feng briskly, and he did something that shocked everyone.

He... actually wrapped his arms around Chu Feng and hugged him!

"Chu Feng, I didn't expect to see you here! I thought that it was just someone with a similar name!" Senior Song spoke in agitation.

"Y-you are...?"

Chu Feng took a closer look at the man before him, but he couldn't recognize him at all. Senior Song appeared to have been some sort of torture, resulting in his face becoming completely disfigured.

"Chu Feng, do you recognize me no more? I am Song Xi!" Senior Song said.

Chapter 4703: Song Xi's Experiences

Chapter 4703: Song Xi's Experiences

"Song Xi?"

There was no way Chu Feng wouldn't recognize Song Xi. He was someone Chu Feng met right after he ascended from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Back then, Song Xi's talents were average, but as he had an appearance resembling Jiang Wushang and a good character, Chu Feng felt a sense of intimacy with him, so they eventually became friends.

Soon afterward, he came to learn that Song Xi actually had a special background.

Later on, a series of coincidences led to Song Xi accepting the inheritance of the Ten Thousand Poisons Demon Sect. However, the inheritance was extremely dangerous, and accepting it could lead to two vastly different outcomes. Things could either go smoothly and he would simply gain greater power, or his cultivation would go berserk, and he would become a slaughtering monster.

When Chu Feng finally reached the place where Song Xi had accepted the inheritance, he was already nowhere to be seen.

Following that incident, Chu Feng continued to grow bigger and bigger in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, but he was unable to find Song Xi anywhere. Little did he know that he would actually meet Song Xi at the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and the other party would actually be the strongest disciple of the North Tortoise Hall.

Based on the aura Song Xi was emanating, it would appear that he was at rank four Utmost Exalted level. With his level of cultivation, he could definitely be considered a formidable figure back at the Ancestral Martial Starfield, let alone the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

While Chu Feng did think that Song Xi would undergo some changes from accepting the inheritance, he never thought that he would grow by so much.

One must know that Song Xi was no more than a small cultivator in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm back then, hardly worthy of notice at all. The prodigies there were people whom Song Xi could only look up to but never hope to reach. But in a turn of fate, he had become someone whom those prodigies would have to look up to now.

However, Chu Feng couldn't help but harbor some doubts about this.

The person before him neither had the appearance nor the voice of Song Xi, and his aura was vastly different from before too. But for some inexplicable reason, from the moment the person identified himself as Song Xi, Chu Feng's instincts told him that he was telling the truth.

"Are you really Song Xi?"

Nevertheless, his logical mind was still having difficulties coming to terms with it.

“It’s me, Chu Feng. Do you not recognize me anymore? I guess look very different from how I used to be, don’t I? I went through some encounters that led to my appearance, my aura, and even my voice changing greatly. However, I really am Song Xi. I can prove my identity.”

Song Xi quickly shared with Chu Feng some of the experiences they had together through voice transmission, leaving Chu Feng with no choice but to believe him. Those were indeed experiences that only he and Song Xi would know about.

“Just what have you gone through? What caused such a huge change in you?”

However, the knowledge that the person before him was truly Song Xi didn’t make him feel any better. Instead, he felt his heart aching a little for him.

Just looking at the other party’s appearance was enough to hint at the difficulties he had to overcome along the way.

“I’ll tell you about it later. Come, let me introduce you to my brothers!”

Song Xi began to introduce to Chu Feng the people standing behind him. They were all the most outstanding disciples in the current generation of the North Tortoise Hall. However, Chu Feng wasn’t too interested in them, so he didn’t pay it too much heed.

When Song Xi introduced one of the female disciples, Chu Feng sharply noticed that there was something amiss about her.

This female disciple had a seductively curvaceous figure, but she wasn’t the type Chu Feng liked. Nevertheless, Chu Feng had to admit that she was the type that could enchant most men.

Despite how attractive she was, there was hardly anyone present who dared to direct a glance at her. It was not that they didn’t want to but they dared not to.

There was only one other person aside from Chu Feng who dared to look at her directly, and that person was Song Xi. On top of that, when the two of them met each other’s eyes, Chu Feng could tell that there was something peculiar in their gazes.

Without a doubt, there had a special relationship with one another.

“Chu Feng, let me introduce a very important person to you. She is Wang Ziyang, the number one beauty of our North Tortoise Hall. How is it? She’s much prettier than the Starfall Holy Land’s Xia Yun’er, right?”

Song Xi wrapped his hands around the female disciple’s waist and pulled her into his embrace. There was a gleeful look on his face that looked almost as if he was showing off his own possession.

The female disciple named Wang Ziyang also didn’t struggle against Song Xi, choosing to lie on Song Xi’s chest coyly instead.

This was more than enough to verify Chu Feng’s suspicions that they were a couple.

“On top of being the number one beauty of the North Tortoise Hall, she’s my sister-in-law too, am I right?” Chu Feng looked at Wang Ziyang as he asked.

“Of course,” Song Xi replied smugly.

“Chu Feng pays respects to sister-in-law,” Chu Feng bowed slightly to greet Wang Ziyang.

“Alright, the rest of you should return for now. I want to have some time with Brother Chu Feng to catch up with one another.”

After introducing one another, Song Xi placed his arms around Chu Feng, and the two of them entered Chu Feng’s residence together.

“Chu Feng, I didn’t expect that you would grow this quickly. You’re already at rank one Utmost Exalted level! With your cultivation, you should be able to reign supreme even in the Ancestral Martial Starfield!

“While I knew that you were no ordinary cultivator, to be honest, I thought that you would only be able to make a name for yourself in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm at the very most. It’s beyond my imagination to see you grow to such great heights!”

Song Xi was overjoyed to be able to see Chu Feng once more.

“You also grew quickly as well,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“Me? I went through a lot of suffering in order to reach my current level. But it looks like heaven has taken pity on me after all. At least my days of suffering haven’t been in vain,” Song Xi said with a deep sigh.

“Song Xi, what happened to you back then? I searched all around for you in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, but I couldn’t find you anywhere,” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s only natural that you wouldn’t be able to find me. I got taken away right after I received that elder’s inheritance,” Song Xi replied.

After that, he moved on to tell Chu Feng what he went through.

Even though Song Xi had obtained the inheritance, his heart was already seeded with an inner demon. He tried his best to curb his inner demon, for he knew if he succumbed to it, he would turn into a true demon of slaughter.

However, he simply wasn’t strong enough to fully curb his inner demon, resulting in him being unable to conceal his strength. As a result, he got found by a mysterious organization and was forced to serve them.

During one of the missions, they entered an Ancient Era’s remnant, where they found their way blocked by a lake. There was a restriction that prevented them from flying across the lake, so they had to swim through it. However, the lake was filled with terrifying toxins from the Ancient Era.

In order to test if the lake was safe or not, they forcefully pushed Song Xi into the lake, causing the toxins to swiftly corrode his body. His face was disfigured, and he swiftly sunk into the depths of the lake.

Thinking that Song Xi had died, those from the organization quickly left the area.

Unexpectedly, this tragedy was a blessing in disguise for Song Xi. He obtained greater power as a result of the trial, and he managed to break free of the organization’s control too.

He wanted to return to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm afterward, but shortly after he went back there, he was found by one of the outer elders of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect and was brought here.

“So, the changes in your aura and appearances were due to that toxin?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yeah, but things turned out fine in the end. If I hadn’t been thrown in there, I wouldn’t have reached my current level of accomplishment either,” Song Xi replied.

“Those people sure are vicious. Do you know the identity of that organization you were in?” Chu Feng asked.

“Why? Are you intending to exact vengeance for me?” Song Xi asked with a smile.

“You’re my brother. Your problem is my problem too. Even though things turned out well for you, it still doesn’t change the fact that they tried to harm you. We should return the favor to them,” Chu Feng said.

“Forget it, Chu Feng. It’s not that I don’t trust you, but this is not a grudge we can resolve. That organization is working for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan,” Song Xi said.

Chapter 4704: I’ll Be the One to Protect You

Chapter 4704: I’ll Be the One to Protect You

“Chu Feng, you should know about the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, right? That’s the ruler of the Nine Souls Galaxy, and the Nine Souls Galaxy is far stronger than our Holy Light Galaxy. The Nine Souls Sacred Clan is not a power that we can trifle with,” Song Xi supplemented, fearing that Chu Feng wouldn’t understand the implications.

“I know about the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. Is the organization you’re working for just a subsidiary under the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, or does it strictly do its bidding?” Chu Feng asked.

If the organization had done all sorts of vile deeds behind the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s back, the matter could still be resolved fairly easily. However, if the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was behind it all, the significance of the matter would change entirely. The difficulty in dealing with the organization would be much higher.

“My silly brother, they were acting under the orders of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan of course! The organization has no name, but its very existence is to handle the darker side of things for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. That’s why I don’t dream of exacting my vengeance. You shouldn’t bother thinking about it either because it will only be futile,” Song Xi said with a smile.

He had already thought things through and let it go.

But while Song Xi was willing to let this matter go, Chu Feng still couldn’t turn a blind eye to it, especially after seeing the state Song Xi was in. He had taken a close examination, and the latter’s face was utterly disfigured.

Putting aside Chu Feng, even someone of the Godwish Grandmother’s caliber would probably be helpless before it.

“Chu Feng, we’re already in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect now. It won’t be easy for us to leave this place. However, there’s no need for us to leave this place either because the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is wonderful. As long as I’m here, you can be assured that we’ll live a comfortable life!

“You once protected me back at the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, so now, allow me to be the one to protect you. Don’t worry, as long as there’s good stuff, I’ll make sure to share it with you. It just so happens that there’ll be a trial three days from now. You should come with me. There are only 20 slots in total, and the candidates have already been chosen. However, with my current standing, all it takes is a word from me to change the candidates!” Song Xi said gleefully.

“Since the candidates have already been chosen, I’ll pass on it,” Chu Feng said.

“No no no, you have to go. Don’t worry about the details. As long as I give the word, none of them will dare to refute me. This matter is settled then. You have to go by hook or by crook! Anyway, I’ve already reserved the slot for you. If you don’t go, I won’t allow anyone else to go either!” Song Xi said.

“Then... what kind of trial will it be? Will the other three halls be participating in it too?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally, it’s a trial with good stuff to be obtained. You’ll see! The disciples from the other three halls will also be participating in the trials too, but all of us will just be doing our own stuff. There won’t be any conflicts. Rest assured, I,

Song Xi, have quite some influence in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at the moment. Those from the other three halls won't dare to pull anything even if they wanted to!" Song Xi guaranteed proudly.

"I understand." Chu Feng nodded.

In truth, he just wanted to know more about the trial. He wasn't worried about the other three halls at all. Nevertheless, from the short conversation they had, he could tell that Song Xi's personality was very different from before. To put it simply, he was conceited.

However, Chu Feng could understand where he was coming from too.

A change in standing usually brought about a change in attitude as well. However, that didn't necessarily mean that Song Xi had turned into a bad person.

At the very least, Song Xi still treated Chu Feng warmly. His invitation for him to join the trial was more than enough to show how much he treasured their relationship.

The two of them continued chatting for a while longer before Song Xi prepared to take his leave. However, before he walked away, he suddenly stopped for a moment and turned around to look at Chu Feng.

"Right, I almost forgot. Chu Feng, I don't really want people to know about my past, and the people here don't really know how I was back then either. If someone asks you about it, you can just tell them that I forbid you from saying anything at all," Song Xi said.

"I won't divulge anything that you don't want me to talk about," Chu Feng replied.

"I trust you. Alright. You must be tired after everything that has happened thus far. Have a good rest. I have a surprise for you tomorrow."

With a smile, Song Xi began making his way out of Chu Feng's residence. Chu Feng also walked him to the entrance and bade him farewell.

He left together with the large group he came with, creating quite a spectacular sight.

Seeing how well Song Xi was faring at the moment, Chu Feng felt a bit more assuaged. While Song Xi did face a lot of difficulties in the past, at least he was doing well in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

The present was more important than the past, after all.

...

Song Xi and his group didn't leave too quickly, and they didn't bother to hide either. Wherever they passed by, all of the disciples would bow down to pay respects to them. Even some of the elders would greet them too.

This showed that Song Xi and his group did have quite a high standing in the North Tortoise Hall.

"Senior Song, what's Chu Feng's background?"

A guy with a pair of black eyes suddenly asked in the midst of their journey. He was a serpent monstrous beast going by the name of Hei Yao, and he was a rank three Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

Even though he was weaker than Song Xi, there was no doubt that he was still one of the strongest disciples in the North Tortoise Hall. It was precisely due to his great strength that he was the most authoritative person in the group other than Song Xi and Wang Ziyang.

In fact, before Song Xi came, he was actually the strongest disciple in the North Tortoise Hall.

"You're asking about Chu Feng? He's a friend I met when I went out for a trial a while ago. We went through quite a bit together. We've helped each other greatly along the way, weathering through multiple difficulties together. It has been a few years since then, and honestly speaking, I never thought that we would reunite in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

"Even less so, I didn't think that he would reach his current level of accomplishment, becoming a rank one Utmost Exalted level cultivator and being able to use his Heavenly Bloodline to raise his cultivation by a rank. I must say, I'm truly happy for him," Song Xi said.

"Senior Song sure is extraordinary. Even a friend you meet out on a mission turns out to be an extraordinary prodigy."

Someone immediately used this opportunity to fawn on Song Xi. Song Xi smiled in response to the fawning before turning to Hei Yao once more.

“Hei Yao, how’s your younger brother doing?” Song Xi asked.

“Senior Song, my younger brother’s injuries have alleviated significantly, but he hasn’t fully recovered yet,” Hei Yao replied.

“Since that’s the case, tell him not to go for the trial three days from now anymore. Chu Feng will be taking his place instead,” Song Xi said.

“Senior Song! My younger brother’s injuries won’t affect his performance in the trial!” Hei Yao quickly explained.

“Regardless of whether it affects his performance or not, he’ll have to hand his slot over. It has been years since I last met Chu Feng, and our reunion only means that our fate hasn’t come to an end yet. As the older brother here, I’m obliged to offer him a helping hand,” Song Xi said.

Chapter 4705: Successfully Nurturing the Life Soul

“Senior Song, I can understand your desire to help your brother, but Junior Chu Feng has only joined our North Tortoise Hall. He’s a newcomer amongst us, and the trial this time around is intended for the twenty strongest junior disciples of our North Tortoise Hall. I’m afraid that the other disciples might raise objections...” Hei Yao said.

“Raise objections? Tell those who have objections to look for me! Alright, this matter is settled! I’m tired, so I’ll be heading back to rest..”

Song Xi seemed to be in an awful mood due to Hei Yao talking back to him. Right after saying those words, he flitted away quickly, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

“Junior Wang, what is Chu Feng’s background? I have never heard Senior Song speaking of him before?”

Hei Yao suddenly leaned very closely to Wang Ziyang, such that he was nearly leaning on her body.

However, Wang Ziyang immediately twisted her body and created some distance between them.

“If you’re that curious, you can ask him yourself.”

Wang Ziyang glared at Hei Yao before quickly rushing off in the direction where Song Xi left toward.

“Damn it, that darned harlot! She was all over me before Song Xi came, but now she’s acting as if we don’t know one another?”

Hei Yao cursed as he watched Wang Ziyang’s seductive figure departing into the distance.

...

After sending Song Xi away, Chu Feng returned back to his own residence to resume his cultivation. Naturally, he was not aiming to further his cultivation but to find a way to break free of the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

The Hidden Dragon Soul Armor had sealed off his Three Souls and Seven Essences, resulting in his cultivation and spirit power regressing rapidly. However, as long as he could unseal them properly, not only would he regain his previous strength, they would also grow to a higher level too. n.)0.-V- /e.(l(/b//1-/n

Using the terms of the mysterious voice, this process was known as ‘nurturing the armor’.

Right now, the first one that Chu Feng needed to nurture was his Life Soul.

The Life Soul was the core of a human, but Chu Feng had already found a way to release it. As long as he focused his mind, martial power, and bloodline to channel them in a specific pathway to fill up the connection between the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor and his Life Soul, he would be able to break free of the seal.

He started by channeling his mind, martial power, and bloodline slowly, but as time went by, he gradually grew more adept with it. In just a few short hours, he had already successfully unlocked his Life Soul.

At this very moment, Chu Feng felt his cultivation rising back to rank two Utmost Exalted level, but at the same time, there were some peculiar changes occurring to his body too. It felt like his power, which had been caged all this while, was finally surging out of its prison cells fervently.

Chu Feng picked up a rock by the side. It was an evaluation rock to test a cultivator's talent. He fused his martial power inside, and the stone immediately shone with seven colors. This was the highest level of talent the evaluation rock could test for.

"My talent has returned, just as I've expected. All that's left is for my talent to further improve..."

After doing several tests, Chu Feng tried to open his World Spirit Space, but he still wasn't able to open it. His spirit power also remained just at rank one Dragon Transformation Sensation too.

However, he felt that nurturing the armor was easier than he thought.

It would definitely get more difficult later on, but he felt that it wouldn't take too long for him to recover his cultivation and rise beyond that. He finally understood why the owner of the mysterious voice told him that he didn't have to do anything to save Zi Ling; he just had to successfully nurture the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

The owner of the mysterious voice knew that if Chu Feng could fully nurture the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, his cultivation would rise by leaps and bounds, far surpassing all of the disciples in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

So, Chu Feng stowed away the evaluation rock and sat down once more.

While he had managed to unlock the seal on his Life Soul and recovered his cultivation to rank two Utmost Exalted level, he had no intention of stopping there. He wanted to unlock the First Essence too.

First Essence Tianchong, that was the foundation of a human.

Similar to the Life Soul, unlocking it would require him to channel his mind, martial power, and bloodline in unison, but the method was a little different from before.

The same applied to all his Three Souls and Seven Essences too. The keys were all made out of his mind, martial power, and bloodline, but since each lock was different, the keys he had to make were different too.

What Chu Feng had to do right now was to figure out the way to unlock First Essence Tianchong.

Unfortunately, despite his efforts, he was unable to figure out a clue at all. This was a huge blow to Chu Feng's confidence. He thought that nurturing the armor would be easy to him, but it seemed like he was underestimating the difficulty of the matter.

At the very least, he couldn't use his experience from unlocking the Life Soul to figure out the method to unlock the First Essence. He had to change his train of thoughts entirely.

"Junior Chu Feng, are you in there?"

A voice suddenly sounded outside the door at this moment.

"Why is she here?"

Chu Feng could see the situation outside without opening the door. The person standing outside the door was Song Xi's companion, Wang Ziyang.

Even though Chu Feng wasn't close with Wang Ziyang, out of consideration that the latter was Song Xi's companion, he felt obliged to treat her with respect. So, he stood up and opened the door.

"Sister-in-law, do you need me for something?" Chu Feng asked.

"Junior Chu Feng, Senior Song is calling you over," Wang Ziyang said.

"Right now?"

Chu Feng was a little reluctant to leave because he was busy figuring out the pathway to unlocking the First Essence. Unless it was something of vital importance, he didn't want to leave the area.

"Senior Song said that you came too abruptly yesterday that he hasn't had an opportunity to properly welcome you yet. So, he specially prepared a banquet for you today. You're the only one who is lacking at the celebration," Wang Ziyang said.

"I see."

If it was just a normal banquet, that was definitely nothing important. However, Chu Feng was suddenly reminded of Song Xi mentioning that he had prepared a surprise for him today. The surprise was probably referring to this banquet.

Considering how they hadn't met one another for a long while, and that Song Xi had good intentions for preparing this for him, it wouldn't be apt for Chu Feng to turn him down.

So, he followed Wang Ziyang over to Song Xi's residence.

Song Xi was currently the strongest disciple in the North Tortoise Hall, so his residence was also different from the others. It spanned a scale so huge that it almost looked like a mini country. It had mountains and lakes in it, and the banquet was being held above a beautiful purple sea.

Surprisingly, the boundless sea was incredibly calm at the moment. There wasn't the slightest wave or ripple on its surface, looking almost like the surface of a mirror. Beneath the sea were schools of fishes swimming to and fro, and each and every one of them was incredibly beautiful.

The atmosphere in the banquet was quite leisurely.

There was already a huge crowd there by the time Chu Feng arrived. Nearly all of the disciples who were with Song Xi yesterday were present. Upon seeing Chu Feng, they quickly stood up to greet him with smiles on their faces. Even the bald man whom Chu Feng had struck previously did the same too.

The banquet proceeded rather smoothly.

Chu Feng and Song Xi sat next to one another on the main seats. The two of them chatted merrily with one another over wine. While they didn't talk about their past, Chu Feng could still see the great ambitions Song Xi had in mind when he talked about the future.

He was earnestly happy for Song Xi for having found his drive.

In the past, Song Xi had low self-esteem, but he had become much more confident now. This was a good thing.

From time to time, someone would step forward to propose a toast to Chu Feng. Chu Feng could sense that not everyone present was fond of him, but he still responded to them politely out of respect of Song Xi.

"Senior Song, bad news!"

But as time ticked on to the afternoon, a disciple suddenly rushed in and exclaimed nervously.

“What happened?”

Song Xi stood up and asked, but he remained perfectly calm. He did look like a leader right now.

“It’s the people from the South Vermilion Hall! They drove our people out of the Wintry Spirit Waterfall and injured them!” the disciple reported.

“Audacious! Senior Song, leave this matter to me. I’ll settle it!” Hei Yao stood up as he spoke.

Song Xi gave a nod of approval.

It looked like such matters happened often, and Song Xi had no intentions of personally heading down to resolve this matter.

“Senior Hei Yao, we might need Senior Song to make a move this time around. The South Vermilion Hall’s Fang Yunshi and Bi Jingjing are there too,” the disciple said.

“They’re around too?”

Hei Yao’s face turned grim.

Chapter 4706: Fight Over the Spirit Waterfall

“Looks like they are really trying to challenge us over here. Let’s go! Everyone will be following me there. I want to see what their South Vermilion Hall is up to over here!”

Song Xi stood up, and everyone quickly followed him. The strongest disciples of the North Tortoise Hall grandly left the banquet to head for a place known as the Wintry Spirit Waterfall.

While the place was not useful for the more talented disciples, it was still a fairly valuable cultivation resource for most disciples of the North Tortoise Hall and the South Vermilion Hall.

The Wintry Spirit Waterfall would open for fifteen days every month. Most of the disciples of the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall had no need to

cultivate there, so it was mainly dominated by the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall and North Tortoise Hall.

During these fifteen days, the disciples of the two halls would take turns cultivating there on alternate days. It should have been the turn of the North Tortoise Hall's disciples today, but the South Vermilion Hall actually drove them out of the area, sparking this confrontation.

As for the Fang Yunshi and Bi Jingjing the disciple mentioned earlier, they were some of the more outstanding disciples in the South Vermilion Hall.

Fang Yunshi, like Song Xi, was at rank four Utmost Exalted level. Bi Jingjing was slightly weaker than Fang Yunshi, but she was born in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, which meant that her family members were in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect too.

It was said that she actually had outstanding talent, and if not for her family members being in the South Vermilion Hall, she would have surely been a disciple of the East Dragon Hall.

"Song Xi, are the elders not going to interfere in this matter?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that it was weird how the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect didn't enforce rules regarding such matter. If they were to leave it to the strongest to call the shots, it could result in other disciples being robbed of their opportunity to grow stronger.

So, he felt that this matter should have been resolved by the elders instead of the disciples.

"Junior Chu, you have just joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so it's little wonder you don't understand how things work here. We could indeed bring the elders in to resolve the matter, but that would only shame us, disciples of the North Tortoise Hall. Putting aside the other three halls, even our own elders might start looking down on us.

"So, if it's within our means to handle the situation, we'll do so. Only if it's far beyond our control will we bring the elders into the picture. Today is the final day that the Wintry Spirit Waterfall will remain open. Last month, the opportunity to cultivate was given to the South Vermilion Hall, so going by the rules, it should be our turn this month.

“The fact that they are stirring trouble on that shows that they are looking down on us. If we alarm the elder over something as minor as this, we’ll surely be looked down upon,” Wang Ziyang explained.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng replied.

To put it simply, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect permitted some level of competition and rivalry amongst the disciples. Most likely, the North Tortoise Hall was unable to compete with the other three halls for many of the better cultivation areas, resulting in the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall being robbed of their opportunities. As a result, it created a vicious cycle where those of the North Tortoise Hall continued to grow weaker and weaker.

Anyway, as they were rushing their way over, it didn’t take them long to arrive before the Wintry Spirit Waterfall.

Above the clouds towered a copper cauldron ten thousand meters tall. Water was flowing out from the top of the cauldron, forming a humongous waterfall. The water emanated a chilling aura that harnessed a special kind of spirit energy that was beneficial to cultivators.

At this very moment, there was a huge crowd standing beneath the waterfall. However, they were all disciples of the South Vermilion Hall. The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall, on the other hand, were watching helplessly by the side, unable to stop them at all. Some of them had bruises on their faces with a couple even passed out.

Chu Feng’s gaze was more focused on the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall.

The South Vermilion Hall had brought many disciples here, but most of them didn’t enter the waterfall to cultivate. Instead, most of them stood at attention, seemingly awaiting the counterattack of the disciples from the North Tortoise Hall.

There were also disciples from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall around. There were few of them, and most of their cultivation wasn’t too high. They could be here to cultivate, though it was also possibly that they were here to watch the commotion too.

“Oh? Isn’t that Song Xi from the North Tortoise Hall? Are you here to cultivate at the Wintry Spirit Waterfall too? Ahhh, given your subpar talent, I can understand why you’d need to cultivate here.”

Before Song Xi and the others could land, a mocking voice had already sounded from the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall. It was coming from a fairly good-looking man, but his attitude was extremely vile and arrogant.

It was clear from his gaze that he thought little of the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall.

“Fang Yunshi, don’t you know that it’s our disciples’ turn to cultivate here?” Song Xi landed right in front of the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall as he began questioning sharply.

“Of course I do,” Fang Yunshi replied.

“Since you know, why did you bring your men here to snatch our spot and injure our disciples?” Song Xi asked.

“I’m not the one who injured your disciples, but it’s indeed our people who did it. However, you can’t possibly blame me for the weakness of the disciples of your North Tortoise Hall, right? As for why our disciples of the South Vermilion Hall want to cultivate here today... we simply want to do it, so we came. What about it?” Fang Yunshi said.

“So, you’re intending to break the rules we’ve agreed on?” Song Xi asked.

“What about it?” Fang Yunshi replied disdainfully.

“Fang Yunshi, it looks like you really think little of our North Tortoise Hall. Men, drive all of the disciples of their South Vermilion Hall out of the Wintry Spirit Waterfall!” Song Xi ordered loudly.

“Disciples of the South Vermilion Hall, beat him anyone who dares to drive you away! Make sure to hit them back in their faces!” Fang Yunshi bellowed.

Seeing that the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall and North Tortoise Hall were going to make a move on one another, a voice suddenly sounded.

“Hold it right there! This is a place to cultivate, not to fight!”

The person who spoke was a young female disciple. She had a beautiful appearance, but there was a haughty look on her face.

Chu Feng could tell right away that she was likely to be the disciple who was born and grew up in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, Bi Jingjing.

“Junior Bi, you know the rules of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect the best. Why didn’t you stop this matter from happening?” Song Xi stepped forward and questioned.

Compared to Fang Yunshi, Song Xi’s attitude was much more polite to Bi Jingjing.

“Song Xi, the Wintry Spirit Waterfall opens for fifteen days every month. According to the rules, the disciples of the East Dragon Hall can cultivate for six days whereas the disciples of the West Tiger Hall, South Vermilion Hall, and North Tortoise Hall take three days each. It’s only because the disciples of the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall rarely come here that it became an equal split between your North Tortoise Hall and our South Vermilion Hall.

“If you really want to go by the rules, your North Tortoise Hall should only have three days here. I can tell you that the rules are decided by the sectmaster himself. Are you trying to question his judgment here?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“Junior Bi, what are you trying to say here?” Song Xi asked.

“Do you know why the East Dragon Hall is granted more time here than the other halls? It’s because they’re the strongest. In the end, the slots for the Wintry Spirit Waterfall is determined by who’s more qualified. Your North Tortoise Hall is clearly weaker than our South Vermilion Hall, so why should we stand for an equal split?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“It’s an agreement between our seniors that the South Vermilion Hall and North Tortoise Hall take alternate days to cultivate at the Wintry Spirit Waterfall,” Song Xi said.

“Like you said, it was an agreement by our seniors. Since it’s just an agreement, it can naturally be changed. Today, I’ll be changing it!” Bi Jingjing said.

“What do you want to do?” Song Xi asked.

“Very simple. Of the fifteen days, your North Tortoise Hall will be taking the first five days whereas our South Vermilion Hall will be taking the remaining ten days,” Bi Jingjing replied.

Chapter 4707: Allow Me

“Junior Bi, I don’t deny that your South Vermilion Hall is stronger than our North Tortoise Hall. But in the end, we’re all disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, fellow sect members. The juniors of our North Tortoise Hall are your juniors too. Don’t you think that you’re going too far here?” Song Xi said.

“Song Xi, calm down. I haven’t finished my piece yet. Our South Vermilion Hall is willing to have a battle with you to decide this. We won’t find our other seniors for help; we’ll compete with you with the people we have here. If the South Vermilion Hall wins, we’ll do as I said. On the other hand, if you win, we’ll follow the old rules. I just wonder if you dare to accept the challenge,” Bi Jingjing said.

Song Xi hesitated a little.

He wasn’t afraid of Fang Yunshi, but he did fear Bi Jingjing. Bi Jingjing had grown up in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and she had a strong background behind her too.

“Alright, I’ll accept it. However, how do you wish to compete with us?”

Song Xi looked at the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall behind him, and in the end, he decided to accept it in the end.

“Since I’m proposing the challenge, I’ll ensure the challenge is fair so that no one will have any qualms about it. We’ll compete three rounds in total. First round, aptitude. Second round, spirit power. Third round, martial power. Every round, we’ll choose three people to go up against one another. Any side who has two victories will be considered the winner of the round,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Very well, we’ll go by your proposal then,” Song Xi said.

“Very well. The first round will be competing on talent then. You may pick any three people from your North Tortoise Hall, and we’ll also select three people from our South Vermilion Hall.”

As Bi Jingjing spoke, she took out a stone platform from her Cosmos Sack. The stone platform was initially just the size of a rock, but when she tossed it into mid-air, it immediately enlarged. By the time it fell back down to the ground, it had already expanded to ten meters in diameter.

There were all sorts of runes on the stone platform, and inscribed at its center was the insignia of a dragon. This resembled the stone platforms that were used for the entrance test, but there were some differences.

For one, there were three platforms in the entrance test, each of them testing willpower, potential, and bloodline respectively. On the other hand, this stone platform served to test all three simultaneously to come to an overall evaluation.

While it couldn't accurately discern the three factors accurately, it could evaluate the overall talent that a person had.

"I'll take the first round."

As soon as the stone platform landed on the floor, Fang Yunshi began making his way forward. However, instead of stepping right on it, he turned his gaze toward Song Xi.

"I, Song Xi, representing the North Tortoise Hall, will take the first round too."

Song Xi walked over to the stone platform too.

"Song Xi, I hope that you won't burst into tears when you lose."

With those words, Fang Yunshi leaped onto the stone platform.

Weng!

The runes on the stone platform immediately came to life, and they started to resolve swiftly along with the stone platform. Soon, a purple light burst forth from the stone platform, indicating high aptitude.

However, neither the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall nor the South Tortoise Hall was too surprised by the sight. Fang Yunshi might not be the strongest disciple of the South Vermilion Hall, he was still pretty well known. Everyone already knew about the level of talent he had.

"Song Xi, I hope you won't lose."

Fang Yunshi looked at Song Xi provocatively before walking down the stone platform. As soon as he walked off, the purple light shining from the stone platform swiftly dissipated, and everything reverted back to normal.

Following that, Song Xi walked onto the stone platform.

Weng!

The same sight occurred on the stone platform. A purple light burst forth soon after.

Song Xi had high aptitude as well.

Even though it was the same purple light, the faces of the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall turned a little awful. This was especially so for Fang Yunshi, who looked both awkward and indignant.

This was because Song Xi took a far shorter time to trigger the stone platform than Fang Yunshi. This was not the first time they were pitting their aptitude against one another, so the rules were pretty clear cut. The first one to trigger the stone platform in the case of the same aptitude would win the battle.

In other words, it was Song Xi's victory here.

"Looks like that's all there is to you, Fang Yunshi."

Without bothering to conceal the glee on his face, Song Xi began to put down Fang Yunshi.

Fang Yunshi had been trying to taunt Song Xi whenever he could because their cultivation was on the same level as one another. In a sense, it could be said that Fang Yunshi was Song Xi's nemesis in the South Vermilion Hall.

It was for that reason that Song Xi was so delighted at having been able to defeat Fang Yunshi.

"Song Xi, you're representing the strongest disciple in the North Tortoise Hall whereas I'm just a minor character in our South Vermilion Hall. What do you have to be gleeful about?" Fang Yunshi spat.

"As you said, our North Tortoise Hall is indeed weaker than your South Vermilion Hall. I've never tried to deny that fact before. However, do you

acknowledge that I, Song Xi, am stronger than you, Fang Yunshi?" Song Xi replied.

"What are you getting so smug about? It's not an individual competition but a fight between the South Vermilion Hall and North Tortoise Hall right now! Have you won the competition yet? If not, you would do well to put away your arrogance!" Fang Yunshi said angrily.

Song Xi didn't respond to those words anymore.

He might have won Fang Yunshi, but he was the most talented one of all disciples in the North Tortoise Hall. He couldn't guarantee that the others would be able to win the aptitude test against those from the South Vermilion Hall too.

"The second battle," Bi Jingjing announced.

Following that, a female disciple with a curvaceous figure walked up to the stone platform.

"Is there anyone who wishes to be my opponent?"

She looked at the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall with a seductive look in her eyes.

Song Xi and the others recognize her too. She was quite a renowned person in the South Vermilion Hall.

"Hei Yao, Ziyang, who wants to go first?" Song Xi turned to the two people behind him.

"Allow me."

Wang Ziyang volunteered herself, and Song Xi nodded in approval.

Seeing this, the female disciple from the South Vermilion Hall took the lead and stepped onto the stone platform. It took her a little longer than Fang Yunshi, but she managed to trigger the purple light in the end.

After she walked down from the stone platform, Wang Ziyang stepped onto the stone platform. She, too, managed to trigger the purple light, indicating high aptitude. However, she took a little longer than the female disciple of the

South Vermilion Hall. It was a really close one, but they had lost the second battle.

“I’m sorry, Senior Song,” Wang Ziyang said remorsefully.

“It’s fine, we haven’t lost yet,” Song Xi consoled.

“I’ll be taking the third battle.”

It was then that Bi Jingjing suddenly walked up to the stone platform. Seeing this, Hei Yao’s complexion immediately turned awful.

While Bi Jingjing was famous, no one had seen her cultivating before. Putting aside the disciples in the North Tortoise Hall, she was a mysterious figure even within the South Vermilion Hall. No one had any idea what level Bi Jingjing’s aptitude was at.

However, based on rumors going around, Bi Jingjing had an incredibly high aptitude. To be honest, Hei Yao had no confidence in winning against her.

The faces of those from the North Tortoise Hall also darkened. ~~nove-13~~.In

Even before the third battle had begun, everyone already felt that they were bound to lose. It wasn’t that they weren’t confident in Hei Yao, but it was the famous Bi Jingjing he was going up against here.

“Allow me to take the third battle.”

While everyone was feeling despaired, Chu Feng suddenly stepped forward.

Chapter 4708: Provocation

“Junior Chu Feng, are you joking here?”

Hei Yao immediately stopped him with a displeased look on his face.

“Senior Hei, allow me to take this battle instead,” Chu Feng repeated his words once more.

While his cultivation had only recovered to rank two Utmost Exalted level, his aptitude had already fully returned. His talent had always been top-notch, so he wasn’t worried about losing in this battle.

“Junior Chu Feng, even though you’re at rank one Utmost Exalted level, your results in the aptitude test aren’t good. Why are you insisting on taking this battle despite knowing the level of your aptitude? Aren’t you just causing trouble here?” Hei Yao spoke angrily.

“Junior Chu Feng, this isn’t just any fight. This concerns the cultivation of our juniors in the North Tortoise Hall. It’d be best for you not to get involved,” Wang Ziyao advised.

There were also many people aside from Hei Yao and Wang Ziyao who tried to stop Chu Feng from standing forward. Their tones were much more polite than Hei Yao, but it showed their lack of trust in Chu Feng.

“Trust me this once. I’m a disciple of the North Tortoise Hall too, and I won’t do anything to let you down,” Chu Feng said.

“You won’t let them down? Lad, I know about you. You are the newcomer who rejected the offer from the East Dragon Hall yesterday, right? However, don’t you think that you’re speaking big words here? Do you know who your opponent is? You’re facing Junior Bi Jingjing here!

“Putting you aside, even Song Xi wouldn’t stand a chance against her at all. Yet, you dared to say that you won’t disappoint them? How arrogant! Do you think that you’re the king of the world just because you managed to stand out in a group of newcomers?” Fang Yunshi looked at Chu Feng disdainfully.

“Was I talking to you?” Chu Feng looked at Fang Yunshi in disdain, as if the latter wasn’t worthy of talking to him.

“What do you mean by that? Are you saying that I’m not qualified to talk to you? Who do you think you are? Do you know who I am?” Fang Yunshi asked in displeasure.

Not wanting to bother with Fang Yunshi anymore, Chu Feng turned to Bi Jingjing and asked, “That senior over there, are you willing to compete with me?”

“You should decide it amongst yourself. It matters not to me whoever I am up against.”

Bi Jingjing didn't even bother looking at Chu Feng seriously when she said those words, as if she was confident of winning no matter who she was up against.

"Let me do it then."

As he said those words, Chu Feng began making his way toward the stone platform.

"Hold it right there."

But before Chu Feng could walk up, someone grabbed his shoulder and forcefully stopped him. It was Hei Yao.

Hei Yao's cultivation was at rank three Utmost Exalted level, allowing him to overpower Chu Feng in his current state. It was one thing if he was just holding back Chu Feng normally, but secretly, he was channeling his martial power into Chu Feng's body.

This was clearly a threat that he wouldn't hesitate to harm Chu Feng if he continued to press on.

"Scram!"

A frown formed on Chu Feng's face as he roared angrily.

"Hei Yao, let him go," Song Xi said.

"Senior Song, I can understand it if you condone Chu Feng for other matters, but this concerns the future of our juniors! I hope that you can think twice about it!"

Hei Yao released his grip on Chu Feng's arm, but he had no intention of compromising. He even turned to the disciples behind him after saying those words.

The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall knew that even if they sent Hei Yao forward, it was likely to end in a loss. Nevertheless, at least there would still be a glimmer of hope with Hei Yao as their candidate. If they were to send Chu Feng instead, it was bound to be a loss.

Furthermore, even if Hei Yao lost, he was still of high aptitude. His loss wouldn't reflect too badly on the North Tortoise Hall.

On the other hand, Chu Feng's aptitude was of the lowest level. If Chu Feng went up, they were bound to be humiliated.

"Senior Song, please think twice!"

The other disciples also tried to persuade Song Xi on the matter.

"Chu Feng, I understand that you wish to help me and do your part for the North Tortoise Hall, and I know about your strength too. However, this is the aptitude test over here. You should leave it to Hei Yao instead," Song Xi said.

Even he was persuading Chu Feng to give up.

"Alright, I understand," Chu Feng nodded. Then, he suddenly raised his head and said, "Song Xi, don't blame me for this."

"Ah?"

Song Xi was stunned by Chu Feng's words.

Shoosh!

In the next moment, Chu Feng suddenly dashed toward the stone platform.

In the first place, he was already close to the stone platform, and no one was standing in his way either. By the time anyone could process what was going on, he was already on top of the stone platform.

Despite all of the opposition, he still persisted in his choice.

"Get down."

However, as soon as Chu Feng stepped up, a force suddenly tried to sweep him down the stone platform. It was coming from Bi Jingjing.

"Why? Do you dare not compete with me?" Chu Feng asked provocatively.

Chu Feng knew that under the circumstances where no one was willing to let him take the battle, his only option was to provoke Bi Jingjing into accepting the battle. Only by infuriating her would he be able to represent the North Tortoise Hall in the battle.

Otherwise, even if he wanted to help the North Tortoise Hall, there was nothing he could do.

“You’re saying that I don’t dare? As I have said, you can decide amongst yourself. I don’t particularly mind. However, we should have the first go on the stone platform. You aren’t qualified to go ahead of us,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Junior Chu Feng, stop messing around. Hurry up and come back!”

Seeing that Chu Feng was going out of control, Wang Ziyang quickly rushed over to Chu Feng’s side and tried to pull him back.

“Bi Jingjing, right? I, Chu Feng, challenge you to a battle of aptitude. I guarantee that your aptitude is bound to be beneath me. If you are too cowardly to accept the battle, you should just admit it right now, and I’ll let you off,” Chu Feng said.

He spoke much louder this time around, using a far more provocative voice.

“Junior Chu Feng, stop messing around.”

Wang Ziyang had already arrived by Chu Feng’s side and was tugging him down.

“Hold it right there!” Bi Jingjing bellowed.

She was only at rank three Utmost Exalted level, the same level as Wang Ziyang. Yet, her bellow actually made Wang Ziyang shudder in shock. She immediately retracted her hand from Chu Feng and backed away out of fear.

It could be seen that Wang Ziyang was really intimidated by Bi Jingjing, but no one thought less of her due to that.

Given Bi Jingjing’s background, even Song Xi was afraid of her as well, let alone Wang Ziyang.

“You mentioned earlier that you’re confident that you’ll be able to defeat in a battle of aptitude, and I refuse, it would show that I’m afraid of you?” Bi Jingjing was finally looking at Chu Feng properly, and her eyes were blazing with rage.

Her attitude was so frightening that many of the disciples from the North Tortoise Hall dared not to look her in the eye.

“You’ve misunderstood, Junior Bi. That’s not what Chu Feng means. He has just joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so he doesn’t know you well. I ask you not to hold it against him. He’s just...” Song Xi stepped forward and attempted to reconcile the situation.

“Senior Bi, you didn’t hear wrongly. I mean what I say,” Chu Feng interjected.

Chapter 4709: Aptitude

“Shit! Who do you think you are to speak to Junior Bi like that?”

A furious roar sounded. Fang Yunshi released his oppressive might, ready to make a move on Chu Feng.

It wasn’t just him. The other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall also released their oppressive might and drew their blades too. From the looks of it, they were ready to slaughter Chu Feng as soon as Bi Jingjing gave the word. They would destroy not only Chu Feng but all of the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall.

“Stand down!”

Bi Jingjing shot a glare at Fang Yunshi, which made the latter hurriedly retract his oppressive might. The other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall quickly followed suit too.

Even though Fang Yunshi was the strongest disciple of the South Vermilion Hall present in the field, everyone knew that Bi Jingjing’s words carried the most weight.

“Interesting. You truly pique my interest. Since you show such guts, I’ll give you an opportunity. However, this is a battle you insisted on having me. You’re representing the North Tortoise Hall in this battle, but more than that, you’re representing yourself too. Since that’s the case, it’s only right for us to up the stakes,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Go ahead and state what you want,” Chu Feng said.

“If you lose, I want to sever your tongue, and in your days in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, you aren’t to heal it. If you dare to heal it, I’ll sever it every time I see it. On top of that, you aren’t to speak to anyone in any way. If you dare to talk once, I’ll hit you once,” Bi Jingjing said.

“How vicious. What if you lose then?” Chu Feng asked.

“There’s no way I’ll lose,” Bi Jingjing replied.

“Since you’re confident about that, let’s do this then. If you lose, we’ll change the agreement we made at the start,” Chu Feng said.

“How do you want to change it?”

“We’ll hold the spirit power battle and martial power battle as per normal, but if the North Tortoise Hall wins, from this day onward, our North Tortoise Hall will be dominating ten days at the Wintry Spirit Waterfall whereas your South Vermilion Hall will only take five days,” Chu Feng said.

“That Chu Feng...”

Initially, the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall were enraged by Chu Feng’s deed. They felt that he was being too arrogant for insisting on stepping on the dueling ring despite his unworthiness, as if he was desperate to drag them down.

Everyone thought that he was simply using his relationship with Song Xi to act as he pleased.

However, when Chu Feng proposed the modification of the deal, the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall realized that Chu Feng wasn’t just putting on an act here. Regardless of whether he was truly capable or not, there was no doubt that he was thinking on the behalf of the North Tortoise Hall here.

As a result, their opinion of Chu Feng began to change.

“Very well, we’ll go with what you said.”

After saying those words, Bi Jingjing stepped onto the stone platform.

“Junior Bi, please wait a moment! Chu Feng is just...”

Song Xi hurriedly intervened, wanting to plead on Chu Feng’s behalf. He didn’t hope for Chu Feng to become a mute who couldn’t speak anymore from this day onward.

“Song Xi, this matter has nothing to do with you. If you insist on interfering, I’ll count you in on the bet as well!” Bi Jingjing glared at Song Xi coldly.

Seeing this, Song Xi could only meekly back down.

As for Bi Jingjing, she closed her eyes and began her aptitude test.

Weng!

Soon, the runes on the stone platform began to revolve, but weirdly enough, the stone platform didn't emanate any light even after some time. She seemed to be taking an even longer time to have her aptitude assessed than Wang Ziyang.

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall and North Tortoise Hall couldn't help but start feeling a little nervous. Those from the South Vermilion Hall were starting to feel a little unconfident and worried whereas those from the North Tortoise Hall were starting to feel angry.

Their anger was directed not toward Bi Jingjing and Chu Feng.

"That Chu Feng is really causing trouble here! If I had gone up instead, we would have won this aptitude battle!"

Hei Yao spoke those words not with voice transmission but aloud. He was doing it on purpose so that everyone could hear it.

Many from the North Tortoise Hall shared his sentiments too.

"Senior Song, you shouldn't have allowed Junior Chu Feng to act as he pleased. You might be a loyal brother by siding with him, but what about the rest of us? How would the juniors of the North Tortoise Hall view you?"

Even Wang Ziyang was angered by this turn of events.

Song Xi didn't say a word at all, but there was a frustrated look on his face. Despite his domineering attitude in the North Tortoise Hall, he was interfering in this matter because he wanted to build an upright and powerful image for himself.

He needed the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall to respect him in order to continue retaining the power he had.

The reason why everyone in the North Tortoise Hall was reacting so angrily was because they thought that they had overestimated Bi Jingjing. They

expected Bi Jingjing's result to be out faster than Song Xi, but it turned out to be the opposite instead.

Given Bi Jingjing's performance, they would have won if Hei Yao had gone up to represent them instead.

In other words, Chu Feng's unneeded interference had cost the North Tortoise Hall this match.

Roar!

All of a sudden, a deep growl sounded from this stone platform. It sounded like the roar of a ferocious animal hidden beneath the stone platform. Following that, a brilliant light gradually shone from within the stone platform, leaving everyone dumbstruck.

Even the disciples of the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall who were watching the spectacle from the side were astonished.

The light emanating from the stone platform was not purple in color but golden!

The golden color was a sign of pinnacle aptitude!

Of the entire sect, the strongest ten disciples were known as the Hidden Dragon Disciples, and they were all of pinnacle aptitude!

In fact, even if one were to look throughout the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, there were no more than twenty people here who possessed pinnacle aptitude.

"Junior Bi truly possesses pinnacle aptitude... This means that she could very well become a Hidden Dragon Disciple in the near future!"

All of the disciples looked at Bi Jingjing with admiration in their eyes. Even Song Xi was no exception.

Putting aside the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall, even the disciples of the East Dragon Hall wouldn't dare to offend Bi Jingjing! With her pinnacle aptitude, even if she failed to become a Hidden Dragon Disciple in the future, there was no doubt that it was only a matter of time before she became one of the powerhouses in the sect!

In the past, everyone feared Bi Jingjing only because of her family members. But now, they knew that even if one were to put aside her family members, she was still not someone to be trifled with.

“Hei Yao, you should be glad now that it’s Chu Feng who stepped up earlier, right?”

One of the disciples whispered to Hei Yao quietly.

“I’m not only thankful to Chu Feng, but I’m also feeling pity for him. He had just joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect and met up with Senior Song, who viewed him as a brother. He had a bright future ahead of him. Yet, of all people, he offended Bi Jingjing. In my view, he’ll probably face a fate even worse than the outer disciples,” Hei Yao sneered.

Even though he spoke as if he was pitying Chu Feng, his eyes only showed glee.

“It’s my turn now, right?” Chu Feng asked.

Bi Jingjing was still immersed in the compliments and awed exclamations coming from the crowd when she heard Chu Feng’s words. This was her first time showcasing her talent, and she was aiming for such an effect. Yet, who could have thought that Chu Feng would interrupt her golden moment?

And what frustrated her more was that even though she had showcased her talent, Chu Feng wasn’t reacting at all. He remained perfectly calm, as if nothing had happened at all.

This made her extremely displeased.

“I would like to see just what kind of talent you have,” Bi Jingjing harrumphed coldly.

As much as she disliked Chu Feng, she didn’t make things hard on him right away. Instead, she waited patiently for him to make a fool out of himself.

After Bi Jingjing stepped down from the stone platform, Chu Feng made his way up.

Weng!

A light immediately burst forth as soon as Chu Feng stepped onto the stone platform.

“This...”

Everyone was stunned for a moment upon seeing the light.

“Hahahahaha!”

Following that, a peal of mocking laughter sounded from all of the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall. The light that was emanating from the stone platform was white in color!

“Haaa...”

The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall shook their heads, and even Song Xi sighed deeply. They had already heard of Chu Feng’s aptitude test results, but seeing how confident he was, they thought that there might just be a chance that things would be different this time around.

Yet, any sliver of expectations they bore ended up disappointing them.

White light represented the lowest aptitude whereas golden light represented the pinnacle aptitude. The contrast between the two on the stone platform couldn’t be any more jarring.

Chu Feng had fully highlighted just how outstanding Bi Jingjing was while embarrassing the North Tortoise Hall.

“Song Xi, let’s see how you’re going to deal with this!”

Hei Yao maintained a nonchalant look on his face, but he was actually celebrating in glee on the inside. He could care less about Chu Feng’s life and death, but he fully welcomed Song Xi’s fall from grace so that he could take the latter’s position.

Given Chu Feng and Song Xi’s close ties, if the former brought disgrace to the North Tortoise Hall, the latter would surely be implicated as well.

“W-what’s going on?”

A commotion suddenly broke out amidst the crowd.

Realizing that something was amiss, Hei Yao turned his gaze toward the stone platform once more. He realized that the white platform was still emanating white light, but amidst the white light, there was a sliver of gray light bursting forth.

Following that, blue light and purple light began to emerge too.

The stone platform was actually emanating four different colored lights simultaneously, white, gray, blue, and purple.

Roar!

It was then that a dragon's roar sounded from the stone platform. The platform began to shudder intensely that even the earth began to quake. Then, a pillar of golden light poured forth.

At the same time, the white, gray, blue, and purple lights morphed into light pillars that fused together with the pillar of golden light. Then, all at once, they suddenly seeped back into the stone platform.

Grawr!

The dragon's roar sounded once more.

A five-colored pillar gushed into the air, morphing into a five-colored massive dragon that soared straight toward heaven!

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4710: Spirit Power Battle - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4710: Spirit Power Battle

Chapter 4710: Spirit Power Battle

The rise of the light dragon caused the surroundings to plunge into silence. However, this silence only lasted for a brief moment before a huge commotion broke out amidst the crowd.

Exclamations and discussions sounded amidst the crowd.

No matter how foolish the crowd was, they could tell that a peculiar phenomenon was going on at the moment. However, this was a phenomenon

that none of them had ever seen before, so they had no idea what was going on.

“Did I win?”

Chu Feng stepped down from the stone platform before asking Bi Jingjing.

“Brat, you sure are shameless! You resorted to such underhanded methods in hopes of winning the battle!”

But before Bi Jingjing could speak up, Fang Yunshi had already interjected with a fuming voice.

“Underhanded methods? Oh hoh, I never thought that I would hear such words from you. Looks like you’re a sore loser?” Chu Feng chuckled lightly.

He had seen far too many such people to pay them any heed.

“The aptitude test should only have five different colors, white, gray, blue, purple, and golden. They represent lowest, low, mid, high, and pinnacle respectively. But what was it that you showed earlier? Do you think that you’re performing a circus act? Did you think that you can fool us just because you made it fanciful? You must be taking us as fools!” Fang Yunshi roared.

No one thought that there was anything wrong with what Fang Yunshi said.

The phenomenon Chu Feng produced as amazing, but it was already beyond what the stone platform was supposedly capable of doing. In other words, there was something amiss about Chu Feng’s test.

“We’ve lost this round.”

But at this very moment, Bi Jingjing suddenly spoke up.

“Junior Bi, you...”

Bi Jingjing’s sudden declaration made Fang Yunshi stare at her in incomprehension.

“Pinnacle aptitude isn’t the limit of what this stone platform can test. God aptitude, that’s the limit of this stone platform,” Bi Jingjing said.

“God aptitude? I have never heard of that before.”

The disciples present began whispering to one another in bewilderment.

“Junior Bi, are you making a mistake here? Even the Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples are only at pinnacle aptitude. How could that man be of god aptitude?” Fang Yunshi also found the matter hard to believe.

“It’s indeed god aptitude. I’ve heard my grandfather speak of it once before. He has seen someone using the stone platform to produce the phenomenon that came about the revelation of someone with god aptitude. It’s exactly as we have just seen,” Bi Jingjing replied.

“Someone else has induced such a phenomenon in the past? Why have I never heard of it before?” Fang Yunshi asked.

The other disciples such as Song Xi were curious about it too.

“You might not have heard of the event, but I’m certain that you would recognize the person,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Who is it?”

The crowd asked anxiously.

“Dugu Lingtian,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Ah? You mean Lord Dugu Lingtian?!”

There was a complicated look on everyone’s faces when they heard the words ‘Dugu Lingtian’. They hurriedly turned to look at Chu Feng with conflicted looks on their faces.

If it was Dugu Lingtian they were talking about here, it wouldn’t be too surprising for him to be of god aptitude. However, they found it hard to believe that Chu Feng was of god aptitude as well.

“Junior Bi, could you have made a mistake? How can this man be compared to Lord Dugu Lingtian?” Fang Yunshi asked.

Even though Chu Feng had already proved his worth, he still refused to believe that Chu Feng was indeed of the legendary god aptitude.

This time around, Bi Jingjing chose to ignore Fang Yunshi and, instead, turned to look at Chu Feng.

“You’ve won the first round on aptitude. We’ll be moving on to the matches on spirit power and martial power. If you can win another round, it’ll be considered as your victory,” Bi Jingjing said.

She was still talking to Chu Feng with a high and mighty voice that made it sound as if she was talking to a mere ant, but right now, her attitude was much more respectful, and her hostility had vanished too.

“Since you decided on the rules of the first round, shouldn’t we be allowed to decide on the rules of the second round then?” Chu Feng asked.

“How do you intend to go about it?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“The second round is the round on spirit power, right? One-on-one is too boring and a huge waste of time. Why don’t I challenge all of you from the South Vermilion Hall single-handedly instead? Of course, we’ll only be using spirit power in this battle,” Chu Feng said.

“Surely I’m not hearing things? Did you just say that you would challenge all of us alone? Putting aside the authenticity of your aptitude test result, but you sure are arrogant to make such a challenge.” Feng Yunshi looked at Chu Feng mockingly.

Bi Jingjing immediately shot a glare at Fang Yunshi, which made the latter reluctantly lower his head and zip up his mouth.

“You sure are confident to challenge all of us alone. However, I should advise you not to look down on our South Vermilion Hall,” Bi Jingjing said.

“I have no intention of looking down on any of you. I just don’t want to stall things out for no reason,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you certain about this?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“Yes, I’m certain,” Chu Feng replied.

“Good. Since you’ve said this yourself, I hope that you don’t blame us for taking advantage of you then!”

Bi Jingjing accepted the challenge before turning to the crowd behind her.

“Disciples of the South Vermilion Hall, did you hear those words? We’re being looked down on by this new junior from the North Tortoise Hall! Surely I need

not tell you what we must do now? Whoever wishes to join the battle, step out on your own!" Bi Jingjing shouted.

"Junior Bi, I shall fight him!"

"Me too!"

A huge crowd from the South Vermilion Hall walked out, numbering in several dozens. They released their spirit power, revealing a hint of a dragon's silhouette in their prowess.

As it turned out, they were all Dragon Mark Spirit-cloak world spiritists.

"There are actually so many Dragon Mark Saint-cloak world spiritists amongst them... There's no way we could win this battle!"

The North Tortoise Hall frowned upon seeing the impressive line-up of their opponents. This time around, however, they didn't blame Chu Feng.

The North Tortoise Hall was far weaker when it came to spirit power, such that even if they went with the original format of fighting three separate rounds, they still wouldn't have been a match for the South Vermilion Hall.

This was also the reason why no one spoke any words of opposition when Chu Feng challenged everyone in the South Vermilion Hall earlier. From the start, they had already given up on the spirit power round.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was eyeing his opponents calmly. After doing a quick scan, he said, "Is that all you've got?"

"I'm joining the fight too," Bi Jingjing said as she released her spirit power too.

She was also a Dragon Mark Spirit-cloak world spiritist too, but her spirit power was far stronger than the other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall, reaching a level comparable to a rank two Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

"Rank one Dragon Transformation Sensation. I didn't expect Bi Jingjing to be this formidable! We're definitely going to lose this match."

This sight brought a tight frown to the faces of the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall.

If, in the past, they were still harboring a sliver of hope for Chu Feng's victory, right now, their hope had been completely shattered after witnessing Bi Jingjing's prowess.

"Can we begin now?" Chu Feng asked calmly.

"This fellow sure knows how to put on an act," Fang Yunshi snorted coldly.

He couldn't stand just how arrogantly Chu Feng was acting. However, out of fear of Bi Jingjing, he dared not to openly offend Chu Feng anymore.

"Construct the formation!"

Bi Jingjing shouted as she released her great spirit power. The other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall also quickly channeled their spirit power over, assisting her in the construction of the formation.

Their coordination was on the dot, hinting that this was not their first time collaborating with one another on a formation.

Soon, a huge formation beast towering at a height of over ten thousand meters materialized before them. In the face of this massive beast, the cultivators beneath looked extraordinarily insignificant.

The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall felt despaired upon seeing this.

In truth, if they could exert their martial power, this beast wouldn't be anything of fear to them. However, since the battle was limited to just the usage of spirit power, their hands were tied.

"Chu Feng, admit defeat now! It's still not too late!"

Instead of attacking Chu Feng right away, Bi Jingjing shouted at Chu Feng and advised him to give up. It looked like she was reluctant to hurt Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng smiled calmly and asked, "Are you done with your preparations?"

"What do you mean by that?"

Bi Jingjing was confused as to what Chu Feng was up to.

"If you're done, it should be my turn now."

Shoosh!

Chu Feng flung his sleeves, and a great deluge of spirit power poured out from his body, washing down the humongous body of the formation beast. All it took was the blink of an eye for the collaborative formation constructed by Bi Jingjing and the other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall to be destroyed!

Chapter 4711: Have Some Self-Respect

“You’re also at rank one Dragon Transformation Sensation?”

Bi Jingjing looked at Chu Feng with shock in her eyes.

“Do you want to continue?” Chu Feng said.

The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall were delighted. They didn’t bear much hope toward the spirit power round, and Chu Feng challenging all of the South Vermilion Hall’s disciple at once only deepened their despair.

But now, they were finally seeing hope for victory.

While they were both at rank one Dragon Transformation Sensation, Chu Feng was actually able to destroy the collaborative formation constructed by the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall in a single strike. From this, it could be seen that he was stronger than Bi Jingjing.

“It isn’t over yet.”

But despite so, Bi Jingjing had no intention of giving up. The space in front of her shuddered as a spirit formation gate materialized. Soon, a silhouette walked out from within.

It was a world spirit!

The presence of the world spirit made the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall frown. They could sense the aura of a rank three Utmost Exalted level cultivator coming from the world spirit.

“World spirits are also a part of a world spiritist’s strength. Chu Feng, you’ve lost,” Bi Jingjing said.

“It has been a long time since I’ve seen world spirits from the Fairy Spirit World,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Right after that, his silhouette suddenly vanished. When he appeared once more, he was already standing right before Bi Jingjing's world spirit.

He thrust his fist forward and struck the abdomen of the world spirit squarely, causing the world spirit to immediately kneel to the floor weakly.

"This..."

The first thought that flashed through Fang Yunshi's mind was that Chu Feng had used his martial power. He wanted to lash out at the latter, but he suddenly froze in place.

To his astonishment, he couldn't sense any martial power around Chu Feng at all. Instead, what he saw was Chu Feng donning an armor made out of spirit power. The latter was emanating the aura of a rank four Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

"Y-you're at... rank two Dragon Transformation Sensation!" Bi Jingjing exclaimed in disbelief.

Chu Feng smiled calmly, but he still didn't respond to Bi Jingjing's question directly. Instead, he asked, "Do you want to continue on?"

"This fellow!"

Chu Feng's arrogant attitude made Fang Yunshi and the other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall enraged, but to their dismay, they realized that there was nothing they could do about him.

"Interesting. It's no wonder why even the East Dragon Hall was unable to win you over. You have won today," Bi Jingjing said before turning around to leave.

"What about the promise?" Chu Feng asked.

"We'll follow what you said. From this day onward, the first five days of the Wintry Spirit Waterfall will be taken by our disciples whereas the remaining ten days will be yours," Bi Jingjing replied.

"Senior Bi, are you able to call the shots on this matter? I wouldn't want the other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall to cause a fuss over this matter every few days," Chu Feng said.

“Yes, I can call the shots on this matter.”

Right after saying her piece, Bi Jingjing got up and left the area.

The other disciples of the South Vermilion Hall also quickly got up and followed her too. Even the disciples who were originally cultivating in the Wintry Spirit Waterfall rose to their feet and left as well.

Whoosh!

The very next moment, all of the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall began huddling around Chu Feng, Song Xi, and the others.

“Junior Chu Feng, you’re too formidable! You weren’t just an ordinary rank one Utmost Exalted level after all. You actually have grasped rank two Dragon Transformation Sensation too!”

While there were words of thanks going toward Song Xi too, the voices surrounding Chu Feng were still the loudest and most numerous.

In truth, Chu Feng’s spirit power was still sealed at rank one Dragon Transformation Sensation, but he used the power of the Nine Dragons Saint Cloak and his world spiritist bloodline in order to raise his spirit power to rank four Dragon Transformation Sensation, but he didn’t bother explaining it to the others.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony. I’m a disciple of the North Tortoise Hall too, so it’s only right for me to do this much,” Chu Feng explained.

The cheers immediately crescendoed with those words. A merry atmosphere swiftly surrounded the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall.

However, what no one noticed was that even though Song Xi was happy too, there was also an indescribable look in his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

When everything finally came to an end, Chu Feng headed over to Song Xi’s residence to continue the banquet. It lasted all the way till night time before the banquet was concluded, and he returned back to his residence.

It was a long day, but Chu Feng wasn’t tired at all. He began trying to decipher the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor once more. His goal was not just to recover his strength but to raise it to greater heights.

He knew his deeds today would surely bring attention to him. It might bring him more opportunities, but at the same time, there would surely be some who would try to put him down. He needed to be sufficiently strong in order to protect himself.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you asleep?”

It was then that someone suddenly called out to him outside his residence.

Chu Feng looked over and saw that it was Wang Ziyang. Considering that Wang Ziyang was Song Xi’s companion, she might be here to relay Song Xi’s intention.

So, he got up and opened the doors.

“Sister-in-law, is there something wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu Feng, may I go in to speak?” Wang Ziyang asked.

“You may enter.”

Chu Feng ushered Wang Ziyang into the room before closing the doors. When he turned around, he noticed that Wang Ziyang was carrying some desserts in her hands. This was peculiar because he was certain that Wang Ziyang’s hands were empty earlier.

“Sister-in-law, what do you mean by this?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu, I realized that you kept drinking wine earlier but hardly ate anything at all. I’m afraid that you might be starving. I made these desserts myself, so please have a taste. You should fill your stomach first before resting,” Wang Ziyang said.

“Thank you.”

Chu Feng picked up one of the desserts and ate it. It was surprisingly good.

In truth, cultivators like Chu Feng wouldn’t die as long as their souls weren’t destroyed. If they ate, it would be for enjoyment rather than out of necessity.

“Sister-in-law, you still haven’t told me the reason behind your visit. Does Brother Song have business with me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu, am I only able to look for you only under Song Xi’s instructions?”

As Wang Ziyang spoke, she walked over to Chu Feng and pounced on him.

“Sister-in-law, what are you doing?”

Chu Feng hurriedly evaded her with a twist of his body.

“Junior Chu, Song Xi and I aren’t a couple. You... don’t have to keep your distance with me,” Wang Ziyang explained as she tried to pounce on Chu Feng once more.

This time, she even used her movement skill.

The two of them were close to one another at the start, and Wang Ziyang was a rank three Utmost Exalted level cultivator. Given that Chu Feng was caught off guard, he ended up failing to evade her.

By the time he realized it, Wang Ziyang had already leaped into his arms and took the initiative to embrace him.

This made Chu Feng incredibly angry. He summoned his spirit power and forcefully shoved Wang Ziyang aside.

“Sister-in-law, please have some self-respect,” Chu Feng bellowed lividly.

“Chu Feng, you really don’t know what’s good for you!”

Wang Ziyang was also enraged at Chu Feng’s refusal too. The seductive look on her face receded, replaced with coldness. With a fling of her sleeves, she turned around and left.

“What’s wrong with her?”

Chu Feng was utterly baffled as to what she was trying to pull.

“She’s probably trying to seduce you after witnessing your talents,” Yu Sha said.

She had seen everything with her own eyes earlier.

“Chu Feng, you should head over to tell Song Xi about this lest she tries to complain about you in advance and turn the situation against you,” Yu Sha reminded.

“There’s no need for that. The relationship between Song Xi and I is not something she could foil that easily. “

Chu Feng closed the door and focused his attention back on deciphering the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

Chapter 4712: Destroying Relationships

“Chu Feng, are you in there?”

Not too long after Chu Feng turned his attention back to deciphering the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, another woman’s voice suddenly sounded by the doorway. This time around, it wasn’t Wang Ziyang but Tu Yuanyuan.

“What’s wrong for you to come over at this time?”

Chu Feng opened the door and looked at Tu Yuanyuan in surprise.

“Let’s talk inside.”

Without waiting for Chu Feng to answer, she had already headed right in on her own accord. Chu Feng didn’t stop her either and simply closed the door behind her.

“Waa, what sumptuous dessert do you have here? It looks like prodigies like you are indeed different. It hasn’t even been a day since you made your name, and you’re already accorded such treatment.”

Tu Yuanyuan was not the type to hold herself back. Without asking Chu Feng, she reached out for the desserts on the table and stuffed it into her mouth.

As she ate, her head swayed from side to side in contentment.

“You can’t possibly have come all the way to my place to look for food, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course not. I’ve just heard of your matter. You sure are an impressive person. I never thought that you would trigger the legendary god aptitude.”

Tu Yuanyuan shot a thumbs up toward Chu Feng amidst stuffing her cheeks.

“Looks like news spread fast in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. So, you came all the way here to congratulate me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Isn’t this something worth congratulating? I knew that you would make your name here, but I didn’t think that you would do it so quickly. In my view, it’s only a matter of time before you get yourself a slot amongst the Hidden Dragon Disciples! Aside from that, however, I’m also here to remind you of something.”

At this point, Tu Yuanyuan finally put down the desserts in her hands, and her eyes turned a little grave.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“You should remember Elder Ouyang Che, right?” Tu Yuanyuan asked.

“I do. My memory isn’t that bad,” Chu Feng replied.

How could he not remember Ouyang Che? That fellow was an elder of the East Dragon Hall. Shortly after the entrance aptitude test, there was a selection where the elders would choose the disciples they wanted to take in. Ouyang Che chose Hua Xu back then.

Hua Xu wanted to use Ouyang Che to deal with Chu Feng back then, and the latter was more than willing to help him. However, after Chu Feng revealed his cultivation, Ouyang Che ended up regretting his decision. In order to take Chu Feng in as his disciple, he didn’t hesitate to annul his master-disciple relationship with Hua Xu on the spot.

“Elder Ouyang Che has been punished. He’s currently demoted to an outer elder,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

“What happened?”

Chu Feng was probing deeper into it because Tu Yuanyuan specially came all the way here to inform him of the matter. Most likely, there was something deeper to it.

“It seemed like some of the shadier deeds he did in the past got exposed, so the punishment looks legitimate on the surface. However... this matter isn’t as

simple as it seems. It turns out that Hua Shengping is of the same race as Hua Xu, making him Hua Xu's elder," Tu Yuanyuan explained.

"I get it. In other words, Hua Xu got Hua Shengping to get back at Ouyang Che," Chu Feng said.

"That's pretty much what everyone is thinking. Back then, Ouyang Che slapped Hua Xu while annulling their relationship, so Hua Xu wanted vengeance. However, you have also riled up Hua Xu the other day, and Hua Xu is quite a narrow-minded person. Now that he has a powerful backing, there's no way he'll let you off," Tu Yuanyuan said.

"Is Hua Shengping very powerful?" Chu Feng asked.

"I'm not sure what's his current cultivation level, but he has quite some standing in the East Dragon Hall. Hua Shengping's master is the Law Enforcement Elder of the East Dragon Hall. You should know that there are only ten Law Enforcement Elders in each of the halls, and they possess great strength and authority.

"Due to that, hardly anyone dares to offend Hua Shengping in the East Dragon Hall," Tu Yuanyuan explained.

"I didn't expect Hua Xu to have such an elder behind him. Interesting," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Chu Feng, aren't you afraid?"

Tu Yuanyuan was surprised to see how Chu Feng was taking all of this lightly. A normal person should at least show a bit of nervousness or something.

"What's there to be afraid about? I just have to deal with it when problems come my way. What that's bound to come will eventually come," Chu Feng replied.

"You sure can take things in stride. Anyway, I still feel obliged to remind you to tread carefully. Hurry up and find a backing for yourself. With your talent, it shouldn't be hard for you to get someone on your side. Even after that, you should try to stay low. Don't get into any trouble if possible. Otherwise, Hua Shengping will definitely try to get you," Tu Yuanyuan advised.

"Thanks," Chu Feng said.

While Tu Yuanyuan had exterior motivations in mind, it was still a fact that she chose to tip him off despite knowing that Hua Xu had a powerful backing now. This made him feel a little touched.

After all, she could be placed in a dangerous position if she were to be caught walking too close to him at this juncture.

“There’s no need to be so distant with me. I’m your junior after all! Alright, I need to leave now, or else it wouldn’t look good if people were to catch me visiting your residence in the middle of the night.”

With that, Tu Yuanyuan quickly took her leave.

Chu Feng noticed that she had used some sort of means to conceal her body before heading out. From this, it could be seen that she was a meticulous person.

Her actions showed her reluctance to reveal the close relationship between the two of them, but Chu Feng could understand where she was coming from. Tu Yuanyuan was a disciple of the East Dragon Hall, and Hua Xu and Hua Shengping were both in the East Dragon Hall too.

Regardless of whatever identity Tu Yuanyuan has outside of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, she couldn’t rely on those now. The only backing she had within the sect was her master. Given so, there was indeed a need for her to proceed warily.

...

One thing that was worth noting was that Yu Sha’s guess was spot-on.

After Wang Ziyuan was rejected by Chu Feng, she headed straight for Song Xi’s residence with tears in her eyes.

“You said that Chu Feng disrespected you?”

Song XI looked at the crying Wang Ziyuan with rage in his eyes. He had already learned about what had happened earlier through her... and needless to say, Wang Ziyuan wasn’t going to reveal the truth here.

“Senior Song, do you think that I would lie to you? I thought that given that I’m your woman, it’s only right for me to show some concern for your brother too,

so I sent some desserts over to Chu Feng out of goodwill. Yet, who could have thought that he's actually a beast! As soon as I walked in, he...

"If I hadn't fought him off desperately with all of my strength, I could very well be..."

At this point, Wang Ziyang broke down into tears, as if she had suffered a great grievance.

"So, nothing happened to you in the end, right?" Song Xi asked.

"I warned him that I'm your woman, but Chu Feng didn't back down at all. Instead, he sneered at me, saying that his talent is above you. He said that it's only a matter of time before he becomes the number one disciple of the North Tortoise Hall, so you're nothing worthy of mention. In the end... If not for me threatening him with my life, I might not have been able to get away from him!" Wang Ziyang sobbed.

"Ziyang, stop crying. Come over here."

Song Xi beckoned to Wang Ziyang.

Wang Ziyang immediately walked over and leaped into Song Xi's embrace.

Pah!

Unexpectedly, Song Xi flicked his sleeves and sent a resounding slap onto her face, sending her tumbling across the room.

Chapter 4713: Slots

"You slut. After failing to seduce Chu Feng, you still have to destroy our brotherly relationship? Did you think that I don't know about your history with Hei Yao? Do you think that I, Song Xi, wouldn't be able to see through just what kind of person you are?" Song Xi bellowed Wang Ziyang furiously.

"Senior Song, as the saying goes, 'know a person but not his heart'! I really am not lying to you! I'm speaking the complete truth here!" Wang Ziyang argued, unwilling to give up just like that.

"Scram! If you dare speak another word of falsehood about Chu Feng, I'll have you killed!"

Killing intent raged in Song Xi's eyes as he said those words.

Realizing that the situation was turning awry, Wang Ziyang shuddered in fear. She quickly rose to her feet and fled out of his residence.

“Scoundrel!”

After Wang Ziyang left, Song Xi smashed his fist and destroyed many of the expensive items placed within the hall. His eyes were not only filled with rage but something else too.

...

For the next period of time to come, there was no one else who interrupted Chu Feng, allowing him to focus his attention on his cultivation. Unfortunately, he was still unable to figure out the way to unlock the First Essence.

On the third day, Chu Feng finally made his way over to Song Xi's residence. This was the day that Song Xi agreed with Chu Feng to go on the trial together.

Chu Feng knew that the trial was a place known as the Snowy Heavenly Peak. It contained many treasures, and if one was lucky, one could obtain quite a few precious cultivation resources.

However, what was more important was that the Snowy Heavenly Peak was actually a huge formation itself. It carried the same effect of raising a cultivator's talent, similar to the Wintry Spirit Waterfall, just much more potent. Its formation needed to be charged with energy, so the place was only opened once a year.

Every time it opened, only five hundred disciples from the four halls were allowed to enter the premises. Of them, the East Dragon Hall dominated 300 slots, the West Tiger Hall had 100 slots, the South Vermilion Hall had 80 slots, but the North Tortoise Hall was only allocated 20 slots.

Despite the lacking number of slots for the North Tortoise Hall, Song Xi had used his influence to reserve a slot for Chu Feng, allowing him to participate in the trial despite being a newcomer.

Initially, Chu Feng wasn't too interested in the trial and only accepted it at Song Xi's insistence. However, over the last two days, he was unable to figure out how to unlock his First Essence.

It just so happened that the Snowy Heavenly Peak was known to be quite a mystical place, so Chu Feng thought that he could possibly get some inspiration there, and perhaps, he might just be able to figure out a way to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

By the time Chu Feng arrived, there were already quite a few people gathered in Song Xi's residence. They were all the most outstanding juniors in the present North Tortoise Hall, chose to participate in the trial this time around. They were gathered here so as to head off to the Snowy Heavenly Peak together with one another.

"Chu Feng, why are you here?"

Even though Song Xi had already announced that Chu Feng would be given a slot in the trial this time around, the crowd soon looked at Chu Feng in astonishment, surprised by his arrival.

Meanwhile, Song Xi looked a little awkward, unwilling to meet him in the eye.

"Did something happen?"

Not wanting to put Song Xi in a spot, he walked over to his side and asked him privately.

"My deepest apologies, Chu Feng. The reason why I called you to join the trial is because Hei Yao's younger brother, Hei Zong, was injured, so there was an additional slot. However, he had recovered from his injuries, so I thought that it would be better to return the slot to Hei Zong," Song Xi explained.

He spoke aloud, not using voice transmission or lowering his voice as all.

"Junior Chu Feng, please don't think too much of it. This slot originally belonged to my younger brother anyway," Hei Yao said.

His words revealed his ridicule toward Chu Feng. Wang Ziyang was also sneering silently by the side too.

Even though Wang Ziyang was taught a lesson by Song Xi for trying to stir a conflict between them, the swap of personnel going on today was actually proposed by Song Xi himself. This showed that Song Xi had indeed fallen from her tricks.

“It’s fine, you don’t have to apologize to me. You were doing me a favor in the first place, but since Junior Hei Zong is fine, you should let him go instead.”

Not wanting to put Song Xi in a spot, he patted his shoulders and shrugged the matter off.

“Brother Chu Feng, you need not get too upset. You’re still young, and you have good talent too. I believe that you would be able to get a slot next year,” Hei Yao said.

“Do I look upset to you?” Chu Feng asked impassively.

“Brother Chu Feng, why force yourself to smile? Even if you’re unhappy, we can understand it. Don’t you agree with me, brothers?” Hei Yao turned to those behind him as he said.

“Indeed, Junior Chu Feng! They say that men don’t tear up easily, but that’s only because the matter hasn’t struck their sore spot. If you’re upset, you can feel free to cry out loud. We’ll understand it.”

It was obvious that these people were mocking him, but Song Xi stood quietly by the side, not saying a word at all. This made Chu Feng realize that Song Xi had a part in this too, or else these people shouldn’t dare to look down on him right now.

Had it been anyone else, Chu Feng would have just ignored or taught them a lesson, but these people were Song Xi’s subordinates. It made him feel a little bitter inside.

They had gone through so much before, and Chu Feng knew deep down that he had done a lot for Song Xi too. Were the hearts of humans so fragile as to be unable to overcome trials?

Did Song Xi really fall for Wang Ziyang’s words?

In any case, Chu Feng chose not to make things look too awful out of consideration of Song Xi. He turned around and left the area.

But just then, a few figures suddenly flew over, and Song Xi and the others hurriedly bow down. They were elders of the North Tortoise Hall, and Dao Qinian was amongst them.

It was worth noting that the strongest one in the group of elders wasn't Dao Qinian. Instead, it was an old man who gave off a refined aura. His name was Li Boyi, and he was one of the ten Law Enforcement Elders of the North Tortoise Hall, as well as a Martial Exalted level expert.

"Paying respects to Elder Li!"

Upon seeing Elder Li, Song Xi hurriedly stepped forward and bowed to him.

"Song Xi, have you decided on the slots?" Elder Li Boyi asked.

"Yes, elder. The slots have been decided. Please have a look through it."

Song Xi walked up and humbly passed a scroll over to Li Boyi.

Li Boyi received the scroll with a smile, and he even specially shot a glance at Chu Feng before unfurling it. However, once he saw the content on it, his face immediately darkened. His smile vanished, replaced by a look of fury instead.

"Song Xi, what are you up to?"

Li Boyi actually threw the scroll back at Song Xi's face.

Chapter 4714: Dugu Lingtian

"Elder, is there anything wrong here?"

Song Xi hurriedly picked up the scroll as he asked with inconcealable panic in his eyes.

"Why is Chu Feng not in there?" Li Boyi asked.

"This..."

A conflicted expression appeared on Song Xi's face upon hearing those words. Hei Yao and the others also dared not to say anything much. They could sense that Elder Li Boyi had come for Chu Feng, for he would usually not interfere in matters that had already been entrusted to Song Xi.

“Elder, in truth, Senior Song has already invited me. It’s just that... I feel that my qualification is still lacking, so I turned him down.”

Not wanting to put Song Xi in a spot, Chu Feng stood forward and clarified the matter.

However, everyone present knew that Chu Feng’s clarification was a lie. Even the elders were aware that Chu Feng was just covering up for Song Xi.

Nevertheless, Elder Li Boyi didn’t lose his temper at Chu Feng. Instead, he looked at Chu Feng with a bitter smile as he said, “You feel that your qualification is lacking? Someone who had god aptitude is considered to be lacking in qualification?”

Those words verified the crowd’s suspicion that the elders were here for Chu Feng. They had already known about Chu Feng’s talent, and they believed that it was real.

This was queer because the majority of the people thought that there was something amiss with the test and refused to acknowledge that a disciple in the North Tortoise Hall had god aptitude. They couldn’t be blamed for thinking that way as all they had heard were rumors, and even those who had witnessed the situation in person like Song Xi reserved some doubts about the matter too.

In any case, most people refused to acknowledge this matter.

This was also the reason why they were shocked when Elder Li Boyi and the others believed in the matter. *nope-LB*)In

“Chu Feng, you should participate in this trial,” Li Boyi said.

“Thank you for your concern, elder, but my aptitude doesn’t determine my true future. Besides, my qualification is indeed lacking as I’ve only just joined the North Tortoise Hall,” Chu Feng rejected the offer once more.

He was doing it so as to not put Song Xi in the spot.

“Chu Feng, you’re too humble. Aptitude is a key to a cultivator’s progress. There are many cultivators who have trained for countless years, only to never step into Utmost Exalted level. On the other hand, despite your young

age, your cultivation and spirit power have already reached an incredible height.

“I’ve already heard of your affairs. You even turned down East Dragon Hall to come to our North Tortoise Hall; it’s our honor to have you here. Since you chose us, our North Tortoise Hall shan’t let you down.”

After saying his piece, Li Boyi turned to look at Song Xi.

“Song Xi, I don’t care what you do, but I expect to see Chu Feng in the Snowy Heavenly Peak this time around. If you can’t come to a decision, I’ll do it instead... But of course, if you aren’t capable of at least handling this much work, you need not interfere in future matters concerning trials anymore,” Li Boyi said.

“Elder, please be assured. I’ll handle this properly.”

Song Xi had a nervous expression when he said those words. It could be seen that he was very afraid of Elder Li Boyi.

“Do it right now,” Li Boyi urged.

“Hei Zong, you have yet to fully recover from your injuries. Chu Feng shall take your place in the trial this time around,” Song Xi quickly said.

“Hei Zong will listen to Senior Song’s instructions.”

Hei Zong was reluctant to give up his slot, but he knew that he couldn’t possibly turn down this ‘order’ right now.

“Hei Zong, allow me to make some corrections here. Chu Feng isn’t taking your place here; he’s simply more qualified than you,” Li Boyi said.

Those words were no different from trampling down on Hei Zong to raise Chu Feng’s standing. It showed just how highly Li Boyi viewed Chu Feng right now.

“Chu Feng, the Snowy Heavenly Peak can’t do much to help your cultivation right now, but it’s still quite a formidable cultivation place within the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It’ll be good for you to take a look around,” Li Boyi said.

“Chu Feng, you must make sure to cultivate earnestly. You’re someone with god aptitude, and there’s a chance you might even be able to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record in the future,” Dao Qinian added with a smile.

Those words were actually spoken as a joke, but it ended up piquing Chu Feng’s curiosity.

“Elder Dao, what are the records you speak of?” Chu Feng asked.

“In truth, the cultivation places in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect all have records, but the record holder are all the same people—Lord Dugu Lingtian. What I said earlier was just a joke, so please don’t enter the trials with the intention to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records.

“It’s good to have goals, but getting too fixated on the records might become an impediment to you. The records set by Lord Dugu Lingtian are simply unbreakable. Even our incumbent sectmaster is unable to do so,” Dao Qinian said.

“If I may ask, who is Lord Dugu Lingtian?” Chu Feng asked in curiosity.

He had been quite interested in Dugu Lingtian for some time now, and his interest only further intensified after learning that Dugu Lingtian was the holder of every single record in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, such that even the incumbent sectmaster couldn’t best him.

Putting aside the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster, even the mysterious existence he had seen in the Hidden Dragon Selection Formation was already an unfathomably powerful individual. Yet, based on what Elder Dao Qinian said, Dugu Lingtian’s strength seemed to surpass even that of the sectmaster.

It was hard to Chu Feng to fathom just how formidable Dugu Lingtian was.

Dao Qinian began recounting Dugu Lingtian’s affairs to him without hiding anything.

“I never thought that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect would have such an incredible person.”

Chu Feng was deeply impressed after hearing Dugu Lingtian’s affairs, but at the same time, he couldn’t help but heave a regretful sigh too.

Dugu Lingtian was from the same generation as the sectmaster and vice sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. His extraordinary talent placed him in the limelight, and even at a very young age, the previous sectmaster had already chosen him as his successor. In fact, there were many people who felt that Dugu Lingtian would eventually surpass the sect's founder.

Unfortunately, despite Dugu Lingtian's great talent and swift growth, he was still just a junior. Once, while he was on a mission, he encountered an enemy and ended up passing away just like that...

Despite his death, Dugu Lingtian still remained a legend within the sect.

Most people hadn't met him in person before, but that didn't hinder both elders and disciples from carrying deep respect and admiration for him.

Chapter 4715: Sect Founder

Following that, Chu Feng, together with Song Xi and eighteen other disciples from the North Tortoise Hall, headed together for the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

The elders weren't participating in the training, so there were only disciples in the group. However, the atmosphere felt a little queer along the way.

Initially, there were some disciples who took the initiative to speak to Chu Feng. They had seen how much the elders valued Chu Feng, so they wanted to get on good terms with him. However, a soft cough from Song Xi sent those people swallowing their words back in.

It was clearly a warning toward the others.

Naturally, Chu Feng had also noticed that there was something amiss with Song Xi's state. Despite him helping Song Xi out of his quandary earlier, the latter didn't seem to appreciate his help. On the contrary, his enmity toward Chu Feng only grew greater.

If Song Xi was still veiling his enmity under excuses, at this very moment, he was expressing it openly.

Seeing this, Chu Feng heaved a deep sigh. While he knew that Song Xi carried some negative feelings toward him, he didn't want to give on the latter just yet, especially considering the bond they previously shared.

If Song Xi was willing to turn back, Chu Feng didn't mind turning a blind eye to all of this. However, if Song Xi was determined to keep this up, Chu Feng had utterly no interest in humoring someone who obviously bore him ill-will.

Once that happened, their bond would inevitably weaken and grow distant. However, at the very least, Chu Feng could confidently say that the fault wasn't on him.

In the first place, he had never intended to steal Song Xi's position in the North Tortoise Hall, and if the latter was determined to think that way, there was nothing he could do about it.

As a result, for the remaining part of the journey, none of the twenty people in the North Tortoise Hall spoke a word at all. The atmosphere was horrible.

In the blink of an eye, Chu Feng and the others had already left the North Tortoise Hall to enter a vast plain. At the start, the plain was filled with lush grass, but as they proceeded further, the green landscape gradually became cloaked in snow.

Soon, a mountain range appeared in their line of sights. The mountains before them weren't too tall, but there was one specific peak that rose grandly above its counterparts, reminiscent of a sharp sword rising from the mountain range.

That was the Snowy Heavenly Peak!

The entire mountain range was sealed off by a barrier, and the only way in was through a spirit formation gate.

Chu Feng, as a world spiritist, had a habit of assessing his surroundings, especially when there was a formation present in the area. Often, through examining the prowess of the formation, he could determine how powerful the world spiritist who set it up was.

The formation surrounding the Snowy Heavenly Peak resembled the surface of a water body, shrouding the entire mountain range. However, with just a single glance, Chu Feng was able to sense something amiss about the formation.

He examined it even more carefully, only to widen his eyes in shock. n0ve-
LB)In

“W-who in the world possesses such powerful means?” Chu Feng murmured in shock.

He had ventured into many remnants and met all sorts of formidable experts. However, he had never seen a formation as powerful as this before.

This formation looked ordinary at first sight, but its resilience was beyond imagination. Chu Feng couldn't even begin to imagine just how powerful the world spiritist who set up this formation was. The spirit power infused into it was so great that Chu Feng doubted if even God-cloak World Spiritists would be able to pull something like this off.

In other words, this formation could have very possibly come from True Dragon level world spiritist. One must know that True Dragon Level World Spiritists possessed strength comparable to that of True God level cultivators. They wielded the strength to lay waste to worlds at their whim.

At least to the current Chu Feng, such existences were legends that were far beyond his reach.

Was it really possible for the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to have such a powerful expert in its midst?

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng turned to his seniors from the North Tortoise Hall and asked, “Seniors, may I ask who is the one who set up the protective formation around the Heavenly Snowy Peak? Is it the founder or someone else?”

This was the first time Chu Feng was taking the initiative to ask the other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall a question. However, no one answered him right away. Instead, they turned their gazes toward Song Xi.

It seemed that even though Chu Feng was valued by the elders, the standing of Song Xi was still far higher amongst the disciples. None of them actually dared to defy Song Xi's will.

As for Song Xi, he simply ignored Chu Feng's words and continued staring ahead of him.

This should have placed Chu Feng in an embarrassing position, but he simply treated it as if nothing had happened and turned his attention back to the formation.

He had just been snubbed, but he didn't think it was a big deal at all. He wasn't the reckless youth he used to be anymore. While his sharpness hadn't turned blunt, he no longer got offended that easily anymore.

“Oh? Isn't that the greatest prodigy of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, Junior Chu Feng?”

A voice suddenly sounded behind Chu Feng.

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall had arrived in the area too, and Fang Yunshi and Bi Jingjing were amongst them too. The one who said those words earlier was no other than Fang Yunshi.

However, his tone showed that he didn't mean those words as a compliment but as a biting remark.

“Junior Chu Feng, this really won't do. Why is it that no one is answering your question at all? If everyone is ignoring you, surely it must be your problem here. Let me give a word of advice; even though you might possess a high cultivation, you shouldn't get ahead of yourself. Learn to respect your seniors and get along well with them.”

Fang Yunshi rushed over to Chu Feng's side as he spoke. There was a smile on his face, but his attitude was truly vile.

Faced with such provocation, Chu Feng smiled calmly before replying, “Who do you think you are to interfere in my business?”

Those words were spoken loudly such that everyone could hear it loud and clear.

“You!!!”

With Fang Yunshi's explosive temper, there was no way he would tolerate being talked back to by Chu Feng in public.

“Junior Chu Feng.”

Bi Jingjing's gentle tone made Fang Yunshi realize that she didn't have any intention of provoking Chu Feng with him, so deferring to her will, he swallowed his words down.

“Most cultivation places in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect have been preserved throughout the ages. Only a small portion of them, due to certain reasons, have been modified. This Snowy Heavenly Peak is one of the few that has been preserved from the start, meaning that it was set up by the sect founder,” Bi Jingjing explained.

“Senior Bi, it hasn’t been long since I arrived at the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so I lack understanding of the sect. Do pardon me if I ask anything that’s out of place,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu, feel free to ask anything.”

The sharp-witted Bi Jingjing knew that Chu Feng was frontloading for a question.

“May I know who is our sect founder?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu Feng, I’m afraid that I’m unable to answer your question, for no one knows who the sect founder truly is. Even the preceding generations of sectmaster are unaware of who the founder of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is. Your question is something which all of us want to us, be it the disciples, elders, or even those who are no longer with us,” replied Bi Jingjing.

Chapter 4716: The Humble North Tortoise Hall

“Then why would there be rumors abound that Lord Dugu Lingtian is going to surpass the sect founder? If no one knows who the sect founder is, how could a comparison be made?” Chu Feng asked.

“Many of the records of the cultivation places are held by the sect founder. Before Lord Dugu Lingtian’s arrival, those records have been considered unbreakable by others, such that even preceding generations of sectmasters are unable to overcome them.

“However, Lord Dugu Lingtian broke all of those records. It’s precisely due to this reason that people believe that Lord Dugu Lingtian is someone who can eventually surpass the founder. There’s no doubt that Lord Dugu Lingtian is an incredibly talented cultivator, but it’s a pity that he was short-lived,” Bi Jingjing said with a sigh.

“Junior Bi, why bother saying so much to trash like him?”

A voice suddenly sounded behind.

Yet another group of disciples from the South Vermilion Hall had arrived, but this group was clearly much stronger than Bi Jingjing's group. The person leading the group emanated the aura of a rank six Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

"Paying respects to Senior Xia."

It wasn't just the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall who bowed to this 'Senior Xia'; even the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall like Song Xi did the same too.

"Chu Feng, allow me to introduce him to you. This is Senior Xia Ran from our South Vermilion Hall," Bi Jingjing hurriedly said.

Chu Feng was intending to clasp his hand and greet Xia Ran too out of consideration for Bi Jingjing, but the latter was directing a haughty and disdainful look toward him. This was a clear sign of provocation. So, he decided to just remain still.

"Are you the person who used despicable means to get yourself evaluated as god aptitude?"

As expected, Xia Ran began to insult Chu Feng right from the get-go.

"You're Senior Xia, right? Do you have any evidence to back up your claim?" Chu Feng asked.

"Does that even need any evidence? Lord Dugu Lingtian is the only one who possesses god aptitude, and you... You're clearly unworthy," Xia Ran pointed a finger at Chu Feng as he spoke.

"Senior Xia..."

Seeing that Xia Ran was intending to provoke Chu Feng, Bi Jingjing stood forward in hopes of mediating the situation. Unexpectedly, before Bi Jingjing could say anything, Xia Ran had already cut right in, "Junior Xia, why are you getting muddle-headed? You lost to that despicable man the other day, so why are you still speaking up for him? You can't possibly believe that he really possesses god aptitude, do you?"

“I...”

Despite Bi Jingjing’s background, she still seemed to be a little fearful of Xia Ran.

“Let me ask them straight then.”

Xia Ran turned to Song Xi and the other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall and said, “let me ask you. Do you think that Chu Feng’s god aptitude is real or fake?”

Song Xi and the others didn’t respond at all.

“I’m asking a question here! Are you deaf?!” Xia Ran suddenly raised his voice and bellowed.

Song Xi and the others immediately jolted in fright, and cold sweat began dripping down their faces.

“Senior Xia, I don’t know how Chu Feng’s aptitude is like, so... please don’t make things difficult for us.” Unable to stand the pressure, Hei Yao spoke up fearfully.

The other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall, with the exception of Song Xi, quickly nodded in agreement. It could be seen that they were very afraid of Xia Ran.

“What’s wrong with you all? Why are you sweating in a cold place like this? You can’t possibly be afraid, are you? Didn’t the lot of you have the guts to challenge our South Vermilion Hall?”

As Xia Ran spoke, he walked up to Hei Yao and patted his hand forcefully on Hei Yao’s cheeks.

Despite the humiliating gesture, Hei Yao only dared to stand there unmovingly.

Seeing this, the rest from the South Vermilion Hall, including Fang Yunshi, smiled gleefully

It was around then that the disciples from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall arrived too. They stood a distance away, watching the commotion.

This was truly a humiliation to the North Tortoise Hall.

Chu Feng finally understood just how low the North Tortoise Hall's position in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was. That day, when Song Xi led the disciples over to vie with Fang Yunshi over the Wintry Spirit Waterfall, he thought that they were still quite spunky, but he realized that he was mistaken.

Even Song Xi only dared to fight against Fang Yunshi, who was of the same cultivation level as him. Against those stronger than him, he wouldn't even dare to squeak a word at all.

But while they dared not to say a word, Chu Feng wasn't the type to swallow this. So, he turned to Xia Ran and said, "We've already talked things through that day, but are you benign a sore loser here? If that's the case, I'm more than happy to have another go with you so that you'll finally admit your defeat."

"You want to challenge me, Xia Ran? Who do you think you are? An ant like you dare to challenge me?"

As Xia Ran spoke, he released the aura of a rank six Utmost exalted level cultivator. The sheer pressure swiftly enveloped the land, allowing everyone to feel just how powerful he was.

Everyone turned their eyes over to Chu Feng, wanting to see him beg for mercy and make a fool out of himself.

Even Hei Yao and the others from the North Tortoise Hall had such intention in mind too. Despite being supposed on the same front, they rather saw Chu Feng be humiliated here along with them.

Before everyone's eyes, Chu Feng chose not to back down but push ahead. "In my eyes, you aren't even a thing at all. You should be flattered that I'm even challenging you at all."

Those words shocked the crowd.

Putting aside the spectators, even Bi Jingjing, Fang Yunshi, Song Xi, Hei Yao, and Wang Ziyang were stunned. They thought that Chu Feng would back down in the face of Xia Ran's prowess, but who could have thought that he would say such words in public?

More importantly, it didn't look like Chu Feng was just putting up a bravado here. His eyes were filled with disdain, as if Xia Ran didn't mean a thing at all to him!

Chapter 4717: Underhanded Methods

“Hahahahaha!”

The crowd thought that Xia Ran would make a move on Chu Feng for spouting such arrogant words, but the enraged Xia Ran burst into laughter instead. This made everyone perplexed as to what was going on.

“You dared say that I'm not a thing at all? It looks like the god aptitude act you put on there has really inflated your guts!”

Xia Ran began assessing Chu Feng with narrowed eyes.

“What makes you so certain that it was an act?” Chu Feng asked in response.

“Chu Feng, don't say that I'm taking advantage of you. I'll let you take the test once more before all of us. If you're able to trigger the god aptitude once more, I'll apologize to you before everyone else. However, if you aren't able to do it, you'll kneel down to me and admit defeat. Do you dare to do it?” Xia Ran said.

“What do I have to fear?” Chu Feng replied.

“Fine. Come here then.”

Xia Ran took out an evaluation rock and passed it over to Chu Feng.

On the surface, it looked no different from the one Bi Jingjing used that day. However, thinking that Xia Ran might be up to something, Chu Feng chose to examine it carefully, only to find nothing amiss with it.

Since that was the case, he quickly stepped on top of it.

Soon, the evaluation rock before to light up, pouring out white light. But... after the outburst of white light, nothing appeared at all.

“Shit, I got tricked!”

Chu Feng immediately realized that things had gone awry.

While he didn't see anything amiss with the evaluation rock on the surface, he knew that there was no problem with his aptitude. He should have been able to trigger the god aptitude with ease. Since that was the case, it could only mean that there was something wrong with the evaluation rock.

It was likely that someone had thoroughly tampered with it, making it such that even Chu Feng couldn't see the problem with it.

"Hahahaha!"

It was then that mocking laughter sounded amidst the disciples.

The other disciples from the East Dragon Hall, West Tiger Hall, and South Vermilion Hall were already convinced that Chu Feng's real aptitude was at the lowest.

"Look. You're just trash, Chu Feng, a mere lowest aptitude. Who could have thought that you would be so brazen as to resort to despicable means to feign god aptitude? Someone as shameless as you ought to be driven out of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. You aren't worthy to be a disciple like the rest of us!" someone from the East Dragon Hall shouted out mockingly.

What was worth noting was that the voice sounded familiar. Even without turning over to take a look, Chu Feng could tell that it was from Hua Xu.

Tu Yuanyuan was present as well, and she was standing amongst the disciples of the East Dragon Hall. It was just that her current position made it hard for her to step forward to speak up for Chu Feng.

She... simply didn't want to offend the others here.

"Chu Feng, what do you have to say for yourself?" Xia Ran looked at Chu Feng gloatingly.

"I never thought that you would go to the extent of thoroughly tampering with the evaluation rock. Xia Ran, isn't you the despicable one here?" Xia Ran said.

Those words brought disdainful sneers from the crowd. Everyone thought that Chu Feng was unwilling to admit his defeat and trying to force his way through.

“This evaluation rock of mine was indeed tampered with.”

Surprisingly, Xia Ran admitted to it. This confused those who were still laughing at Chu Feng a moment ago.

However, Xia Ran quickly added, “This evaluation rock has been reinforced to guard against despicable means. Only true talents will be able to trigger it appropriately. Weaklings like you will only show as the lowest aptitude before it.”

Xia Ran’s words made Fang Yunshi and the others heave a sigh of relief. As long as they could prove that Chu Feng was of the lowest aptitude, their goal would be achieved.

“Chu Feng, stop talking crap. You’ve already lost here. Kneel down and apologize to Senior Xia! No, you should apologize to all of us from the South Vermilion Hall!” Fang Yunshi pointed at Chu Feng as he bellowed coldly.

He was filled with hatred for Chu Feng, and he would want more than anything to utterly humiliate the latter in public.

“Yes, kneel down and admit your mistake!”

The other disciples also joined in as well. The voices came not just from the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall but those from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall too. Of course, the ones who were shouting the most loudly were still those from the South Vermilion Hall.

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall were all trembling with excitement. Only Bi Jingjing had a conflicted look on her face.

She knew that something was amiss with this matter, but in the end, she still chose to stand with the South Vermilion Hall and not speak up for Chu Feng.

“If I, Chu Feng, have really lost, I’ll admit defeat. However, since you’re using such despicable means to deal with me, you shouldn’t even dream of making me kneel down,” Chu Feng said.

“I knew that someone as underhanded as you wouldn’t admit to your defeat obediently. Since that’s the case, I’ll make you kneel down!”

As Xia Ran spoke, he began exerting his oppressive might on Chu Feng, attempting to make the latter kneel down before him.

“Hold it right there!” an elder’s voice suddenly boomed across the air.

Space began to distort, and a decrepit old man with messy white hair appeared in the sky above. This old man was dressed in the elder robes of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but mysteriously, his clothes were not embroidered with any of the four halls of the sect. In fact, his robe was far more exquisite and extravagant than that of the other nobles.

“Lord Protector?”

The noisy crowd swiftly silenced down after the old man’s entry. They seemed to be fearful of this old man, but at the same time, they were surprised by his appearance too.

“You’re here to train, not to bicker.”

The elder turned his sight toward Xia Ran.

“Lord Protector, it’s not my intention to oppress the other disciples. There’s a reason to it,” Xia Ran hurriedly clasped his fist and explained.

“A reason? What reason do you have? Speak,” the elder asked.

“I can’t stand how Chu Feng used underhanded methods to fool the others. He even wishes to share the great fame of Lord Dugu Lingtian. Lord Protector, you should also be aware that Lord Dugu Lingtian is from our South Vermilion Hall. He’s the symbol of our South Vermilion Hall, the figure that our disciples look up to and respect!

“As a disciple of the South Vermilion Hall, how could I tolerate another man attempting to use Lord Dugu Lingtian’s name to bulk up his reputation?”

Despite Xia Ran’s arrogant personality, he was quite respectful to his elder. This showed just how much he feared the other party.

“Your South Vermilion Hall? Lord Dugu Lingtian belongs to our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, not just your South Vermilion Hall. Are you trying to claim that the South Vermilion Hall is an independent sect on its own?” the elder asked.

“Lord Protector, that’s not what I mean. I’m just...”

Xia Ran still wanted to argue about this, but the elder wasn’t interested to hear what he had to say.

“Listen well. I don’t care how you mess around anywhere else, but at this place, I shan’t stand for anyone acting audaciously.

“The Snowy Heavenly Peak is going to open soon, and you only have ten hours here. If you wish to cultivate, hurry up and enter. Otherwise, scram,” the elder spoke loudly.

As he spoke those words, the sealed spirit formation gate of the Snowy Heavenly Peak began to open.

Chapter 4718: Chief Protector

“Are you still going to watch the commotion? Do you not want to cultivate anymore?”

The elder shot a cold glance at the disciples of the four halls around. Seeing this, all of the disciples hurriedly rushed toward the opened spirit formation gate.

“Chu Feng, I’ll let you off for now, but remember that this isn’t over yet!”

Xia Ran shot a vile glare at Chu Feng before heading into the spirit formation gate.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng also made his way toward the Snowy Heavenly Peak too. While he had offended Xia Ran, he wasn’t one to shy away from trouble. He would still do whatever that had to be done.

Someone like Xia Ran couldn’t hope to derail him from his goal.

“Waa, that protector is so cool. Chu Feng, it seems like he has a high opinion of you, or else he wouldn’t have helped you,” a voice suddenly sounded beside Chu Feng.

It was Tu Yuanyuan.

She was still standing amongst the disciples of the East Dragon Hall despite her voice transmission, but Chu Feng didn't blame her. Given her cultivation, it would indeed be unwise for her to walk too closely to Chu Feng.

Even the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall dared not to speak up for Chu Feng, so how could he blame Tu Yuanyuan from the East Dragon Hall?

"You seem to be acquainted with that elder from earlier on. Who is he?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

Whether it was intentional or not, it was a fact that the elder had helped him out when he was in a spot. Otherwise, Chu Feng would be put in a difficult position against Xia Ran, especially with his locked cultivation.

As such, he felt grateful toward the elder.

"Say, Chu Feng, what in the world are you up to every day? Since you're coming to the Snowy Heavenly Peak, shouldn't you at least look into it a little? Oh well, you're lucky that I'm around. Let me fill you in on the details then.

"The cultivation places in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect don't belong to any of the four halls; they're neutral grounds. For more important cultivation places such as the Heavenly Snowy Peak, the sect would assign powerful elders to look after them. These elders are known as 'protectors', and they only heed the orders of the sectmaster. There are 64 protectors in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect in total, and the person you met earlier is Protector Zhao Yushu.

"However, you should know that Zhao Yushu is no ordinary protector. He's the head of the 64 protectors, rumored to possess strength on par with the Hidden Dragon Elders. You should at least know about the Hidden Dragon Elders, right? They are the ten most powerful elders in the sect, second only to the sectmaster and the vice sectmaster. With that, you should get a rough idea of just how powerful Protector Zhao is," Tu Yuanyuan explained the matter to Chu Feng in detail.

"Hidden Dragon Elder? Yes, I do know about them," Chu Feng replied.

He had met Li Mu and his grandfather prior to entering the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. They were the ones who took Yu Ting away back then. He heard from Yu Ting that Li Mu was one of the Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples whereas Li Mu's grandfather was one of the Ten Hidden Dragon Elders.

Even till now, he could still remember the pressure he had felt from Li Mu's grandfather.

Without a doubt, the Hidden Dragon Elders were truly formidable existences.

With this, Chu Feng could understand why Xia Ran and the other disciples were so humble before Protector Zhao Yushu. It turned out that the latter was really a formidable figure.

"Also, I heard that Protector Zhao is not the type to intervene in the disciples' affairs, which is why Xia Ran dared to provoke you here. It's completely out of his expectations for Protector Zhao to suddenly step in here. My guess is that he has high expectations of you, that's why he chose to help you.

"Chu Feng, you should try to build up a good relationship with Protector Zhao. There's currently a lot of people who don't have a good opinion of you at the moment, but if Protector Zhao is willing to back you up, no one will dare to make things difficult for you," Tu Yuanyuan said.

"Got it. Thanks for your reminder," Chu Feng replied via voice transmission too.

He finally understood why those disciples were so surprised when Protector Zhao intervened earlier. It turned out that the latter didn't usually interfere in the disciples' affairs.

"There's no need to get so courteous with me. Make sure to cultivate well later on. I heard that the record here is maintained by Lord Dugu Lingtian too. If you can break his record here, you'll really be able to make your name known throughout the entire sect. Those disciples of the South Vermilion Hall might be able to temper with the evaluation rock, but they won't be able to tamper with the Snowy Heavenly Peak," Tu Yuanyuan advised.

"You don't think that my god aptitude is an act?" Chu Feng asked.

"How could it be an act? You're the most talented junior in our Holy Light Galaxy, and the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect belongs to the Holy Light Galaxy. I believe that you'll be able to become the strongest Hidden Dragon Disciple and perhaps... surpass Dugu Lingtian even," Tu Yuanyuan said.

"Thanks."

Chu Feng was a little moved to see how Tu Yuanyuan was willing to believe in him despite the current circumstances.

While the two of them were chatting, they passed through the spirit formation gate and arrived into the Snowy Heavenly Peak. However, they realized that they couldn't enter too deep.

As soon as they entered the vicinity of the Snowy Heavenly Peak, Chu Feng felt a powerful force crushing down on him. This force was so great that it prevented them from even flying into the air, restraining everyone's movements.

Weng!

After all of the disciples had entered the spirit formation gate, the earth began to tremor as light surfaced from the ground, forming a formation.

It was a teleportation formation, an extremely powerful and mysterious one at that.

Chu Feng was, once again, impressed by the formidable might shown by the sect founder.

Be it the protective formation outside, the pressure crushing down on them at the moment, or the powerful teleportation formation right beneath their feet, all of these might seem simple at first glance, but they were, in fact, powerful means far beyond Chu Feng's current ability to emulate.

Chu Feng was once again intrigued by the sect founder.

It seemed like the previous Ancestral Martial Galaxy was indeed rather formidable. How could it not be with figures as powerful as the founder of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect around?

"This Snowy Heavenly Peak is a cultivation formation personally set up by the sect founder. I won't bother delving into the details. All you have to know is that the higher you climb, the more you'll benefit out of this. However, what you need to climb high here isn't your martial power but your willpower.

"Those lacking in willpower, if you force yourself to reach where you don't belong, you might implode and die. For that reason, the sect founder set up

this teleportation formation to assess your willpower. It'll send you to the location you belong to based on your respective willpower.

“With this, the trial commences. Remember, you have a total of ten hours in here. All of you better return here before ten hours is up, or else you'll bear with the consequences yourself,” Protector Zhao stood in front of the teleportation formation as he explained the details to the crowd.

As soon as Protector Zhao finished his words, the disciples quickly entered into the teleportation formation. Even Chu Feng was no exception either.

However, as soon as Chu Feng entered the teleportation formation, he quickly crossed his leg and sat down before swiftly vanishing.

“He's trash indeed.”

Watching as Chu Feng's silhouette vanished, Xia Ran, Hua Xu, Fang Yunshi, and many of the other disciples revealed disdainful expressions.

Those who had known about this teleportation formation beforehand knew that this was a trial of willpower. In a test of willpower, the duration one was able to last in the test would determine the results. The fact that Chu Feng was teleported so quickly showed that he was severely lacking in willpower.

Little did they know that Chu Feng was transported to the very tip of the Snowy Heavenly Peak, a place where they could never hope to reach in their lifetime.

Chapter 4719: Regaining Cultivation

“This... is the peak? Is the trial that simple?”

Chu Feng was initially still in a state of disbelief, but after checking around, there was indeed no doubt that he was at the top of the Heavenly Snowy Peak. Where he was standing, a layer of clouds veiled his sight of everything beneath.

Conspicuously, there were also clouds above him, but they weren't white but grey. They were storm clouds.

They gathered densely, seemingly forming a barrier that sealed off the sky. These storm clouds billowed menacingly in the sky, and traces of purple lightning could be seen crackling in their midst.

This was the calamity the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect would face once every decade. The calamity was still looming right before them, yet to be resolved by anyone.

Due to how high the peak was, Chu Feng was unprecedentedly close to the calamity, allowing him to sense just how terrifying it was. However, he didn't spend too long brooding over the calamity.

That wasn't a problem for him to deal with, and he couldn't do anything about it with his current prowess either. Probably the sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was the only one who could resolve this problem.

Chu Feng crossed his legs and sat down. There was some kind of energy looming above the mountain peak. It flowed naturally into Chu Feng's body before gathering in his head, granting him greater alacrity and clarity in thoughts. His intelligence was growing.

At the same time, his physical abilities were being enhanced as well.

Chu Feng felt like he had eaten a forbidden medicine, but the effect was much greater than any forbidden medicine he had seen.

He knew that this was the energy of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

Once again, he was impressed by the means of the sect founder. Most cultivation places he had seen were naturally formed or tapped on natural resources, but the Snowy Heavenly Peak was entirely manmade. To put it in simpler terms, the sect founder had constructed this place from scratch.

Knowing that this was a good opportunity, he quickly tried to channel this energy to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

There were too many people eyeing him at the moment, and he knew that Xia Ran was just a minor figure amongst them. In the future, as his reputation grew bigger, there would be more people who would step out to suppress him out of fear of being surpassed. Some might even attempt to assassinate him.

All sorts of schemes would come his way.

What Chu Feng needed to do wasn't just to recover his cultivation but to raise it. He had to grow strong in order to be able to protect himself. If he couldn't even stand his ground here, how could he possibly free Zi Ling from her restraints?

It was fortunate that Chu Feng was blessed by luck, for the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor which he had been at a loss with all this while suddenly grew much easier to decipher.

In just a short six hours, he managed to decipher the First Essence, Second Essence, Third Essence, and Earth Soul, which, in turn, allowed his cultivation to recover from rank two Utmost Exalted level to rank six Utmost Exalted level.

With this, Chu Feng had finally recovered his cultivation.

To his disappointment, he was still unable to open the Spirit World Space, but at the very least, he had returned back to his starting point.

While he was only at rank six Utmost Exalted level at the moment, with the Lightning Mark, Lightning Armor, and Four Symbols Divine Power, he would be able to deal with even a rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator with ease.

One must know that it was with his current cultivation level that he managed to become the strongest junior of the Holy Light Galaxy!

However, Chu Feng wasn't contented with just this much. His goal was much higher than this. He wanted to use the power of the Snowy Heavenly Peak to overcome the Fourth Essence too.

If unlocking the Fourth Essence raised his cultivation to rank seven Utmost Exalted level, it should be safe to assume that his cultivation would be at rank two Martial Exalted level once he fully unlocked the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

Martial Exalted level felt like a distant thing to Chu Feng in the past, but for the first time, it felt like it was within reach.

Following that, Chu Feng tried time and time again to unlock the Fourth Essence for over two hours, but unfortunately, he found himself stuck once

more. Even with the energy of the Snowy Heavenly Peak assisting him, it seemed like the Earth Soul was his limit at the moment.

That being said, he was still fairly contented with what he got out of this trip. While he had only returned back to his original cultivation level, it should be enough for him to deal with most of the people picking on him at the moment.

Even the likes of Xia Ran was no more than trash in Chu Feng's eyes now.

“What's that?”

After Chu Feng finally turned his attention away from the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, he began looking around once more, and to his surprise, he noticed that there was something else that wasn't there at the start.

A stone pedestal had appeared not too far away from him, and there was a token placed on top of it.

It was a token belonging to the South Vermilion Hall, and the name 'Dugu Lingtian' was inscribed on it.

“Lord Dugu Lingtian?”

Chu Feng realized that there was something more to this, so he quickly rushed over to the stone pedestal.

Weng!

But right as Chu Feng came close, a burst of light suddenly shot from the stone pedestal into the sky, forming a series of words: Change the name token, leave your name in the annals of history!!

“Change the name token, leave your name in the annals of history? Does this mean that... I've broken Lord Dugu Lingtian's record?”

Chu Feng was a little hesitant about whether to change the name token or not. If he made his name known here, he would surely make more enemies here. More people would try to trample him down before he grew up. His enemies wouldn't just be Hua Xu, Fang Yunshi, and Xia Ran anymore but the more powerful Hidden Dragon Disciples.

However, it didn't take him long to make up his mind. He took out his token as a disciple of the North Tortoise Hall and inscribed his name on the token.

He decided to make his name known here. Despite knowing that it would draw him ill-will from others, he still chose to do this. He wanted to make his name known throughout the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect in the shortest time possible.

He wasn't just intending on becoming the strongest disciple here. What he wanted was the acknowledgment of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster. Only with the acknowledgment of the sectmaster could he return Zi Ling's freedom to her.

He took away the Dugu Lingtian's token and replaced it with his own.

Weng!

As soon as the North Tortoise Hall's token was placed on it, the light shot out from the stone token amalgamated together in the sky before morphing into a crystal token that floated toward Chu Feng.

It was a token that looked similar to the one Chu Feng placed on the stone pedestal, just that the North Tortoise Hall's token was made out of gold whereas this token manifested from the light was made out of crystal. It was transparent and beautiful, and it shimmered with a faint glow.

It was not just divine, but it shared an identical aura to the Snowy Heavenly Peak too.

"It should be over now, right?"

Chu Feng grabbed the crystal token and held it tightly in his hand.

Weng!

The next moment, as if he had opened the Heaven's Eye, the map of the Snowy Heavenly Peak suddenly unfurled before him. He could see where everyone was on the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

Song Xi, Hei Yao, Wang Ziyang, and the other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall were at the lower half of the Snowy Heavenly Peak. They were accompanied with Fang Yunshi and the other disciples from the South Vermilion Hall, East Dragon Hall, and West Tiger Hall.

At this very moment, Fang Yunshi was cooperating with another rank four Utmost Exalted level cultivator to attack Song Xi. Under their coordinated assault, Song Xi suffered severe injuries and was barely hanging on.

Despite so, Fang Yunshi and the other disciple had no intention of letting him go.

“Those scoundrels.”

Chu Feng immediately stood up and leaped down from the peak.

Even if Song Xi had turned his back on him, Chu Feng didn't want to leave him to the lurch. No matter what, they still used to be brothers.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4720: Chu Feng Enters - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4720: Chu Feng Enters

Chapter 4720: Chu Feng Enters

When Chu Feng noticed that Song Xi was in danger, he quickly rushed down to save him. He left in such a hurry that he didn't realize that behind the stone pedestal, there was an indentation that was used to carve one's name in.

The name 'Dugu Lingtian' still remained there.

...

Chu Feng's view of the Snowy Heavenly Peak only lasted for a brief moment before vanishing. As a result, despite leaping all the way down to the bottom, he wasn't able to ascertain where Song Xi was right away. He could only search around the area.

...

While Chu Feng was searching for Song Xi, the latter was already floored by the two disciples from the South Vermilion Hall. Fang Yunshi pressed his legs down on Song Xi's face to humiliate him publicly.

“Song Xi, the likes of you dare to compete with me? Hand over the Icydew Crystal!”

After Fang Yunshi, Song Xi, and the others cultivated for a while in the region, the reward appeared. It was an Icydew Crystal.

Harnessing the power of the world, it was beneficial to the advancement of one's cultivation, though it wasn't of much use to cultivators of their level.

However, there was only one Icydew Crystal, and only the person who had shown the greatest willpower in the area would be able to obtain it. In a sense, it was a mark of honor, and it appeared right before Song Xi.

Naturally, Fang Yunshi was unwilling to let things rest like that and attempted to snatch it over. Song Xi also didn't back down, choosing to fight back. A fight ensued.

Initially, it was a 1-on-1, and Song Xi was still able to hold his ground against Fang Yunshi. Unfortunately, there was another rank four Utmost Exalted level cultivator from the South Vermilion Hall in the area, and upon seeing that Fang Yunshi was unable to deal with Song Xi alone, he chose to make a move as well.

To make things worse, he launched a surprise assault on Song Xi.

Song Xi didn't expect to be assaulted from the back and ended up sustaining severe injuries. As a result, he quickly fell into a disadvantageous position.

In truth, there were disciples from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall present too, but they were happy to watch the commotion, so they didn't bother to step in and intervene.

Seeing that Song Xi was in a bad position, Wang Ziyang tried to persuade him to step down, "Senior Song, just give it to them. It's just an Icydew Crystal."

"The Icydew Crystal chose me. It's mine! It's against the sect rules to snatch my item. I'll definitely inform Lord Protector of the matter later on!" Song Xi glared at the two disciples from the South Vermilion Hall coldly, refusing to yield at all.

"You'll inform Lord Protector of the matter? Hah, won't you need a witness for that? Who here would be willing to testify for you?" Fang Yunshi said as he glanced at the surrounding crowd.

“Don’t involve us in this. We’re concentrated on cultivating and saw nothing at all.”

“Indeed, go on and do whatever you need to.”

Those from the East Dragon Hall and West Dragon Hall said with a chuckle.

They weren’t afraid of Fang Yunshi, but they simply wanted to avoid the hassle from intervening. And in truth, Fang Yunshi had expected things to turn out like this.

The disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect knew not of justice anyway.

Besides, these people knew that Fang Yunshi was backed by Bi Jingjing and Xia Ran, so no one in their right mind would choose Song Xi, a disciple from the North Tortoise Hall, over him.

Since no one was intervening in this issue, the only ones Song Xi could count on were his fellow disciples from the North Tortoise Hall.

“Wang Ziyang, Hei Yao, are you going to testify for him?”

Fang Yunshi looked at the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall as he asked.

Song Xi also turned his gaze over.

Wang Ziyang and Hei Yao avoided Song Xi’s gaze, refusing to say a word at all.

However, Fang Yunshi raised his voice menacingly and bellowed, “I’m asking you a question here! Are you mute?”

“We dare not to, Senior Fang! We saw nothing at all!” Wang Ziyang hurriedly shook her head.

The other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall followed her lead too.

“Senior Fang, it’s Song Xi who snatched your Icydew Crystal. You were simply taking back what you deserve!”

Hei Yao also quickly expressed his stance, but that he went a step further. He actually chose to lie and side with Fang Yunshi, but his actions delighted Fang Yunshi greatly.

“Indeed. It looks like Junior Hei is the wise one here,” Fang Yunshi said as he nodded his head in contentment.

Then, he put his hands into Song Xi’s robe and snatched the Icydew Crystal over. This time, Song Xi didn’t fight back. He had already given up on it.

He felt greatly despaired. He thought that there would at least be some people whom he could count on when he was in danger, but all of them actually shied out away out of fear of being implicated.

Shoosh!

However, barely after Fang Yunshi grabbed hold of the Icydew Crystal was taken by Fang Yunshi, it suddenly floated out of his grasp and flew into another person’s hand.

“Chu Feng?”

Everyone was stunned to see him.

After the commotion Xia Ran caused earlier, everyone cultivated here could recognize him.

“Isn’t Chu Feng of the lowest aptitude? How is he able to get here?”

A huge commotion broke out amidst the crowd.

As Chu Feng was the first to be teleported away, everyone simply assumed that he had been brought to the lowest level of the Snowy Heavenly Peak. Based on the rules here, one would be teleported to the level of his limits, which meant that it should have been impossible for Chu Feng to reach here.

However, what they didn’t know was that Chu Feng had already been here for a while, just that he didn’t rush to show himself.

“Stealing the possessions of your fellow peers in broad daylight; Fang Yunshi, you sure are audacious,” Chu Feng said as he fiddled with the Icydew Crystal in his hand.

“In terms of audacity, there should be no one who can surpass you, no? I was intending on heading down to look for you afterward, but you came knocking on your own accord instead. Very well, I’ll let you have a taste of my fist then!”

Shoosh!

Fang Yunshi took a step forward, and his body suddenly blurred into a flash of light, rushing toward Chu Feng as fast as lightning.

“Chu Feng!!”

Seeing that Fang Yunshi had turned his target to Chu Feng, Song Xi immediately panicked. He tried to get up to help him.

Uwaaa!

But before he could rise up, he was stomped back down to the ground by a foot. It was the other rank four Utmost Exalted level cultivator from the South Vermilion Hall.

Gah!

But soon after, a cry of agony sounded.

The crowd turned their eyes over, only to be shocked to learn that the voice had come from Fang Yunshi!

Chapter 4721: Song Xi Breaking Out in Tears

Fang Yunshi was currently lying on the ground beneath Chu Feng’s feet. His cheeks were swollen, his nose was broken, and his teeth were scattered all over the ground.

His state was as tragic as his wails were!

From the looks of it, he hadn’t just been knocked to the floor. He had obviously suffered several good punches to the face too.

Just what in the world happened in such a short period of time? Why would the rank four Utmost Exalted level Fang Yunshi be so helpless before Chu Feng?

Wasn’t Chu Feng supposed to be only at rank one Utmost Exalted level?

Boom!

While everyone was struggling to comprehend what was going on, an oppressive might suddenly crushed down on the surroundings, jolting the disciple from the South Vermilion Hall off Song Xi's back. It was such a powerful strike that the latter knocked onto the cliff face and fainted.

As for the others, they shuddered fearfully as cold sweat trickled down their backs.

They could sense that Chu Feng's aura wasn't at rank one Utmost Exalted level but rank six!

"Rank six Utmost Exalted level! Chu Feng, you..."

Putting aside the others, even Song Xi was stunned by the oppressive might Chu Feng was emanating. However, Chu Feng was in no mood to bother about Song Xi. Instead, he turned his gaze toward Hei Yao.

"Hei Yao, are you still a disciple of the North Tortoise Hall? It's one thing for you not to help your own peer, but you even sided with others to frame your own people?"

Chu Feng exerted his oppressive might and crushed Hei Yao down onto the floor. It was a powerful strike that sent spurts of blood gushing out from Hei Yao's mouth.

"Junior Chu Feng, please let me off! I had no choice! Fang Yunshi has Senior Xia Ran behind his back, and we can't possibly hope to defeat them. I'm just trying to protect myself here!" Hei Yao pleaded desperately with tears streaming down his cheeks.

"Song Xi, how do you want to deal with him?" Chu Feng turned to Song Xi and asked.

Song Xi shot a glance at Hei Yao before saying, "Let him go."

"Fine."

Chu Feng released the oppressive might crushing down on Hei Yao.

"Thank you, Junior Chu Feng! Thank you, Junior Chu Feng!"

Hei Yao quickly rushed to his feet and thanked Chu Feng. This was simply how people without pride were. Previously when Chu Feng accorded him

respect, he chose to make things difficult for him at every turn. Yet, now that he was finally getting beaten up, he ended up thanking Chu Feng instead.

This was simply how most people were like, fearing the strong and oppressing the weak. Chu Feng had seen far too many people like Hei Yao.

He turned his gaze away from Hei Yao to eye at the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall coldly as he questioned, “Who else made a move on the disciples of our North Tortoise Hall earlier?”

“We didn’t, we didn’t! None of us made a move earlier!”

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall shook their heads vehemently, and some of their voices were quivering out of fear.

“I, Chu Feng, am not a person to implicate others. If none of you made a move, I won’t make things difficult for you. However, I want you to remember that I won’t allow you to bully anyone in the North Tortoise Hall from this day onward. If I were to learn that any one of them has been unfairly treated...”

n.)O.-V-/e.(l(/b//1-/n

Chu Feng raised his leg and stomped down hard on Fang Yunshi’s back twice. Every strike, Fang Yunshi would cry out wretchedly as a ‘kacha’ sound echoed loudly, signaling the fracturing of Fang Yunshi’s arm and leg.

Chu Feng pointed at Fang Yunshi as he continued, “... this is how you’ll end up.”

“We dare not to!”

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall hurriedly shook their heads. Even those from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall felt chills down their spines just by looking at this sight, and they hurriedly backed away out of fear.

Some of the timider ones even fled the area, fearing that they would be implicated.

Even though they were from the East Dragon Hall and West Dragon Hall, their cultivation levels weren’t too high. Most of them weren’t on par with Song Xi and Fang Yunshi here. Given their lacking strength, it was only normal for them to fear Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, after saying his piece, he raised his head to look at the peak above and said, "Looks like I can't head back anymore."

He could feel the pressure crushing down from the area where he had come down from earlier. It would appear that one could only head down from the peak, not up. In other words, wherever the teleportation formation had teleported one to was the highest altitude one could reach here.

"I'm sorry, Chu Feng..." Song Xi suddenly said with a tearful voice.

Chu Feng turned his head over, only to see Song Xi kneeling on the floor in front of him. The spectating crowd was confused to see this scene.

The fact that Chu Feng had stepped forward for Song Xi's sake showed that they were on good terms with one another, but why would Song Xi still kneel to him?

However, Chu Feng knew the reason behind his action.

"There's no need for this. Get up. If I really held a grudge against you, I wouldn't have helped you in the first place," Chu Feng said as he pulled Song Xi up with his strength.

However, Song Xi quickly fell back down to his kneeling position right after. He cried even more in agitation as his lower jaws trembled uncontrollably. Tears and snot were dripping from his face.

"Chu Feng, trust me. I know how well you have treated me. I've always remembered your gratitude, never daring to forget it. But... I just didn't want to admit it. I didn't want to admit that you're stronger than me. I thought that I've already surpassed you, but I was wrong. I really am.

"In truth, I've always viewed you as my role model. I wanted to become someone like you, being able to care for those weaker than me when I have the ability to. I want to become someone who trustworthy and reliable to my friends, a hero to those in need. But it's simply too difficult. When a person rises to a certain position, all the hypocriticism starts to show through. It's too difficult to remember my origins under the compliments and praises showered upon me. It becomes so hard to discern what's real and what's false.

"However, even if it could all be false, I still want to hold on to it. I don't want to lose the feeling of being hailed and respected by everyone else. I was afraid

that your arrival would bring about my downfall in the North Tortoise Hall. I was afraid that I would turn back into the man looked down on by everyone else. I was afraid that I would lose everything!

“So, greed got the better of me. I did something I should have never done. I did something that’s unforgivable. You are my benefactor, and I should have done everything I could to return your favor. Yet, I turned my back against you instead.

“I’m sorry, Chu Feng. I shrugged off your goodwill and betrayed you. I’m really a scoundrel, an ingrate!”

Song Xi began kowtowing to Chu Feng, striking his head against the ground so hard that his forehead started to bleed.

Chapter 4722: Xia Ran’s Backing

Chapter 4722: Xia Ran’s Backing

Chu Feng didn’t stop Song Xi right away despite his self-harm. Instead, he waited for a while before he finally spoke up, “Enough, let’s not have others watch this show. Isn’t it embarrassing? Come, get up.”

He walked to Song Xi and helped the latter up.

“Chu Feng, hit me. I’ll feel better if you beat me up,” Song Xi sniffed.

“There’s no need for that. I’ve arrived ahead of time, but I didn’t make a move because I wanted you to see the true colors of those around you,” Chu Feng replied.

“I deserved it! I’m not worthy of being your brother.”

Despite hearing that, Song Xi didn’t blame Chu Feng. Instead, he hung his head in shame.

“I knew from the start that you had changed the slots. However, if I really blamed you, I wouldn’t have saved you. It’s out of consideration of your mother that I wanted to give you another chance. But only this once. If it happens again, I won’t be able to acknowledge you as my brother anymore,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you actually knew right from the start... I... I’ve really done you wrong! Uwuuu ahhhh!”

Knowing that Chu Feng had known from the start, Song Xi began crying even harder.

“Enough. You’re still Senior Song of the North Tortoise Hall. Don’t you find it embarrassing?”

Chu Feng patted Song Xi’s shoulders.

“I don’t want to be Senior Song anymore. It’s too tiring... I’d rather be your little brother... I don’t think I’m suited to become a hero. I don’t have the ability to do that...”

Song Xi had already completely given up on his own reputation, crying without a care in the world. He wiped his tears and snot on his sleeves tearfully.

This sight stunned the spectating crowd, especially those from the South Vermilion Hall.

They had known Song Xi since a while ago, and they thought that Chu Feng was just a newcomer in the North Tortoise Hall. However, from the looks of it, it appeared that there was more to their relationship.

Weng!

All of a sudden, light burst forth from the very bottom of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

“What happened?”

Everyone’s attention was drawn to the light. It was coming from the bottommost surface of the peak, where the teleportation formation was.

However, the light was a little different from when the teleportation formation brought them to their respective places earlier. It was still surfacing from the underground, yet to take any shape.

The crowd was confused as to what was going on.

Shoosh!

Shoosh!

Shoosh!

While everyone was still observing the situation, several silhouettes flitted down from the top of the peak toward the surface. Amongst them were Xia Ran, Bi Jingjing, and the top disciples of the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall too.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

More and more people flitted down from the Snowy heavenly Peak to gather around the light so as to examine it close-up even though the cultivation time wasn't up yet...

“Could this be the legendary Snowdomain Divine Palace? The Snowdomain Divine Palace that only appears once every millennium is appearing in advance?”

A disciple from the South Vermilion Hall exclaimed in astonishment before quickly heading down. The others quickly followed suit too.

Even Fang Yunshi, despite his severe injuries, stumbled his way down.

“What's the Snowdomain Divine Palace?” Chu Feng turned to Song Xi and asked.

“Ah?”

Song Xi was too immersed in his guilt and sorrow that he hadn't noticed the happenings below, so he was confused for a moment by Chu Feng's question.

“Stop crying and look below you,” Chu Feng gestured to the bottom of the peak as he said.

“What's that?”

Song Xi looked confused too.

“Junior Chu Feng... Ah no, I mean Chu Feng, I know what the Snowdomain Divine Palace is.”

A disciple of the North Tortoise Hall stepped forward and said. His name was Ma Yu, a rank two Utmost Exalted level cultivator. He was one of the more outstanding disciples of the North Tortoise Hall.

Even though his cultivation wasn't particularly strong, the fact that he was able to reach this place showed that he had decent willpower.

While he hadn't stepped forward to help Song Xi while the latter was getting beaten up earlier, Chu Feng didn't blame him for it. Instead, he urged, "Tell me about it."

Without any hesitation, Ma Yu quickly filled Chu Feng in on the details.

The Snowdomain Divine Palace was also a part of the Snowy Heavenly Peak too, but it only appeared once every thousand years. The Snowdomain Divine Palace harnessed an even greater power that could greatly raise a person's intelligence within a short period of time, and there were no requirements at all, which was to say that everyone could enter its midst.

It was just that the Snowdomain Divine Palace only appeared once every thousand years, so it was queer for it to make an appearance now.

Thus, Ma Yu couldn't tell for sure whether the phenomenon hinted at the imminent appearance of the Snowdomain Divine Palace or not. n--0--v).e(-l- /&/.l(-n

"Let's go and watch the commotion," Chu Feng said as he prepared to leap downward.

"Chu Feng, it's best that we don't go."

But before Chu Feng could make a move, Song Xi suddenly grasped Chu Feng's sleeves and stopped him.

"What's wrong?" Chu Feng asked.

"Look, Xia Ran is down there down. Fang Yunshi has already headed down, so it's likely that he's telling Xia Ran about the earlier incident."

Song Xi was right. Not only had Fang Yunshi headed down, the rank four Utmost Exalted level cultivator whom Chu Feng had knocked out with his

oppressive might earlier had also headed down under the support of another disciple.

Fang Yunshi was currently standing by Xia Ran's side, whispering something to him. Xia Ran raised his head and shot a ferocious glare at Chu Feng and the others.

Without a doubt, he already knew about the earlier incident.

"Don't worry, Xia Ran can't pose a threat to me," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, Xia Ran isn't as simple as he seems. He's Xia Yan's godbrother. It's also due to Xia Yan's backing that no one dares to offend him," Song Xi said.

"Who's Xia Yan?" Chu Feng asked.

Based on Song Xi's tone, it could be seen that Xia Yan was no ordinary disciple of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

"Xia Yan is one of the Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples. She's extremely powerful, ranked in the fourth place amongst the Hidden Dragon Disciples. She's a rank one Martial Exalted level cultivator, and her spirit power is very powerful too. Rumor has it that she has already reached rank four Dragon Transformation Sensation, making her the most talented junior world spiritist in our sect.

"Putting aside her strength, her background is formidable too. Her father is one of the Hidden Dragon Elders, Lord Xia Zhicheng. Her grandfather is the head of the Law Enforcement Hall, and her father is its vice head," Song Xi explained.

"Oh? It's no wonder why he dares to act so arrogantly."

Chu Feng also came to realize that Xia Yan was quite a formidable figure. That would explain why Xia Ran was so feared despite being only at rank six Utmost Exalted level.

However, despite learning of all this, Chu Feng still leaped his down the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

"Chu Feng!"

Song Xi was alarmed to see that, but he quickly followed Chu Feng and headed down too.

Chapter 4723: Teaching Chu Feng a Lesson

“Chu Feng, you still dare to come down after what you did!”

Xia Ran had been staring intently at Chu Feng, and he saw the latter leaping down from the peak with his own eyes. Surprisingly, he didn't make a move on Chu Feng right away but emanated his oppressive might instead.

Seeing this sight, the crowd quickly turned their gazes upon the two of them once more, interested to see what would happen. They knew that they could enjoy yet another drama.

It would take some time for the light to finish forming, so they needed to wait anyway. Any entertainment was more than welcomed now.

Bi Jingjing walked over to Xia Ran's side and said, “Senior Xia, there could be some misunderstanding. Let's clarify things first.”

“Junior Bi, you've heard what Fang Yunshi said earlier. What misunderstanding could there be? Are you saying that the words from the disciples of our South Vermilion Hall are untrustworthy?” Xia Ran asked.

Even though Xia Ran was domineering, he had always been quite polite to Bi Jingjing. In fact, had it been anyone else who asked him that question, he would have resorted to his fists right away. He wouldn't have bothered explaining at all.

“Chu Feng, what's going on. Why did you beat up our disciples?”

Unwilling to give up, she took the initiative to question Chu Feng instead. She really didn't want to see the two of them making enemies out of one another.

“Senior Bi, the situation is very straightforward. Fang Yunshi and the other disciple from your South Vermilion Sect stole an item from our North Tortoise Sect's Song Xi and injured him. Since they were the ones who first violated the rules of our sect, isn't it normal for me to return the favor? Besides, I've already gone easy on them. Had it been anyone else, they wouldn't have been able to live to tell the tale,” Chu Feng replied.

“Are you saying that you would have killed us? Hah, what arrogant words!” Fang Yunshi bellowed at Chu Feng angrily.

Now that he was standing beside Xia Ran, he was able to find his confidence once more.

“Fang Yunshi, tell me the truth. Were you the one who stole Song Xi’s item first?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“I didn’t! It’s Song Xi who stole my item. If you don’t believe me, you can ask the others. They can testify for me!” Fang Yunshi said.

Following that, some people actually stepped forward to speak on Fang Yunshi’s behalf. They weren’t just limited to the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall; some from the East Dragon Hall and West Dragon Hall spoke up too.

Given the circumstances, even if Bi Jingjing wanted to help Chu Feng, there was very little she could do.

“Chu Feng, do you see that? Fang Yunshi has eye-witnesses here!” Xia Ran looked at Chu Feng gleefully as he said.

He could tell that these people were lying, but that wasn’t important. This was what he wanted anyway. The more wronged Chu Feng was, the more delighted he would be. He wanted to suppress the latter with his influence.

“I can testify for Chu Feng!”

Song Xi suddenly spoke up then.

However, no one else stepped forward to say a word other than him. In fact, Wang Ziyang, Hei Yao, and Ma Yu, who explained about the Snowdomain Divine Palace to him earlier, were still up at the peak. They didn’t even dare to come down, let alone testify for Chu Feng.

“Pui! The two of you are on the same side, so who would believe your testimony?” Xia Ran scoffed in disdain.

The others also started jeering at Chu Feng and Song Xi.

In the blink of an eye, Chu Feng and Song Xi had been completely isolated from the crowd.

Song Xi was a little panicked. They were already lacking in terms of strength and background, and if they couldn't claim the legitimacy here too, things could really turn out bad. Fear could be seen on his face.

One must know that they weren't just dealing Fang Yunshi here, but Xia Ran and those from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall too. There were some disciples in the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall who were stronger than Xia Ran, but they chose to stand with Xia Ran. How could he not panic in such a situation?

"Don't worry, I'm here."

Sensing Song Xi's fear, Chu Feng patted his shoulder with a smile. Seeing how confident Chu Feng was, Song Xi suddenly recalled the things they had gone through back at the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

He was incredibly weak back then, and it was Chu Feng who kept protecting him. Chu Feng was his idol, a person whom he looked up to and sought to become.

Those forgotten feelings were suddenly returning to him once more, leaving him feeling a little nostalgic.

"Lord Protector, the truth is already out. I ask of you to redress our grievances!" Xia Ran shouted loudly.

As it turned out, the reason why he hadn't made a move on Chu Feng thus far was because he feared Protector Zhao. However, it appeared that the protector was present at the moment, as evidence by how the other party didn't appear when Xia Ran called out for him.

"Lord Protector, the disciples of our South Vermilion Hall have been beaten up for no reason. I can't just turn a blind eye to that. If you can't make a move on our behalf, we can only exact justice on our own accord. I ask you not to blame us for that!"

Xia Ran seemed to be really fearful of the protector. He first clasped his fist toward his surroundings as a sign of respect before finally directing a cold glare at Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, it's too late even if you kneel down and admit your mistakes right now. I'll make you pay the price for your folly!"

Right after those words were spoken, he directed his oppressive might toward Chu Feng, stirring great winds that sent the disciples in the vicinity backing away. However, before his oppressive might could come close to Chu Feng, it suddenly dissipated without a trace.

It was as if a river had fallen into a sea far greater than itself, unable to stir any significant ripples at all.

It was a bewildering situation that confused the spectators and even Xia Ran himself. He was worried that the protector had made a move once more to guard Chu Feng.

Boom!

But in the next moment, a powerful oppressive might suddenly burst out from Chu Feng, pushing away all of the disciples around Chu Feng except for Song Xi.

It was the oppressive might of a rank six Utmost Exalted level.

“Rank six Utmost Exalted level? Chu Feng, you...”

Sensing Chu Feng’s cultivation, Bi Jingjing widened her mouth in shock. Even Xia Ran was stunned as well.

Wasn’t Chu Feng supposed to be at rank one Utmost Exalted level? How could he command the strength of a rank six then?

“Why are you so surprised? I’ve already revealed my cultivation on top earlier on. Ah, I guess Fang Yunshi’s mouth is so filled with lies that he didn’t bother telling you my current cultivation level. Oh well, I guess that’s to be expected. If he had told the truth, you wouldn’t have foolishly stepped forward for his sake.

“Isn’t that so, Fang Yunshi?”

Chu Feng specially turned his gaze toward Fang Yunshi as he said those words.

Under Chu Feng’s gaze, Fang Yunshi’s complexion turned pale.

“Senior Xia, I didn’t intend to hide it from you. I just... wasn’t able to say it in time,” he hurriedly explained.

It just so happened that Xia Ran turned to look at him at the same moment too, just that his eyes were freezingly cold, leaving Fang Yunshi gulping in fear.

Xia Ran was indeed angered, but he chose to leave this grudge for later on. He knew that the South Vermilion Hall should remain united, at least in the face of outsiders.

“Rank six Utmost Exalted level. It’s no wonder why you dare to act so arrogantly. It turns out that you had something to fall back on. But did you just say that I wouldn’t dare to make a move on you? Hahaha! I really have to put you back in your place then!”

Xia Ran pointed a finger at Chu Feng.

Boom!

A concentrated burst of martial power gushed forth in the form of a spiraling hurricane. It swiftly morphed into countless golden spears before raining down on Chu Feng.

This was an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill. Even though it was just a rank one Exalted Taboo, its prowess was far greater than that of ordinary martial skills.

This showed just how much Xia Ran hated Chu Feng, or else he wouldn’t have resorted to such a vicious move right from the start.

Chapter 4724: Snowdomain Divine Palace?

Boom boom boom boom boom!

In the blink of an eye, the Exalted Taboo had already bombarded down on Chu Feng. However, to everyone’s shock, when the dust finally scattered, Chu Feng was actually unharmed!

The countless golden spears were stopped by a spherical manifestation of martial power right in front of Chu Feng.

Some of the golden spears had pierced through the spherical barrier, but they weren’t able to penetrate it fully. They were stuck in the middle of it.

“Martial power barrier. He actually blocked an Exalted Taboo Martial Skill with just a martial power barrier?”

Shocked exclamations sounded as everyone looked at Chu Feng in a different light.

Martial power barrier was definitely not an advanced skill, which was why it was surprising that Chu Feng could fend against Xia Ran’s attack with just this much.

“What’s that?” Xia Ran asked.

“Looks like there’s something wrong with your eyes. Everyone else could tell that it’s a martial power barrier, but only you have difficulties recognizing it for what it is,” Chu Feng replied with a sneer.

“Ridiculous! How could a martial power barrier possibly stand against my rank one Exalted Taboo?”

Xia Ran refused to believe it.

“Usually, that would be the case. Unless there’s a vast difference between the strength of the two cultivators. It’s similar to how a rat can hurt another rat with its bite, but do you think that a rat biting down on an elephant can cause it any harm?” Chu Feng asked.

“Are you saying that I’m a rat? You twat! I’ll let you know who is the rat here!”

Xia Ran launched yet another wave of offense toward Chu Feng.

Boom boom boom boom boom!

A series of explosions and shockwaves gushed into the surroundings.

The techniques Xia Ran used gradually grew stronger, throwing out rank two Exalted Taboo, rank three Exalted Taboo, rank four Exalted Taboo... Eventually, Chu Feng’s martial power barrier was no longer able to block Xia Ran’s attacks anymore.

But even so, he was able to stop Xia Ran’s rank four Exalted Taboo with just a rank one Exalted Taboo of his own. Two techniques of clearly different levels were actually able to nullify one another, amazing the crowd.

Xia Ran felt humiliated, for this was indeed showed the difference in their fighting prowess extremely clearly.

“How dare you look down on me, Xia Ran? I’ll let you know the difference between us!”

Unwilling to give up, Xia Ran popped a golden pill into his mouth.

Gahhh!

With a ferocious roar, golden clouds started forming above him. Soon, his body began glowing with a golden luster too. His cultivation rose up to rank seven Utmost Exalted level.

“Is that a Divine Power? To think that you’d require a pill in order to activate it. Haa, how disappointing. You are a waste of my time. Let’s end it here,” Chu Feng said.

“What’s that fellow saying? Is he going to admit defeat?”

The crowd found it hard to understand what Chu Feng was saying, for it didn’t look like he was going to admit defeat. However, if Chu Feng really wanted to put up a fight against Xia Ran, he would have to raise his cultivation by a rank too.

If he could do so, it would really awe everyone. After all, Chu Feng was a new disciple who had just joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. The sect had never had such a powerful newcomer before.

Tzlala!

While everyone was still deep in thought, a strike of lightning flashed between Chu Feng and Xia Ran. When the lightning finally vanished, the crowd gasped in horror.

Chu Feng had already arrived right in front of Xia Ran, and he was clutching onto Xia Ran’s throat with a single hand. Despite Xia Ran’s earlier arrogance, he was being lifted up by Chu Feng with a single hand, as if a helpless chick in the hand of a butcher.

Chu Feng’s cultivation had also risen to rank seven Utmost Exalted level too!

More importantly, the Lightning Mark on Chu Feng's forehead was no ordinary Lightning Mark but a 'Divine' character Lightning Mark!

"That's the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique! He actually cultivated the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique!"

"Just what is his background?"

"He must be quite a figure in the Holy Light Galaxy, right?"

Even the disciples of the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall couldn't help but remark in awe. Hua Xu, who had been watching the scene all this while, had a conflicted look on his face.

"Junior Tu, why is Chu Feng so formidable? Is he really a junior of our Holy Light Galaxy?" Hua Xu walked over to Tu Yuanyuan's side and whispered softly.

"You've been in seclusion for too long that you don't know about the recent affairs of the Holy Light Galaxy. Chu Feng not only has an incredible background, but his talent is also top-notch too. I'll tell you about it, but don't tell anyone else.

"In truth, Chu Feng is the strongest junior of the Holy Light Galaxy at the moment," Tu Yuanyuan said.

"The strongest junior?"

Hua Xu knew that Chu Feng was no ordinary figure, but he found it hard to believe that Chu Feng was really the strongest junior.

"Why else do you think I'd be so agitated to see him that day? It's only in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect that we're able to meet him so easily. Had it been the Holy Light Galaxy instead, he definitely isn't someone whom we can come into contact with," Tu Yuanyuan said.

"But..."

Hua Xu still found it all hard to accept.

“I know what you want to say, but Chu Feng hasn’t exerted his full strength yet. This isn’t all he has. Hua Xu, we’re both disciples of the East Dragon Hall, so allow me to give you some words of advice.

“Find an opportunity to apologize to Chu Feng. He isn’t someone whom you want to make an enemy of,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

Hua Xu fell silent afterward, but he continued looking at Chu Feng with a conflicted look in his eyes.

Looking at the expression on Hua Xu’s face, Tu Yuanyuan’s lips curled up into a gleeful smile. She intentionally told Hua Xu all of this because she knew that he had a formidable elder in the East Dragon Hall. If Hua Xu could back down here, it would indubitably be a good thing for Chu Feng.

After all, he was still in a vulnerable position in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at the moment.

“You bastard, let go of me! I dare you to let go and have a proper fight with me! All you know is to resort to despicable means!”

Xia Ran tried his best to struggle free of Chu Feng’s grasp, but the more he did so, the more ridiculous he looked. Chu Feng’s grasp simply wasn’t budging at all.

Once again, the contrast between them was made apparent.

The reason why Xia Ran was completely helpless at the moment was because Chu Feng had poured his martial power into Xia Ran’s body to seal off his strength, rendering the latter unable to use any martial skills.

With the vast difference in their strength, there was no way Xia Ran could deal with Chu Feng without resorting to any martial skills.

“Chu Feng, I ask you to let Senior Xia go.”

Bi Jingjing stepped forward and spoke up for Xia Ran’s behalf, asking Chu Feng to let the latter off.

“Senior Bi, on your account, I can ignore how he used a fake evaluation rock to undermine me earlier. However, if he still continues to hound me after this, please don’t blame me for getting nasty.”

After that, Chu Feng released his grip on Xia Ran. The latter fell to the ground and coughed violently.

Seeing this, the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall immediately rushed forward to treat Xia Ran. Meanwhile, the disciples from the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall began discussing amongst themselves.

This was really quite a dramatic twist. Xia Ran had confronted Chu Feng, hoping to make things hard for the latter, only to put himself in a spot instead.

This turn of events changed their perception of Chu Feng. It told them that Chu Feng wasn't a helpless newcomer but someone who possessed strength. In fact, they began suspecting that Xia Ran had really tampered with Chu Feng's aptitude test earlier on.

After all, how could someone as strong as Chu Feng possibly be of the lowest aptitude?

It was also only then that Wang Ziyang, Hei Yao, and the other disciples of the North Tortoise Hall dared to head down. After seeing that Chu Feng was able to defeat Xia Ran, they weren't that fearful anymore.

"Junior Chu Feng, you're so strong. I didn't think that Xia Ran would be so helpless in your face!" Wang Ziyang walked over to Chu Feng's side and complimented him.

However, her compliments were relayed via voice transmission. She dared not to speak aloud out of fear that Xia Ran and the others would overhear her.

Chu Feng knew what kind of person Wang Ziyang was, so he didn't bother with her. Instead, he turned his attention toward the light surfacing from the ground. The light had started manifesting in the shape of a palace.

"Could it really be the Snowdomain Divine Palace? But shouldn't it appear only once every millennium?"

The crowd couldn't help but wonder if it was really the legendary Snowdomain Divine Palace.

Chapter 4725: Lies? Impersonation?

“It’s indeed the Snowdomain Divine Palace. There’s no mistake about it,” Bi Jingjing said with an affirmative tone.

“Junior Bi, if it really is the Snowdomain Divine Palace, why would it appear here today? It has only been 715 years since its last emergence, so it shouldn’t be appearing now.”

The crowd turned to Bi Jingjing in search of answers.

Bi Jingjing was someone who had grown up in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so her knowledge of this place far surpassed the others.

“Based on the records, a similar situation has happened in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect once before, and that was the day Lord Dugu Lingtian broke the record of the Snowy Heavenly Peak,” Bi Jingjing said.

“Broke the record? Does this mean to say that someone has broken the record Lord Dugu Lingtian left behind?”

The crowd began voicing out their deductions, but most of them didn’t think that it was likely. There shouldn’t have been anyone amongst them who possessed the power to outdo Dugu Lingtian.

Yet, Bi Jingjing turned her gaze to Chu Feng.

Everyone’s eyes had been on Bi Jingjing all this while, so they couldn’t help but notice the peculiar gleam in her eyes when she looked at Chu Feng. So, they turned their eyes toward Chu Feng too.

“Could it be him?”

While they didn’t think that it was likely, they couldn’t help but recall the rumors that Chu Feng had triggered the god aptitude phenomenon in the aptitude test.

If there was anyone who could do it, he was definitely the most likely one to do so.

“Junior Chu Feng, could it really be you?” Bi Jingjing asked.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Chu Feng knew that there was no way for him to hide this matter, and there was no need for him to do so either. So, he admitted to it frankly.

“It really is him?”

Everyone looked at Chu Feng in skepticism as the surrounding discussions grew more vehement than ever.

Quite a few people turned to look at Xia Ran too. If Chu Feng was really able to break Dugu Lingtian’s record, it would verify that Xia Ran had indeed been lying, meaning to say that the evaluation rock had been tampered with, resulting in Chu Feng being evaluated with the lowest aptitude.

Needless to say, someone who had the ability to break Dugu Lingtian’s record couldn’t possibly be of the lowest aptitude.

Boom boom boom boom!

All of a sudden, the ground began to tremor intensely. The light beneath the ground grew brighter as the divine aura became more and more powerful. Eventually, it came to a point where the crowd could hardly keep their eyes open.

But soon enough, the rumbling halted and the blinding light receded.

Where the light had gathered previously now stood a majestic palace. The entrance to it was a spirit formation gate.

Looking at the swirling spirit formation gate, the crowd was filled with anticipation. Above the gate was a huge plaque that wrote ‘Snowdomain Divine Palace’, but notably, there was a small subscript below that wrote ‘Owner: Dugu Lingtian’.

“Dugu Lingtian is still the owner of the Snowdomain Divine Palace. This is the privilege that only the record holder enjoys.”

Upon seeing the plaque, the crowd turned to look at Chu Feng, just that their gazes were filled with disdain this time around.

This piece of evidence proved that Chu Feng was lying. He couldn’t have broken Dugu Lingtian’s record, or else his name would have replaced Dugu Lingtian’s name by now.

“Senior Bi, is the name on the plaque unchangeable?” Chu Feng asked Bi Jingjing in confusion.

He remembered having changed the token, and the crystal token he received was inscribed in his name too.

“Junior Chu Feng, did you really break the record? If that was the case, it should have replaced with your name.”

Even Bi Jingjing began to doubt Chu Feng too.

“I did break...”

“Hah, him? How could he break Lord Dugu Lingtina’s record? Are you all dumb? How could you even think that he would be able to surpass Lord Dugu Lingtian?”

Before Chu Feng could explain, Xia Ran had already begun speaking loudly.

“Fellow disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, have you finally seen for yourself just how shameless Chu Feng is?” Xia Ran said.

“Tsk, he’s truly brazen.”

“Pui! Even if he has some talent, someone of his character will never become anything big!”

Many insults swiftly followed as well.

Everyone had already decided that Chu Feng was a shameless fraudster here.

“Senior Yang, can you really tolerate such a person? He dares to desecrate Lord Dugu Lingtian!” Xia Ran turned to look at the disciples of the East Dragon Hall, or more specifically, a good-looking man.

That man was Yang Chen, one of the stronger juniors of the East Dragon Hall.

“Xia Ran, like you’ve said, Lord Dugu Lingtian is from your South Vermilion Hall. Don’t involve me in the affairs between your South Vermilion Hall.”

Yang Chen knew what Xia Ran was up to. The latter couldn’t defeat Chu Feng, so he wanted him to deal with Chu Feng on his behalf.

“Senior Yang, if you promise to help me, all of the disciples of your East Dragon Hall will be able to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace to cultivate,” Xia Ran said.

“Xia Ran, what do you mean by that? Are you going to stop me if I don’t help you? Do you think that I dare not make a move on you just because Senior Xia is backing you?”

Yang Chen was someone with a backbone, so he wasn’t intimidated by Xia Ran’s threat.

“Senior Yang, this is a matter between the two of us. Please don’t bring Senior Xia into this. Besides, there’s no use even if you make a move on me. Without my permission, none of you will be able to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace! So, regardless of whether it’s Senior Yang or Senior Song, you’ll have to make a move here.”

Xia Ran turned his sights toward another woman from the West Tiger Hall.

This woman was known as Song Zhi, and same as Yang Chen, her strength was above that of Xia Ran’s too. *no ve(lb).In*

“Xia Ran, out of respect for Senior Xia, I don’t wish to argue with you here. However, based on what I know, the Snowdomain Divine Palace is open to all disciples. It’s not a special privilege of your South Vermilion Hall,” Song Zhi said.

“Typically speaking, that’s indeed the case. However, like I said, without my permission, no one will be able to enter. This includes the disciples of our South Vermilion Hall too!”

After saying those words, Xia Ran reached into his Cosmos Sack and took out a crystal token. This crystal token shimmered with a beautiful light, and notably, it emanated an aura identical to that of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

Chu Feng was familiar with that token. It was identical to Dugu Lingtian’s token he had seen on the stone pedestal earlier on, the only difference being their material.

“That’s... Lord Dugu Lingtian’s token! Isn’t it in Senior Xia’s hands? She actually handed something as important as that to you?”

Everyone could recognize the token in Xia Ran's hands right away. It was Dugu Lingtian's token, the evidence that he had broken the record of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

However, it should have been in the possession of the strongest disciple of the South Vermilion Hall, Xia Yan.

"Senior Xia went into closed-door training after she returned to the sect. She knew that the Snowy Heavenly Peak was going to open soon, so she handed this token over to me. This token grants me control over the doors of the Snowdomain Divine Palace, so none of you can enter its midst without my permission.

"Do you get what I'm saying now, Senior Yang and Senior Song?"

A gleeful smirk crept onto Xia Yan's lips.

"Junior Chu Feng, you've seen it too. I bear no enmity toward you, but I've no choice but to make a move here," Yang Chen said.

He didn't want to make an enemy out of Chu Feng, but he couldn't afford to miss this opportunity.

"Junior Chu Feng, why don't you bow down to Xia Ran, and we can let this matter pass?" Song Zhi also tried to advise Chu Feng to lower his head.

"Senior Yang, Senior Song, I appreciate your goodwill. However, there's no way I can lower my head and apologize to Xia Ran. I haven't done any wrong here, so why should I bow down here? Since Senior Yang and Senior Song have already come to a decision, there's no need to hesitate. Make your move," Chu Feng replied.

Chapter 4726: Unqualified

"Pardon me, Junior Chu Feng."

Seeing that there was no room for negotiation here, Yang Chen and Song Zhi released their auras. It turned out that they were both at rank seven Utmost Exalted level, putting them on the same level as Chu Feng after releasing his Lightning Mark.

The two of them swiftly charged toward Chu Feng to curb him. In terms of fighting prowess, they were indeed far stronger than Xia Ran, but surprisingly, they found themselves unable to down Chu Feng with their coordinated assault.

“It looks like Chu Feng does have some means.”

Seeing how Yang Chen and Song Zhi were unable to curb Chu Feng despite joining forces, their evaluation of Chu Feng rose another notch.

Unlike Xia Ran, who was fortunate to have a powerful godsister, Yang Chen and Song Zhi had slowly trudged upward with their own hard work and talent. They were the real deal.

Uwaaa!

The cry of a ferocious beast suddenly echoed loudly.

Yang Chen had used his Divine Power to raise his cultivation up to rank eight Utmost Exalted level. But surprisingly, instead of making a move right away, he backed away and said, “Junior Chu Feng, it’s still not too late for you to admit defeat here.”

Yang Chen didn’t want to harm Chu Feng, and he had only raised his cultivation in order to intimidate the latter into backing down.

Song Zhi also activated her Divine Power too and raised her cultivation to rank eight Utmost Exalted level.

“Junior Chu Feng, we’re all disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. There’s nothing we can’t sit down and talk over. Just apologize to Xia Yan, and it’ll be all over,” Song Zhi said.

“Yang Chen and Song Zhi, why are you acting like good people here? Chu Feng shamelessly claimed that he has broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record, disrespecting him and sullyng his reputation. As disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, you should be enraged by his brazen words! Let me put it out to you straight. If you don’t pummel Chu Feng up well here, you shouldn’t even dream of entering the Snowdomain Divine Palace!” Xia Ran bellowed.

This put both Yang Chen and Song Zhi in a spot.

“Senior Yang, Senior Song, feel free to make your move. Think of it as a spar. Allow me to have a taste of what the disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect are capable of. There’s no need to go easy on me... for I have no intention of going easy on you either.”

Tzlala!

After saying those words, lightning began to crackle around Chu Feng, and it quickly morphed into a set of armor around him.

With that, Chu Feng’s cultivation further rose to rank eight Utmost Exalted level.

“He actually managed to unlock both the Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor at Utmost Exalted level? It’s no wonder why he doesn’t fear the Senior Yang and Senior Song!”

The crowd was astonished to see Chu Feng’s means.

“Since that’s the case, we shan’t hold back either.”

Not wanting to waste any time, Yang Chen and Song Zhi quickly made their moves. However, it was the same as before. They couldn’t claim the advantage here despite it being a 2-on-1.

After trading blows, two weapons made out of martial power eventually fell right before Yang Chen and Song Zhi’s necks. Chu Feng had managed to curb the two of them, becoming the victor of this battle.

Even though they didn’t resort to Incomplete Exalted Armaments in this battle, everyone could tell that neither Yang Chen nor Song Zhi had held back in this battle. It was not that the two of them were weak, but that Chu Feng was simply too strong.

“Looks like it’s my win.”

Instead of making things hard for Yang Chen and Song Zhi, Chu Feng took the initiative to dissipate his weapons, freeing them.

“Junior Chu Feng, thanks.”

Yang Chen and Song Zhi dispelled their Divine Powers and bowed to Chu Feng.

Even though Chu Feng had said that he wouldn't go easy on them, he didn't hurt them in the least. They knew that the only reason why they were unharmed was due to Chu Feng's kindness.

"Xia Ran, I've already done what you asked me to. There isn't much time left to cultivate here at the Snowy Heavenly Peak. Hurry up and open the doors so that we can cultivate in there," Yang Chen said.

"Useless trash. You can't even defeat someone of the lowest aptitude like Chu Feng, and you still wish to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace? You're unworthy!" Xia Ran bellowed with gritted teeth.

"Senior Xia, open the doors. Otherwise, we'll be put in a spot if Lord Protector pursues responsibility for this matter," Bi Jingjing also stepped forward to advise him.

"I'll open the door, but those from the North Tortoise Hall are forbidden from entering. As for those from the East Dragon Hall and West Dragon Hall, you have to make a vow here to make Chu Feng your nemesis, or else you aren't qualified to step into Lord Dugu Lingtian's Snowdomain Divine Palace either!" Xia Ran declared loudly.

"This..."

Many people were put in a spot from those words.

"Chu Feng dares to brazenly sully the reputation of Lord Dugu Lingtian. I, Zhao Pu, will view him as my nemesis from this day onward!"

But soon, some of the disciples from the East Dragon Hall began making their vows.

"Chu Feng deserves to die! He shall be my nemesis from this day onward."

Soon, more and more disciples raised their hands to make their vows.

All of the disciples of the South Vermilion Hall spoke their vows, except for Bi Jingjing.

The disciples of the North Tortoise Hall had been excluded right from the start, so there was no need for them to do anything. nDvE)Lb/In

40 out of 100 of the disciples of the West Tiger Hall spoke their vows, and 137 out of 300 of the disciples from the East Dragon Hall did so too.

Surprisingly, most people would rather not enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace than to swear to make Chu Feng their enemy. This surprised not just Xia Ran but Chu Feng.

Yang Chen walked up to Chu Feng and said, "Junior Chu Feng, I'm grateful for your kindness earlier. I, Yang Chen, will be a friend to you from now onward."

He was one of those who didn't make the vow.

A few other disciples of the East Dragon Hall also walked over, and Tu Yuanyuan was amongst them. However, what was surprising was that Hua Xu also came over too.

Chu Feng knew how much Hua Xu hated him, but instead of befriending Xia Ran, the latter chose him instead. This really surprised him. One must know that Hua Xu had even attempted to publicly humiliate Chu Feng before.

Soon, Song Zhi also led a group of disciples from the West Tiger Hall over to Chu Feng's side.

Of course, while there were many people who didn't make the vow, only a few of them chose to walk over to Chu Feng's side to explicitly support him. They simply wanted to uphold their dignity and conscience, but they had no intention of befriending Chu Feng here.

In other words, they were choosing to offend neither side.

"Very well! All of you are unworthy of cultivating in the Snowy Heavenly Peak and entering the Snowdomain Divine Palace!" Xia Ran's face darkened in fury.

He turned to those who had made the vow and said, "Fellow disciples, you have made a wise choice here. You didn't let Lord Dugu Lingtian down here. You're the ones who are qualified to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace. Let's enter!"

The crowd quickly rushed toward the spirit formation gate, hoping to make use of the little time they had remaining. But to everyone's astonishment, they

ended up cramming up the entrance instead. It turned out that none of them could enter.

“Senior Xia, may I ask you to allow us in?” someone asked Xia Yan.

Typically speaking, everyone should be able to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace without any problem. It was just that the seal in Xia Ran’s hand had the ability to seal the spirit formation gate off, preventing a person from entering.

Thus, when no one was able to enter the spirit formation gate at all, they couldn’t help but think that Xia Ran had intentionally forbidden them entry.

“I didn’t seal the spirit formation gate. Are none of you able to enter?” Xia Ran asked in bewilderment.

“We can’t enter.”

Bi Jingjing also gave it a try, but the spirit formation gate was tightly sealed.

“That’s impossible!”

Seeing this, Xia Ran quickly rushed forward to give it a try, only to realize that he wasn’t able to enter either.

“Senior Xia, stop messing around. We’ve already made the vows you told us to, so hurry up and allow us in!”

“Indeed, Senior Xia! Time is running out! We’re going to miss this precious opportunity by at this rate!”

The disciples exclaimed in irritation.

“I’m not the one who’s sealing off the entrance. Why did things turn out like this?”

Xia Ran was flustered too. He tried his best to activate the token in his grasp, but it was futile.

“Hahahahahaha...”

A peal of laughter suddenly sounded at this moment.

It was from Chu Feng, and his laughter was filled with ridicule.

“What are you laughing at?” Xia Ran asked in displeasure.

It looked like Chu Feng was making a fool out of them right now.

“My apologies. I wasn’t intending to laugh, but seeing a group of unqualified individuals attempting to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace simply amused me so,” Chu Feng replied with a chuckle.

Chapter 4727: Chu Feng’s Might

Chapter 4727: Chu Feng’s Might

“You dare claim that we’re unqualified? Do you not see whose name is on the plaque of the Snowdomain Divine Palace? This place belongs to Lord Dugu Lingtian, and Lord Dugu Lingtian is from our South Vermilion Hall!” Xia Ran pointed to the plaque as he said smugly.

“I see it, but what a pity. None of you are qualified to enter... but the rest of us are,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?”

Those words sounded ridiculous not just to Xia Ran but even Song Xi and the others.

“Senior Song, you should try entering the spirit formation gate,” Chu Feng told Song Zhi.

“Ah? You’re asking me to enter the spirit formation gate?” Song Zhi was at a loss as to what to do.

“Don’t worry, you’ll be able to do it,” Chu Feng replied.

“Alright then. I’ll give it a try.”

With a doubtful look on her face, she began making her way toward the spirit formation gate.

“Hold it right there. You aren’t qualified to enter!”

However, before Song Zhi could come close, Xia Ran had already walked in front of the spirit formation gate to block her way, putting Song Zhi in a spot.

To be fair, Song Zhi was strong enough to overpower Xia Ran with ease, but Xia Ran was backed by Xia Yan, whom she dared not to offend.

The situation came to a standstill as a result.

Shoosh!

It was then that a bolt of lightning gushed over. Chu Feng rushed over to Xia Ran's side, and without any hesitation, he sank his fist into Xia Ran's abdomen.

The Lightning Mark crackling on Chu Feng's forehead showed that he had raised his cultivation to rank seven Utmost Exalted level for this blow, and it was a square hit on Xia Ran.

With a loud 'bam', Xia Ran kneeled onto the floor from the sheer pain, and a bloodied vomit poured out of his mouth.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing?!"

Everyone was shocked to see Chu Feng had actually struck Xia Ran, and Bi Jingjing even howled in fury.

It was true that Xia Ran had lost to Chu Feng in the spar earlier, but it was Xia Ran who had provoked him first. Thus, it was understandable for Chu Feng to fight back.

This time around, however, Chu Feng had taken the initiative to attack Xia Ran, and his strike was definitely not light.

"Senior Bi, as I have said, I'm only sparing him out of consideration for you. However, if he still continues messing around, I won't go easy on him. I've already held back for this punch."

After saying those words, Chu Feng grabbed Xia Ran by his hair and raised him up. Compared to being held up by the throat, being held up by the hair was clearly much more humiliating.

"Xia Ran, remember this. If you dare provoke me once more, it won't just end with just a punch."

Then, he flung Xia Ran callously toward the wall of the Snowdomain Divine Palace. It was quite a powerful fling, causing Xia Ran to crash heavily onto the wall and vomit out even more stuff.

The disciples of the South Vermilion Hall immediately rushed over to help Xia Ran up. Bi Jingjing was amidst the group too.

Meanwhile, Fang Yunshi shot a vicious glare at Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you’re dead meat. After how you treated Senior Xia, there’s no longer a place for you here in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect!”

“No place for me?” Chu Feng sneered.

With a swift movement, he appeared right in front of Fang Yunshi.

“W-what are you going to do?”

Fang Yunshi was intimidated by Chu Feng’s sudden approach, such that his face distorted in fear.

“What did you say earlier? You said something about there not being a place for me in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?”

Instead of attacking Fang Yunshi, he glared down on him with a chilling gaze from a close distance.

“I... I...”

Fang Yunshi dared not to look back at Chu Feng. He suddenly regretted saying those words of threat toward Chu Feng in an attempt to fawn on Xia Ran. He could feel hair-raising killing intent focused on him, piercing through his soul.

Faced with such powerful killing intent, he dared not even speak a word at all. He felt like Chu Feng would really kill him if he misspoke.

He was just a minor figure in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and no one would take pity on him if he were to get killed here.

Since Chu Feng dared to beat up even Xia Ran, naturally, killing him was as easy as crushing an ant.

“I... I...”

Fang Yunshi was really scared out of his wits, such that his voice wouldn't stop quivering.

He wanted to bow down and admit his fault, but his pride put him in a dilemma.

But all of a sudden, Chu Feng bellowed sharply, “Kneel down!”

His voice seemed to explode within Fang Yunshi's body, causing his knees to cave in and fall onto the floor. He was really kneeling before Chu Feng!

He seemed to have lost control over his tears, for they kept streaming down his distorted face ceaselessly.

This sight bewildered the crowd.

They could understand why the angry Chu Feng would ask Fang Yunshi to kneel down, but they couldn't understand why Fang Yunshi was kneeling just like this.

Was Chu Feng really that frightening? n(-o-)v--e.-1(-b./l.)n

As fact would have it, Chu Feng was indeed that frightening, but the only one who could feel it right now was Fang Yunshi.

“Chu Feng, aren't you going overboard here? How can you do this? To think that I've spoken up on your behalf thus far!”

Bi Jingjing glared at Chu Feng angrily.

She bore no hostility toward Chu Feng, or else she wouldn't stop Xia Ran from oppressing Chu Feng again and again. However, she was ultimately still a disciple of the South Vermilion Hall, so she was obliged to step forward to speak up against him.

“Overboard? Senior Bi, if I may ask you, have I, on my own accord, attempted to provoke Fang Yunshi or Xia Ran? They used a fake evaluation rock to demean me and snatched the possession of our North Tortoise Hall and tried to turn the tables on me. It's only due to my strength that I didn't suffer any grievances here.

“However, had I been weaker than him, can you imagine what he would have done to me?” Chu Feng asked.

Bi Jingjing fell silent.

“Senior Bi, I appreciate the goodwill you have shown to me, and I remember them clearly in my heart. However, has anything changed because of what you’ve said? Earlier, Xia Ran used a rank one Exalted Taboo on me on his very first strike. If I hadn’t managed to fend against it, I might not even be alive right now.”

Chu Feng’s voice wasn’t particularly loud, and he was speaking with a normal tone. Yet, his words were deeply impactful, for they were all the truth.

There was nothing Bi Jingjing could say to refute it.

Even the spectators could tell that Xia Ran was the one who had been scheming against Chu Feng all day long with the purpose of undermining the latter. If Chu Feng wasn’t strong enough to stand his ground, he would have surely suffered a much worse fate.

“Fellow seniors, I, Chu Feng, am a newcomer at the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. I know very little about the rest of you, but it’s the same the other way around too.

“I am not someone who would oppress the weak. We’re disciples of the same sect, so if you do need help from me, I’m more than willing to offer a hand. I won’t allow any outsiders to bully our people.

“However, if anyone tries to mess with me, you shouldn’t expect me to lower my head. If someone has a bone to pick with me, go ahead and do so. You can be certain that I’ll make him regret being born in this world, regardless of the backing he has in the sect!”

Chu Feng’s eyes were glowering as he gazed upon the disciples around him. Regardless of whether they were from the East Dragon Hall, West Tiger Hall, or South Vermilion Hall, no one dared to meet his eyes at all. The disciples in his line of sight all lowered their heads to avoid meeting his gaze.

It was almost as if they were disobedient children who dared not to face their elders.

It was hard to explain why, but for some reason, they found themselves intimidated by Chu Feng's presence.

"Senior Yang, it's so weird. I haven't done anything wrong to Chu Feng, but why do I feel so flustered. He suddenly became so scary!" one of the female disciples of the East Dragon Hall whispered softly to Yang Chen.

"It's not just you. I feel the same too," Yang Chen replied.

"Ah? Senior, you too?"

The female disciple from the East Dragon Hall was a little skeptical of what Yang Chen had said. However, when Yang Chen turned his head around to show her the cold sweat on his cheeks, she was left with no choice but to believe him.

"It looks like Junior Chu Feng is quite a terrifying figure. I've seen plenty of fearless fools in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect before, but it's the first time I'm meeting someone like him," the female disciple remarked.

"It looks like a storm is going to fall upon our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect very soon," Yang Chen sighed deeply, but at the same time, there was a hint of anticipation in his eyes.

Meanwhile, looking upon those who dared not to even meet his eyes, Chu Feng couldn't help but think of how Xia Ran made things difficult for him earlier outside the Snowy Heavenly Peak. All of these people thought that he was a weak newcomer whom they could laugh at, and that was what they did despite having no grudge against him.

But now, they wouldn't dare think of doing the same too.

And the reason for that wasn't out of fear of Protector Zhao or the kindness of their heart. It was because Chu Feng didn't allow them to. Through his strength, he had instilled respect into them.

This was also what Chu Feng was aiming for.

"Senior Song, you should enter," Chu Feng repeated once more.

"Alright."

Song Zhi nodded her head before heading toward the spirit formation gate once more. This time, there was no one to stop her. Even so, instead of walking right in, she first put her hand through to give it a try. Surprisingly, her hand passed through the spirit formation gate without any problem!

“This...”

Everyone was dumbstruck by that sight, including Song Zhi herself.

One must know that the others didn’t even manage to put their hands through the spirit formation gate earlier!

So, Song Zhi bucked up her courage and walked into the spirit formation gate. She passed through it without any problem. However, she quickly ran out right after.

“I’m able to enter it... I’m actually able to enter the palace!” Song Zhi announced to the crowd.

The others outside the spirit formation gate quickly gave it a try too, but to their dismay, they were still unable to enter it.

Chapter 4728: Righting Chu Feng’s Name

n--0vel&1n

Chapter 4728: Righting Chu Feng’s Name

“Why would this be the case?”

The crowd was baffled.

It was understandable if all of them were unable to enter the spirit formation gate, but why was Song Zhi able to do so but the rest of them were unable to?

“Song Xi and Tu Yuanyuan, you should enter too.”

Chu Feng gestured to Song Xi and Tu Yuanyuan.

The two of them obediently gave it a try too, and they managed to pass through without any issue.

“Chu Feng, what’s going on?”

Everyone turned to look at Chu Feng in bewilderment. By this point, it was obvious that this bizarre phenomenon had something to do with him.

“It’s because of this.”

Chu Feng took out a token and showed it to everyone.

“That is...”

Upon seeing the token, everyone’s face warped in astonishment. The token was actually made out of the same material as the one Xia Ran had in his possession, emanating the same aura as the Snowy Heavenly Peak!

The only difference was that the token was inscribed with Chu Feng’s name.

“Junior Chu Feng, did you really... manage to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record?”

Song Zhi stared at Chu Feng with a look of disbelief in her eyes, and even her breathing hastened as well.

“If not so, how could I have this token in my possession?” Chu Feng replied with a chuckle.

“Junior Chu Feng, you were the one who disallowed these people from entering the Snowdomain Divine Palace?” Yang Chen stepped forward and asked.

There was a hint of inconcealable excitement in his tone.

He was incredibly displeased by how Xia Ran had threatened them with that token in his hand earlier, and now Chu Feng was returning the favor to them. It was simply exhilarating to see how the tables had turned on them.

Chu Feng nodded in response to Yang Chen’s question, admitting to the matter. Then, he turned his gaze toward the other disciples, raised the crystal token up high, and shouted, “Those who didn’t make the vow earlier, you may enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace now.”

“Thank you, Junior Chu Feng!”

The crowd excitedly rushed toward the spirit formation gate, and as expected, they were able to pass through without any problem. Only those who had made the vow earlier were unable to enter no matter what they did.

This made their guts turn green in regret.

They carried no grudge against Chu Feng, and the only reason why they made the vow was so as to earn the opportunity to cultivate inside the Snowdomain Divine Palace. After all, this was a once-in-a-millennium opportunity here.

Under normal circumstances, such an opportunity wouldn't have fallen into their laps, for the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall would have surely sent their strongest disciples over.

Yet, who could have thought that things would turn out like this?

However, there were always a few thick-skinned people around. Some tried approaching Chu Feng to apologize to him, hoping that he would give them a chance. However, Chu Feng simply paid them no heed.

While everyone was heading into the Snowdomain Divine Palace, the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall did the same too. Most were able to enter without a hitch, but Hei Yao and Wang Ziyang were the only exceptions who were blocked out.

“Junior Chu Feng, this...”

Wang Ziyang and Hei Yao looked at Chu Feng pitifully.

“Don't even bother. You know best yourself whether you're qualified or not.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned to Bi Jingjing and said, “Senior Bi, you're the only one in the South Vermilion Hall who is qualified to enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace to cultivate. If you wish to enter, I'll welcome you in. If not, I won't force you either.”

After saying those words, he turned around and entered the Snowdomain Divine Palace himself.

The reason why he said those words was because he understood the plight Bi Jingjing was in. While she carried no enmity for him, she was still a disciple of the South Vermilion Hall.

Unlike the others, Bi Jingjing was a principled person. Chu Feng had a feeling that even if he granted Bi Jingjing permission, the latter wouldn't enter.

And things turned out as he had thought. Bi Jingjing didn't enter the Snowdomain Divine Palace in the end.

Nevertheless, Chu Feng still said those words to her so as to let her know that he appreciated what she had done for him, and he would repay the favor in due time.

...

By the time Chu Feng entered the Snowdomain Divine Palace, most people were already in there. There was hardly any time left for them in the Snowy Heavenly Peak, so they didn't want to waste any more precious time.

However, there was still a small number of them who chose to surround a stone pedestal out of curiosity.

Chu Feng could tell right away that it was the same stone pedestal he had seen at the top of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

"What's with this stone pedestal? Based on the records of the Snowy Heavenly Peak, this shouldn't have been here in the Snowdomain Divine Palace."

"Isn't that token Junior Chu Feng's?"

Yang Chen and Song Zhi were also standing around the stone pedestal, discussing curiously.

Weng!

As soon as Chu Feng approached, the stone pedestal began to react. A series of words surfaced: Change the name token, leave your name in the annals of history!

It was the exact few words he had seen on the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

“Junior Chu Feng, did you forget to change the name? Look, it’s still Lord Dugu Lingtian’s name at the back of the pedestal,” Song Zhi said.

“Ah, is that so?”

Chu Feng walked over and noticed that there was still an indentation behind the stone pedestal for him to leave his name.

“Junior Chu Feng, give it a try,” Yang Chen urged.

Hearing the commotion, most of those who had started cultivating halted their cultivation and rushed over to take a look. If Chu Feng could really change the name, it would mean that he had really broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record.

This was no trifling affair.

If that was really the case, they would be witnessing history in the making.

Without any hesitation, Chu Feng waved his right hand over the indentation, and the words ‘Dugu Lingtian’ vanished. Then, with his finger, he inscribed the words ‘Chu Feng’ on the indentation.

“Let me head out to take a look!” the excited Tu Yuanyuan shouted before rushing out.

Soon, she returned with an even more excited look on her face.

“It changed, it changed! The name on the plaque changed! Chu Feng, you sure are incredible! You aren’t just the strongest prodigy of the Holy Light Galaxy anymore. You actually broke Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record!”

Tu Yuanyuan was so excited that she couldn’t stop hopping about.

“I’ll take a look too.”

More people rushed out to take a look. Overwhelmed with excitement, they weren’t in the mood to cultivate anymore.

“It really changed! Junior Chu Feng, you really broke Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record!”

All of those who came back looked at Chu Feng with a different light in their eyes. Their expressions spoke of respect and admiration.

“Junior Chu Feng, congratulations.”

While Yang Chen, Song Zhi, and a few others didn't head out to take a look, they still offered their congratulations to Chu Feng.

It was obvious that Chu Feng had managed to do something unbelievable here, breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record. Once the news started spreading, it would surely shake the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at its core!

“Wait a minute, that junior over there. What did you just say? Did you mention that Junior Chu Feng is the strongest prodigy of the Holy Light Galaxy?” one of the disciples from the East Dragon Hall looked at Tu Yuanyuan and asked.

“Yes. To be honest with you, Chu Feng is indeed the most talented prodigy of the Holy Light Galaxy at the moment. Even Shengguang Yu of the Holy Light Clan isn't a match for him. Not only so, he's also a hero who has salvaged the reputation of our Holy Light Clan,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

The crowd continued asking for more details, and Tu Yuanyuan answered their curiosity without any reservations.

In truth, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was filled so many powerful experts that even the reputation as the strongest prodigy of the Holy Light Galaxy wasn't that big of a deal. In fact, it was much less shocking than Chu Feng's feat of breaking Dugu Lingtian's record.

Nevertheless, this title was still an additional halo on Chu Feng, deepening the admiration that others had for him.

“Fellow seniors, you should hurry up and cultivate,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah yes, we should quickly cultivate!”

Knowing that their time in here was limited, the excited crowd quickly sat back down on the ground and started cultivating.

“Chu Feng.”

However, while everyone was busy trying to make their best of the little time they had left, a person suddenly walked up to Chu Feng. It was Hua Xu.

“I know that I was a scoundrel in the past for provoking you for no good reason, but may I ask for your forgiveness here?” Hua Xu said.

He had already lost his previous conceit, and he didn't even dare to raise his head to look at Chu Feng when they spoke. Nevertheless, Chu Feng could sense that he was sincere in admitting his mistakes and apologizing this time around.

"Let bygones be bygones. However, I heard that Elder Ouyang Che has been demoted to an outer elder due to you. I don't wish for him to be implicated in this because of our earlier conflict," Chu Feng said.

"I understand. I'll speak to Elder Hua Shengping about this so as to get Elder Ouyang Che back to the East Dragon Hall," Hua Xu replied hurriedly.

Seeing how earnest Hua Xu was, Chu Feng said with a smile, "Alright, you should go and cultivate. I'll be cultivating too."

Hua Xu heaved a sigh of relief as the boulder crushing down on his heart was finally relieved. So, he quickly ran off to cultivate.

In truth, shortly after entering the Snowdomain Divine Palace, Chu Feng noticed that the energy in here was the exact same as the one in the Snowy Heavenly Peak, just that it was far more concentrated. That being said, it was lacking compared to the energy he had absorbed earlier at the top of the Snowy Heavenly Peak.

It was just that the Snowdomain Divine Palace appeared only once every millennium and granted all disciples entry, regardless of their level of willpower. In such a sense, it was indeed a rare opportunity for them.

However, for Chu Feng, who had reached the top of the Snowy Heavenly Peak, the energy in here wasn't too useful. That being said, he didn't want to waste this opportunity either, so he sat down and started cultivating too.

He was hoping to see if he could use the energy in here to further unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor so as to push his cultivation to greater heights.

Just that, he didn't get what he wished for.

Weng!

All of a sudden, the energy started to dissipate. Along with the dissipation of energy, the Snowdomain Divine Palace also began to disappear as well.

Chu Feng and the others quickly got to their feet and rushed out, only to see Protector Zhao standing outside. The disciples waiting outside were all standing respectfully behind him, including the injured Xia Ran and Fang Yunshi.

From the looks of it, it seemed like Protector Zhao had been standing outside for quite a while now.

Chapter 4729: Assassination

“Chu Feng, congratulations,” Protector Zhao said with a smile.

“Thank you, Lord Protector.”

Chu Feng walked up and bowed respectfully to Protector Zhao.

Were it not for the other party intervening earlier, he would have likely suffered a defeat in Xia Ran’s hands as his cultivation hadn’t recovered then.

Shoosh!

Protector Zhao suddenly took out an evaluation rock and threw it over by Chu Feng’s feet.

“Lord Protector, this is...”

Chu Feng looked at Protector Zhao in confusion.

“Since you were able to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record, it wouldn’t come as a surprise that you possess god aptitude. This evaluation rock I have definitely hasn’t been tampered with. Give it a try. If you’re able to invoke the god aptitude phenomenon, I’ll redress the grievances you suffered earlier,” Protector Zhao said.

“Thank you for your concern, Lord Protector.”

Without any hesitation, Chu Feng stepped on top of the evaluation rock.

Soon enough, the wondrous phenomenon of multiple dragons soaring into the sky shone from the evaluation rock, just that it was witnessed by everyone present this time around.

“It really is the phenomenon for god aptitude! How breathtaking it is...”

While most people had guessed that Chu Feng possessed god aptitude, it was still a different matter altogether to witness it in person.

“For forging an evaluation rock and slandering your fellow peers, Xia Ran, what do you have to say for yourself?” Protector Zhao turned to Xia Ran and asked coldly.

“Lord Protector, I... I don’t know what’s going on too!” Xia Ran tried to argue his way out.

“Still unwilling to admit your mistakes, huh?” Protector Zhang flung his sleeves grandly, and a token manifested in his hand. The word ‘Enforcement’ was written on the token.

A brilliant light shone out of the ‘Enforcement’ word, spurring the formation of a spirit formation gate. This spirit formation gate was transparent, allowing one to view what was on the other side.

It was a blood-red valley filled with all sorts of terrifying monsters. Sorrowful wailings could be heard here and there, making it look like a living hell.

“Skypeak Hell?”

Looks of horror appeared on the faces of the disciples when they saw the spirit formation gate, and they hurriedly backed away fearfully.

“Lord Protector, I know my mistake now! I’ll repent, I’ll repent!”

Xia Ran hurriedly got to his knees and begged for mercy. He was so afraid that his body wouldn’t stop trembling.

“Xia Ran has used despicable means to slander his own peers. If it had happened anywhere else, I wouldn’t have bothered to intervene. However, since you boldly did it on my Snowy Heavenly Peak, I can’t just turn a blind eye to it.

“For your deeds, I’ll sentence you to two hours in Skypeak Hell!”

The spirit formation gate suddenly released a powerful suction force that pulled Xia Ran in. Upon seeing this sight, the crowd gulped fearfully.

They had long heard of what kind of place Skypeak Hell was.

There was once a disciple who was sentenced into there by a protector for four hours, but he ended up losing his mind as a result of that. There was also another case where a disciple was sentenced for six hours, and he ended up crawling out of the spirit formation gate as a cripple.

While Xia Ran was only sentenced there for two hours, there was no doubt that he would suffer greatly in there as well.

Protector Zhao wasn't one to get involved in such matters, so the crowd couldn't help but link this matter to Chu Feng.

As such, two pieces of news began spreading like wildfire throughout the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. One, Chu Feng's feat of breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record, and two, Zhao Yushu, the protector of the Snowy Heavenly Peak, favored Chu Feng greatly.

In fact, some even started speculating that Zhao Yushu was interested in taking Chu Feng in as his disciple.

Of course, those were just speculations.

After punishing Xia Ran, Protector Zhao evicted Chu Feng and the others away from the Snowy Heavenly Peak, and nothing else happened afterward. So, Chu Feng returned back to his residence to rest.

Chu Feng's feat of breaking Dugu Lingtian's record caused a huge commotion, such that everyone in the four halls began discussing it. However, the ones who were most affected by the matter was no other than those from the South Vermilion Hall.

...

Nightfall, five elders of high standing gathered in a grand palace inside the South Vermilion Hall. There was also a junior amidst their group, and he was no other than Xia Ran.

Xia Ran's skin had turned purple, seemingly having been poisoned. There were glaring wounds all over his body, as if he had been chowed on by a ferocious beast. He even lost one of his limbs. There was no one who could deny that he was in a miserable state.

He lay fainted on the ground, and four of the elders were currently treating him.

“How useless. Back in my earlier years, I entered the Skyspeak Hell for six hours but still fared just fine, but how did he end up in such a state just by spending two hours in there?”

The one yellow-haired elder who wasn't treating Xia Ran in the hall remarked with a displeased voice.

“Lord Tuoba, you're an extraordinarily talented cultivator. Even back then, your talents still towered over the others. There's no way Xia Ran could compete with you.”

Even though the other four elders were busy treating Xia Ran, they didn't neglect to fawn on this Elder Tuoba.

The yellow-haired elder was no other than Tuoba Jianshu, one of the leading elders of the South Vermilion Hall. He was a Martial Exalted level cultivator, making him a force to be reckoned with.

“Useless!”

Tuoba Jianshu eyed Xia Ran with an incredibly discontented look on his face.

“Lord Tuoba, Zhao Yushu noticed that the evaluation rock is fake. Do you think that he'll look into the matter? If he does...”

The other elders were nervous about this, for they were the ones who had tampered with the evaluation rock. It was precisely due to their intervention that Chu Feng failed to notice anything amiss with the evaluation rock. In fact, they were the ones who had sent Xia Ran to deal with Chu Feng in the first place.

Thus, they were afraid that they would be implicated if a thorough investigation were to be made on this matter.

“Don't worry, Zhao Yushu isn't the type to meddle in matters that don't concern him. He's just warning us through Xia Ran, but he won't really make a move on us,” Tuoba Jianshu replied.

“Lord Tuoba, does this mean that we’ve no choice but to watch as Chu Feng mature? It’s one thing for him to possess god aptitude, but he was actually able to break even Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record too! Are we going to watch as Lord Dugu Lingtian’s legend slowly unravels due to him? If so, our South Vermilion Hall’s standing will fall in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect!”

The other four elders were worried about this.

“Don’t worry, I have my own plans in mind,” Tuoba Jianshu replied.

It was then that the doors to the palace opened, and another elder rushed in.

“Lord Tuoba. I’ve already looked into the matter carefully, and Lord Zhao Yushu is still in the Snowy Heavenly Peak. He didn’t head for the North Tortoise Hall to protect Chu Feng. If need be, I can head to the North Tortoise Hall right now to kill Chu Feng,” the elder reported.

The other elders in the room glanced at one another. They could guess what Tuoba Jianshu’s plan was. He wanted to sever the problem at its root, killing Chu Feng outright.

“We can’t guarantee success if you go. I’ll be the one to do it. As long as Zhao Yushu doesn’t intervene, there’s no one in the North Tortoise Hall who can stop me,” Tuoba Jianshu said.

“Lord Tuoba, isn’t that a little too dangerous? If word gets out... our South Vermilion Hall’s reputation will fall to tatters.”

Two of the elders present tried to dissuade Tuoba Jianshu from it.

“Are you questioning my competency here?” Tuoba Jianshu looked at the two elders with chilling eyes.

The two elders immediately lowered their heads humbly.

“I’m doing this for our South Vermilion Hall. If Chu Feng continues to grow, our South Vermilion Hall will become the weakest hall of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. I don’t know what the rest of you think about it, but I, Tuoba Jianshu, cannot allow that to happen.”

A ferocious glint flickered across the eyes of Tuoba Jianshu.

“Also, you need not worry about it. I’ll accomplish this matter discreetly.”

As he spoke, Tuoba Jianshu took out a transparent pearl. Despite its transparent quality, it emanated an incredibly formidable aura.

“This is... Soulelusive Pearl?”

The other elders felt more reassured upon seeing the pearl. Some of them even broke out in smiles. They were familiar with just how formidable the Soulelusive Pearl was.

Anyone who consumed the Soulelusive Pearl would be able to conceal their body and presence completely, such that they would even be able to bypass most powerful formations. This was an incredibly valuable treasure, often used to free one from a dire situation or assassinate a target.

...

Tuoba Jianshu wasn't one to drag things out. He swallowed the Soulelusive Pearl and quickly headed out. With the power of the pearl, he managed to infiltrate the North Tortoise Hall and enter Chu Feng's residence without any issues.

One must know that Chu Feng was always a careful one. He made sure to construct a formation around his own residence for protection.

However, this formation was completely ineffective on Tuoba Jianshu, who was under the effects of the Soulelusive Pearl.

Once Tuoba Jianshu was inside the residence, he saw Chu Feng sitting in the middle of the room with his legs crossed, focused on his cultivation.

Chu Feng was completely unaware that someone had already infiltrated his residence, and he was oblivious to how close danger was lurking around him.

As soon as Tuoba Jianshu caught sight of Chu Feng, he raised his hand to blast Chu Feng into bits.

Pah!

A palm suddenly appeared out of nowhere to grab Tuoba Jianshu's wrist. Tuoba Jianshu suddenly found his surroundings distorting beyond his control. By the time he finally regained his balance, he noticed that he was already out

of Chu Feng's residence and was currently standing in a remote clearing in the midst of the North Tortoise Hall.

"Who is it?" Tuoba Jianshu shouted in alarm.

He had already consumed the Soulelusive Pearl, so it should have been impossible for someone to notice him. To make things worse, he couldn't sense any presence around him at all. In other words, he had no idea who was the one who brought him here!

"I'll let you off today. If you dare to touch Chu Feng once more, I'll take your life!"

While Tuoba Jianshu was still flustering over the unexpected situation, a voice filled with murderous intent sounded.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4730: Scouting for News - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4730: Scouting for News

Chapter 4730: Scouting for News

In the majestic palace of the South Vermilion Hall, Xia Ran was still unconscious at the moment, but his condition had mostly stabilized. His broken limb had recovered, and his breathing gradually calmed down.

Nevertheless, the elders in the palace couldn't help but feel uneasy and nervous. They were worried not about Xia Ran but Tuoba Jianshu, who had headed off to assassinate Chu Feng.

Of course, with Tuoba Jianshu's strength, he should have been able to kill Chu Feng with ease. However, the act of an elder murdering a disciple was a major crime in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, enough for one to be sentenced to death. Given the implications involved here, it was inevitable that they would worry about it.

"Pour me a cup of tea."

A voice suddenly sounded in the palace.

The uneasy elders jolted in fright from the voice coming out of nowhere. However, when they took another look, they saw space warping as a figure appeared on the main seat in the palace.

It was Tuoba Jianshu.

Granted that he had consumed the Soulelusive Pearl, it wasn't surprising for him to be able to return without catching anyone's attention. However, they couldn't help noticing that Tuoba Jianshu had his forehead furrowed in anxiety, seemingly having suffered a fright, and this unnerved them.

One of the elders passed a cup of tea over to Tuoba Jianshu, and astonishingly, the latter couldn't even hold onto the teacup stably. His body was trembling nonstop.

However, none of the elders dared not to ask about it. They stood neatly by the side as they waited nervously for Tuoba Jianshu to finish the cup of tea.

Tuoba Jianshu took his time to sip on the tea and calm himself before finally saying, "Listen well. From today onward, none of you are to make things difficult for Chu Feng anymore."

"Lord Tuoba, what happened?" the other elders asked anxiously.

They knew that something must have happened for Tuoba Jianshu to be shaken to this extent.

"Someone noticed me. The Soulelusive Pearl didn't work on that person," Tuoba Jianshu replied.

"This... Who is that person? Is it Zhao Yushu?" the other elders asked with their faces paled in fright.

This was definitely no joking matter. If they were really caught in the act, they could very well be killed over this! Tuoba Jianshu would be one, but the rest of them could be implicated in it as well.

"It doesn't seem to be Zhao Yushu. It doesn't sound like him. I don't know who that person is, but the fact that he was able to notice me even after I've consumed the Soulelusive Pearl shows that his strength is at least on par with Zhao Yushu," Tuoba Jianshu said.

“What do we do then?”

The elders were panicked.

Zhao Yushu was a figure on par with the Hidden Dragon Elders, which meant that someone who was on the same level as him was very likely to be a Hidden Dragon Elder himself.

Hidden Dragon Elders had the power to determine a person’s life and death inside the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

“You need not worry about that. If he really intends to make things difficult for me, I wouldn’t have been able to return in the first place,” Tuoba Jianshu said.

“In other words, he just intends to protect Chu Feng? Lord Tuoba, what did that man told you?” the other elders asked.

“He said that he would let us off this time, but if we dare to make a move on Chu Feng once more...”

Tuoba Jianshu didn’t finish his sentence, but everyone still caught his drift.

“Lord Tuoba, is it possible for him to renege on his word and pursue the matter afterward?” the elders asked.

“I was the one who tried to assassinate Chu Feng. Even if he pursues the matter, the one who will take the fall is me. What are the rest of you so afraid of? Just remember this—you mustn’t try to make a move on Chu Feng in the future.

“Also, once Xia Ran is awake, tell him not to touch Chu Feng anymore too. Find a time and get him to apologize to Chu Feng. Alright, I’m going to rest now, so you all should leave too.”

Since Tuoba Jianshu was chasing them off, the elders couldn’t possibly stay in the palace either. They quickly left the area.

“Just who could it be...”

Even after chasing the elders away, Tuoba Jianshu still couldn’t help but brood over this matter. He wondered who the person who stopped him could be.

After all, Tuoba Jianshu was someone of considerable standing in the sect. He had met the sectmaster, vice sectmaster, Hidden Dragon Elders, and even the many protectors in the sect, but none of them overlapped with the voice he had heard earlier.

In the end, he could only conclude that the other party had intentionally changed his voice in order to conceal his identity.

...

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was still oblivious to the fact that someone had tried to assassinate him. He was too engrossed in trying to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor that he hadn't been able to rest at all.

The following morning, an elder from the North Tortoise Hall knocked on his door. The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall wanted to meet him.

The chief elder was the strongest person in the North Tortoise Hall, and he possessed the greatest influence and power here too. Since such a person wanted to meet Chu Feng, there was no way Chu Feng would put on airs.

So, he quickly headed over to the main hall of the North Tortoise Hall.

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall was an amicable old man. He was a courteous person, not putting on a high and mighty attitude that powerful cultivators tended to have.

In truth, he didn't have any special business for Chu Feng either. He just wanted to meet the latter after hearing that he had broken Dugu Lingtian's record at the Snowy Heavenly Peak. In their conversation, he expressed that the North Tortoise Hall would do everything they could to support Chu Feng's growth. He said that Chu Feng could seek him if he faced any problem, and he would surely do everything he could to protect and back Chu Feng up.

Chu Feng also posed some questions of his own too.

"Chief elder, I'd like to enquire about a disciple's circumstances. Do you know a disciple named Yu Ting?" Chu Feng asked.

Actually, he had been looking into Yu Ting's affairs the last few days. He knew that she was a disciple from the East Dragon Hall, so that was a lead for him to work on. However, while there were some people who knew about her, they

were unclear about her whereabouts and plight because she had disappeared for too long.

For that reason, he wanted to ask the chief elder about this. After all, the chief elder was of considerable standing in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so he might know a thing or two about it.

“Yu Ting? Is it the disciple who’s close with Zi Ling?” the chief elder asked.

“Yes, that’s her,” Chu Feng replied in agitation.

The others he had talked to were unaware of Yu Ting and Zi Ling’s close relationship, so the fact that the chief elder knew about this gave him some hope that the other party might know how Yu Ting was currently faring.

“Yu Ting escaped from the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect wilfully. This is a severe crime that warrants harsh punishment once caught by the law enforcement elders. However, I heard that she was caught by Lord Li Fengxian and is currently under his custody.

Ah, Lord Li Fengxian is one of the Ten Hidden Dragon Elders of our sect,” the chief elder explained.

“Chu Feng, why are you looking into Yu Ting’s affairs. Are you... acquainted with her?” the chief elder quickly added.

Chapter 4731: Hidden Dragon Disciple

“Yes, I’m indeed acquainted with Yu Ting. I know that she has made some mistakes, so I’m worried about her. Chief elder, do you know where Elder Li Fengxian is holding her captive?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re actually acquainted with her... Lord Li Fengxian has imprisoned her in his own residence, though I’m not too sure where exactly she is. It’s not my place to ask about it. However, the fact that Lord Li Fengxian didn’t have her over to the Law Enforcement Hall to be dealt with is a blessing in itself. I don’t think you need to be too worried about her. She would have to be punished for her deeds, but she shouldn’t face any threat to her life,” the chief elder replied.

The words 'shouldn't face any threat to her life' made Chu Feng's heart clench. It suggested that Yu Ting's situation wasn't very optimistic, but again, Chu Feng couldn't do anything to help her either.

Besides, it was likely that Yu Ting's punishment had already been chosen.

"Chief elder, do you know how Zi Ling is faring now then?" Chu Feng asked once more.

She was the reason why Chu Feng entered the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect in the first place.

"Zi Ling? You heard of her affairs too?"

The chief elder looked at Chu Feng with a deep gaze.

"Yes," Chu Feng replied with a nod.

"Zi Ling is indeed a highly talented woman. Despite having joined our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for only a short period of time, she managed to make great advancements in her cultivation. However, if you bear any thoughts about Zi Ling, I should give you some words of advice. There are no men in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect who aren't interested in Zi Ling. Some of the Hidden Dragon Disciples are even actively courting her.

"So, at least for the time being, you shouldn't show any interest toward her and bury your feelings in the bottom of your heart first. It isn't too late for you to make a move once you have the ability to. Otherwise... you might just bring calamity upon yourself," the chief elder said.

Chu Feng understood the meaning behind the chief elder's words.

Zi Ling was the only closed-door disciple of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster, and it was likely that she would be groomed as the successor to the sect. Her talent had already bloomed, and her looks were top-notch too.

It was only natural for men to court a woman like her.

"But even if you do possess the ability, it's unlikely that you'd be able to succeed. Ever since Zi Ling was taken in as a closed-door disciple by the sectmaster, there have been many men who tried approaching her. However, she claims that she already has a husband.

“She treats female disciples still fine, but toward male disciples, she always puts on a cold attitude, not bothering to even look them in the eye before.”

The chief elder chuckled softly once more as he recalled the cold attitude Zi Ling put on before the others.

“Oh? Who is Zi Ling’s husband?” Chu Feng asked with a chuckle.

“Well, she has never mentioned that before. For that reason, many speculate that she’s just using it as an excuse to turn down others, and that she doesn’t have a husband at all.”

Oblivious to what Chu Feng was thinking, the chief elder continued explaining the matter earnestly.

“That’s hard to say. Miss Zi Ling doesn’t seem like the type of person to lie,” Chu Feng said confidently.

Needless to say, the husband Zi Ling spoke of referred to him.

“What makes you so certain? Are you acquainted with Zi Ling?”

The chief elder’s words were spoken with a jesting tone. He didn’t really believe that Chu Feng would be acquainted with Zi Ling.

As for Chu Feng, he also simply smiled in response.

He wasn’t familiar with the chief elder, so he couldn’t really trust the latter yet. It was one thing to gather some information from the chief elder, but there was no reason for him to reveal too much personal information to the other party.

“Chu Feng, I view you as one of my own and won’t harm you. You do possess great talent, but it’s for that very reason that others will see you as a thorn in their eyes.

“You can be certain that our North Tortoise Hall will do everything we can to protect you, but it’ll be best for you to keep a low profile from now onward. It’s embarrassing for me to say this aloud, but our North Tortoise Hall is indeed lacking in strength...”

A bitter smile emerged on the chief elder’s face as he said those words.

“Chief elder, you may put your mind at ease. I’m not the type of person to provoke others or court trouble, but I’ll retaliate if someone tries to oppress me. I hope that you won’t blame me for doing so,” Chu Feng replied.

“It looks like you’re quite a hot-blooded person.”

The chief elder shook his head with a helpless smile. With those words, he knew that it was almost impossible for Chu Feng to keep a low profile.

“Chief elder, I heard that Zi Ling insisted on leaving the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect and ended up being imprisoned in the Land of Abandonment by the sectmaster. Is she still there at the moment?” Chu Feng asked.

“She’s still there. However, Zi Ling is a person favored by the sectmaster. I trust that the sectmaster wouldn’t make things difficult for her,” the chief elder replied.

Chu Feng’s worry was assuaged by those words. No matter what, the chief elder had been in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for quite a long time, so he should have a good grasp of how the sectmaster was like. He should have his own reasons for coming to such a conclusion.

“Chief elder, it hasn’t been long since I joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and there are still a lot of things that I’m not familiar with. May I ask you to clear some of the doubts I have in mind?” Chu Feng asked.

“What do you want to know? Feel free to ask,” the chief elder replied.

“Who are the current Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples?”

Chu Feng felt some of the existing Hidden Dragon Disciples would potentially become his enemy in the future. He would have to surpass them in the future, so it would be best to get some information on them in advance.

This was information known by most disciples, so there was no reason for the chief elder to lie to Chu Feng on this. So, he began introducing the Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples to him one by one.

Soon, Chu Feng got a rough grasp of who his rivals were.

In the tenth place was Li Muzhi, a disciple of the East Dragon Hall. His grandfather was a Hidden Dragon Elder, Li Fengxian. He was currently in

closed-door training, and it was speculated that he would be able to make a breakthrough to rank nine Utmost Exalted level soon. His spirit power was fairly decent too, being at rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation, but he was still the weakest one of all of the Hidden Dragon Disciples.

Chu Feng had met Li Muzhi before. He and his grandfather were the ones who took Yu Ting away that day at the Dragon Clan.

The ninth place was Duanmu Yang from the West Tiger Hall. His cultivation was at rank nine Utmost Exalted level.

In the eighth place was Duanmu Xiang from the West Tiger Hall too. His cultivation was also at rank nine Utmost Exalted level.

Duanmu Yang and Duanmu Xiang were actually twin brothers, but they were almost equally matched with one another.

In the seventh place was Ming Tianjiao from the East Dragon Hall. Unlike those before, his cultivation was at rank one Martial Exalted level, making him quite a formidable opponent.

In the sixth place was Zi Ling. She was from the East Dragon Hall too.

Based on what the chief elder said, Zi Ling had barely managed to make a breakthrough to rank one Martial Exalted level and successfully defeated Ming Tianjiao prior to being imprisoned, which was why she was ranked in the sixth place.

When he started speaking about Zi Ling, the chief elder couldn't help but emphasize once more, "In truth, the current juniors of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect are the most outstanding ones we have ever since the sectmaster and Lord Dugu Lingtian's generation. Zi Ling was originally the most outstanding one amongst this group of juniors, but with your emergence, her position might be threatened.

"Of course, that doesn't change the fact that it's amazing how she managed to reach the sixth place amongst the Hidden Dragon Disciples within such a short period of time. If not for the fact that she has been imprisoned, she might have been able to reach even greater heights.

“So, Chu Feng, you really have to work hard. You might have talent, but none of your peers in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect are pushovers either. They’re all true prodigies,” the core elder said.

“I’ll do my best,” Chu Feng replied.

He naturally had to do his best, or else he wouldn’t be able to free Zi Ling.

“The fifth place of the Hidden Dragon Disciples is Song Qian, a disciple of the East Dragon Hall. Her cultivation is at rank two Martial Exalted level, and she’s the strongest disciple of the East Dragon Hall at the moment. n.)0.-V- /e.(l(/b//1-/n

“In the fourth place is Xia Yan from the West Vermilion Hall. She’s a force to be reckoned with. Not only is her cultivation at rank two Martial Exalted level, but her spirit power is fairly formidable too. She’s the strongest world spiritist in the current generation of juniors, having reached rank four Dragon Transformation Sensation.

“Her grandfather is Lord Xia Zhicheng of the Hidden Dragon Elders, and her maternal grandfather is the head of the Law Enforcement Hall whereas her father is the vice head. Most importantly of all, she has a godbrother, and he’s no other than Xia Ran from the South Vermilion Hall. While they aren’t blood-related, Xia Yan does dote on Xia Ran a lot.

“So, the one whom you have to be the wariest of amongst the Ten Hidden Dragon Disciples is no other than Xia Yan. She’s in closed-door training at the moment, but she would be returning very soon. Given how much she dotes on Xia Ran, it’s likely that she’ll come for you once she’s out,” the chief elder reminded.

Chapter 4732: Hidden Dragon

“What will come will eventually come,” Chu Feng replied, expressing his stance.

His composed and fearless response did leave the chief elder with a good impression, but at the same time, it made the latter worried too. It was good for youngsters to be hot-blooded, but being too hot-blooded wasn’t a good thing either.

“Chu Feng, Xia Yan tends to lose her rationality when it comes to matters concerning Xia Ran, but she isn’t an unreasonable person. If she confronts you, it’ll be best for you not to push back too hard. Try to explain things to her amicably. I’ll get someone to help to mediate the matter too. If we can resolve it peacefully, it would be for the best,” the chief elder advised.

From the looks of it, it would appear that the chief elder was a little fearful of Xia Yan too.

This was perfectly normal too, especially since the connections Xia Yan had were figures whom the chief elder could only look up to.

“Thank you for your concern, chief elder. My reckless personality has really worried you,” Chu Feng said apologetically.

“You’re a disciple of our North Tortoise Hall, so I’ll do my best to protect you,” the chief elder replied with a smile before carrying on with the introduction of the Hidden Dragon Disciples.

“In the third place is Zuoqiu Yanliang, a disciple from the East Dragon Hall. His grandfather is the current vice sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.”

Chu Feng couldn’t help but remark, “Yet another person with a solid background.”

“Indeed. However, it’s also due to his own talent and hard work that he managed to climb to this position. He had exhibited great aptitude from a young age, and he’s currently at rank three Martial Exalted level,” the chief elder said.

“What about the second place?” Chu Feng asked. *nOve-LB*)In

“The person in the second place used to be the strongest junior of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. He’s from the East Dragon Hall too, and his name is Zuoqiu Youyu. He is Zuoqiu Yanliang’s blood-related brother, being two years younger than the latter, but his talent exceeds his older brother. He was still weaker than his older brother five years ago, but he has already managed to surpass him.”

“Has Zuoqiu Youyu reached rank four Martial Exalted level?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

He recalled how even the Dragon Clan's Clan Chief and most of the powerhouses he knew of were only at rank three Martial Exalted level. If Zuoqiu Youyu was at rank four Martial Exalted level, what would that mean?

While most people in the Holy Light Clan knew that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was a formidable power, a huge majority of them thought that it was still beneath the Holy Light Clan.

But looking back at it now, he finally understood why even the Holy Light Clan wasn't qualified to enter the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It turned out that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was really a terrifying place filled with monstrously talented individuals.

If even the juniors had already reached such a level, it was hard to imagine just how powerful the Hidden Dragon Elders, vice sectmaster, and even sectmaster would be.

"That's no the case. Zuoqiu Youyu is actually at rank three Martial Exalted level, same as Zuoqiu Yanliang. There isn't a huge gap in their strength, just that Zuoqiu Youyu surpasses Zuoqiu Yanliang in some aspects, and Zuoqiu Yanliang was willing to let his little brother be ranked higher than him too.

"Ah yes. These two brothers are also fond of Zi Ling too," the chief elder said.

In other words, if Chu Feng was interested in Zi Ling, these two brothers would be Chu Feng's love rivals—strong ones at that.

However, Chu Feng wasn't too worried about that. He knew that Zi Ling wouldn't care about those two since he was the only one in her heart.

As for the disparity in strength... it was true that he couldn't compete with them at the moment, but he was confident that it was only a matter of time before he surpassed them.

"Chief elder, you mentioned earlier that Zuoqiu Youyu was the strongest junior in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but he's only in the second place now. What about the first place then?" Chu Feng asked.

"Just a few days ago, the sectmaster brought back a disciple. Before long, Zuoqiu Youyu was demoted to the second place, overtaken by that new disciple," the chief elder said.

“What’s his name? What is his cultivation level?” Chu Feng asked.

“No one knows his name. Other than the vice sectmaster and Hidden Dragon Elders, no one else has seen him. The sectmaster took him away to train him as soon as he arrived in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. In any case, it appears that the sectmaster bears great expectations for him,” the chief elder said.

“Could it be that the sectmaster found an incredibly talented junior outside the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?” Chu Feng asked.

“There are indeed such speculations going around. Some people guessed that Zi Ling had disappointed the sectmaster too much, so she decided to look for a new successor. If that’s the case, he really found the right person this time around. The fact that the disciple was able to take the top spot of the Hidden Dragon Disciples right after joining the sect showed that his cultivation was at rank three Martial Exalted level at the very minimum, perhaps even higher.

“What’s more important is that the title of ‘Hidden Dragon Disciple’ is a title which only juniors are entitled to, which shows that he’s still young at the moment. Of course, there are also those who speculate that he was already the sectmaster’s closed-door disciple right from the start, just that the sectmaster has been grooming him secretly, so no one knew about his existence.

“In any case, shortly after he was brought into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, the sectmaster personally announced that he was the head of the Hidden Dragon Disciples. From that gesture itself, it can be seen how high the sectmaster thinks of him,” the chief elder said.

“To think that there would actually be such a figure in the sect...”

Chu Feng suddenly felt a little unconfident. He wasn’t sure whether this was a good thing or not.

The fact that the current head of the Hidden Dragon Disciples was favored by the sectmaster hinted at a conflict with Zi Ling. If that person was above Zi Ling in all aspects, the sectmaster might choose to devote his resources to grooming this person and let Zi Ling go since she wasn’t as important anymore.

However, this could also mean that Zi Ling had already become replaceable. It was possible that the sectmaster might try to harm Zi Ling if he was still furious with what Zi Ling did.

Chu Feng felt that the possibility of the latter occurring was low, but it was still a worrying notion.

“It looks like you’re really curious about him too. It’s the same for us as well. The sectmaster should be coming out from his closed-door training now, and it’s likely that the new head of the Hidden Dragon Disciples would be officially introduced to us then,” the chief elder said.

Chapter 4733: Can Only Be Mine

“One more thing, Chu Feng. Take this with you.”

The chief elder passed a jade bottle over to Chu Feng.

“Chief elder, this is...?”

Chu Feng took the jade bottle and pried it open, only to see that it was filled with black liquid. It had a viscous texture and smelled a little pungent. It looked like poison at first glance.

Nevertheless, Chu Feng was still able to tell that this was an item for tempering one’s body, just that he wasn’t certain what kind of effects it would bring about.

“There’ll be a newcomer cleansing three days later. It’ll do you much good if you temper your body with this first before undergoing the cleansing,” the chief elder said.

“Newcomer cleansing? What kind of cleansing is it?”

Chu Feng had joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for some time now, so he had some understanding of the practices here. He would usually be informed of most upcoming events, but he never heard about this ‘newcomer cleansing’ before, which was why he was curious about it.

“The location of the cleansing is a place named ‘Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’. It’s a cultivation formation personally set up by our sect founder. In truth, the natural energies in our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect far surpass the outside

world, and it's much easier to assimilate too. However, the reason why you can't sense them is because you haven't undergone the cleansing yet.

"Usually, the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake only opens once every five years, and it has only been four years since its last opening. However, I just received word that the lake has already opened, and three days from now, all disciples who have joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect over the last four years will be entering it to undergo the cleansing.

"I'll be announcing this matter tomorrow, and I believe that the other three halls will be doing the same too. This bottle I gave you is actually the Blackwater Essence from the lake. Fill up a tub with water, add in a suitable amount of Blackwater Essence, and soak yourself in it. Repeat this thrice a day over the next three days.

"When you finally enter the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake three days later, your body will be in a much more optimal condition to benefit from the effects of the lake.

"Ah, I should also tell you that the Blackwater Essence is an incredibly valuable resource. I can't afford to spare a set for all of the newcomers in our Black Tortoise Hall, so I hope that you won't tell anyone about this," the chief elder said.

"Thank you, chief elder," Chu Feng replied with a smile.

He knew that the chief elder was according to him special privilege here.

"There's no need to thank me. You're the most outstanding disciple in our North Tortoise Hall, and I'm counting on you to bring honor to us. There are also some records in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, and they are held by Lord Dugu Lingtina at the moment. If possible, I hope that you can put those records under your name instead."

The chief elder looked at Chu Feng with eyes filled with anticipation.

"I'll do my best not to disappoint you," Chu Feng replied.

To be honest, he wasn't too interested in the cleansing, but he looked forward to clearing the records.

He continued chatting with the chief elder for a little longer before finally returning to his residence. As the chief elder instructed, he tempered his body with the Blackwater Essence. It did bring about some special effects to his body, though it was a relief to him that it didn't bring about any harmful side effects.

The following day, the news about the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake's imminent opening in two days' time started spreading throughout the sect, and the newcomers learned that they had to undergo cleansing there.

Early in the morning, Chu Feng prepared a tub of water, poured the Blackwater Essence in, and tempered his body. After he was done, he walked out of his residence and tried perceiving his surroundings. To his surprise, he could feel the natural energies around him growing a bit more concentrated.

This showed that the chief elder was indeed speaking the truth. Only those who had undergone the cleansing would be able to sense the natural energies in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

"Chief elder?"

Just as Chu Feng was returning back to his residence, a person suddenly appeared in front of him. It was the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall.

"Chu Feng, let's talk inside."

The chief elder walked into the residence, and Chu Feng quickly followed behind him.

"What's wrong, chief elder?"

Chu Feng noticed that there was a grave look on the chief elder's face, hinting that something huge had just happened. nove.Lb.1n

"I don't know whether this is a good thing for you or not, but you need to be mentally prepared. Some things simply aren't meant to be in life, and there's no need to force it," the chief elder said.

"Does it have something to do with Zi Ling?"

Chu Feng could guess from the chief elder's words that something must have happened to Zi Ling.

“Just last night, the sectmaster came out of his closed-door training, and she made an announcement. She’s going to find a husband for Zi Ling through a selection,” the chief elder said.

“Find a husband for Zi Ling through a selection? How so?” Chu Feng asked with a frown.

“All disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect are eligible, but based on what I’ve heard, there are four conditions. First, one must be a junior. Second, it must be within a month,” the chief elder said.

“Junior and within a month? Does that mean that only juniors are eligible, and she’ll select a husband for Zi Ling within a month’s time?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m not too sure either, but that’s likely to be the case. The other two conditions haven’t been announced yet, so I think the sectmaster will explain the meaning behind those words afterward. This news will start spreading very soon, and I’m certain that the Hidden Dragon Disciples will give it a try. Chu Feng, while you’re eligible to join the selection as well, I advise you not to go,” the chief elder said.

“Chief elder, I’m willing to listen to you on other matters, but for this, I have no choice but to go. Zi Ling can only be mine,” Chu Feng replied.

Chapter 4734: Fighting for Zi Ling

Chu Feng’s words shocked the chief elder. That was an extremely dangerous line of thinking. Seeing that Chu Feng was falling into a rabbit hole, he wanted to dissuade Chu Feng from having extreme thoughts, only to see unwavering determination gleaming in Chu Feng’s eyes.

That flustered the chief elder even more.

“Chu Feng, Zi Ling might be an outstanding woman, but you don’t know much about her. Why do you need to be so fixated on her?” the chief elder asked.

“Chief elder, to be honest with you... there’s no one here who knows Zi Ling better than I do,” Chu Feng replied.

“Could it be that... you knew her beforehand?”

The chief elder sharply noticed that Chu Feng was suggesting something here.

“I am Zi Ling’s husband,” Chu Feng replied.

“Ah? This... Chu Feng, are you serious about that? This is no joking matter,” the chief elder said.

“If you feel that I’m jesting with you, you can just think of it that way. However, I’m not joking when I said that Zi Ling is mine,” Chu Feng spoke with conviction.

“Chu Feng, you...”

Seeing the grave look on Chu Feng’s face, the chief elder realized that Chu Feng might really be telling the truth here.

“Chu Feng, even if this matter is true, it’s best for you to hide it for the time being. Trust me, I won’t harm you,” the chief elder reminded.

“Don’t worry, chief elder. I know what I’m doing,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

He didn’t want the chief elder to worry about him.

The two of them continued chatting for a while longer. The chief elder tried to persuade Chu Feng to change his mind about the matter, but the latter’s mind already made up. So, he decided to take his leave.

As for Chu Feng, he turned his attention to unlocking the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

That afternoon, a huge commotion broke out in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Discussions could be heard everywhere. The sectmaster had officially announced the matter concerning Zi Ling’s husband selection.

Once the news broke, Chu Feng was no longer in a mood to remain in his residence to continue deciphering the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor. So, he made his way toward the registration venue for the selection.

It was a square located at the heart of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect that was aptly named Central Square. This was a place belonging to none of the four halls, so everyone was able to enter this area freely.

The Central Square was humongous, large enough to fit countless people at once. It was only normal for it to be big since this was the place where announcements were made.

There was no special festivity today, but it was currently packed with people. Many disciples and elders had gathered in the Central Square. Needless to say, they were here for Zi Ling's matter.

There was an elevated platform at the center of the square, which appeared to be newly constructed. Behind the elevated platform were four exquisite wooden boards. Two of the wooden boards had their content veiled with red cloth, which appeared to be some sort of special treasure that disallowed Chu Feng to seeing through them even with his spirit power.

As for the other two, the first one wrote 'Age of a junior' and the second one wrote 'Within a month'. These were two of the requirements for the selection.

However, what Chu Feng was more focused on was another wooden board placed in front of the elevated platform. There was a brush prepared beside the wooden platform.

This was no other than the registration stand.

Those who wrote their names on top of this board would be able to participate in the selection, and there were already two names on there, namely Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang.

They were the second place and third place of the Hidden Dragon Disciples, the strongest juniors within the sect other than the mysterious disciple whom the sectmaster had brought back with him.

There were many people gathered in the area, but other than those two, no one else was registering. It was a strange but understandable sight. After all, Zi Ling was a person favored by the sectmaster, someone known to be the most talented disciple in this generation where the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall evaluated to be 'the strongest generation since the sectmaster and Dugu Lingtian's generation'.

Without a bit of skill, who would dare to compete for Zi Ling? They would only make enemies for themselves and be humiliated.

So, most of those in the area were actually just joining in the commotion, hoping to verify the authenticity of the news and see who would dare to vie for Zi Ling. They didn't have the guts to put their name down on the registration board.

"Look, it's Duanmu Brothers!"

A commotion suddenly broke out in the crowd.

Duanmu Xiang and Duanmu Yang from the West Tiger Hall had arrived. They were a pair of twins, so they looked identical to one another. There were fairly good-looking, leaving one with a good impression at the first sight.

They seemed to be amicable people as they went around greeting familiar faces courteously. However, it was worth noting that while they were greeting others, their footsteps had never once stopped. They walked straight toward the elevated platform and placed their names down on the wooden board.

It was expected that the two of them would participate in the selections since the Duanmu Brothers had never concealed their feelings for Zi Ling before.

This was a rare opportunity for them, so they wouldn't let it slip through their fingers.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing here?"

Someone amidst the crowd suddenly shouted out.

Chu Feng turned his sights over and saw Tu Yuanyuan waving to him. She quickly made her way toward him. *no ve(lb).In*

Tu Yuanyuan was quite loud, such that everyone in the square could hear her loud and clear. On top of that, she was quite a looker, so her action immediately caught many people's attention.

"Chu Feng? Which Chu Feng?"

"He's from the North Tortoise Hall. Could he possibly be that Chu Feng?"

"Yes, it's him! I saw him before!"

"He looks not too bad. But... did he really break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record?"

It didn't take long for the crowd to turn their sights to Chu Feng.

It was hard to tell if Tu Yuanyuan was doing it intentionally, but in any case, she had managed to draw attention to Chu Feng. Breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record was an astonishing feat that was enough to make his reputation known all over the sect, just that not too many people had seen him before.

Hearing that the person-in-question was present, it was natural for their curiosity to be piqued... Just that most of their gazes carried skepticism.

"What are you doing here? Are you intending to register too and vie with me over Zi Ling?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"I'm just here to watch the commotion. How could a woman like me register?" Tu Yuanyuan explained with a smile.

However, Chu Feng's words suddenly sank in, and she stared at Chu Feng with eyes widened in astonishment.

"Hm? What did you just say? Are you intending to register?"

This was the doubt shared by many others too. Was this newcomer from the North Tortoise Hall planning to fight for Zi Ling too?

Chapter 4735: Cannot Be Bullied

Faced with the shocked Tu Yuanyuan and skeptical crowd, Chu Feng didn't give his answer right away. Instead, he made his way over to the elevated platform.

The Duanmu Brothers were still on the elevated platform, yet to make their way down. When they saw Chu Feng walking toward them, their gazes changed a little.

However, Chu Feng didn't pay any attention to them. He walked straight up the elevated platform, answering everyone's question with his action.

He was intending to participate in the selection for Zi Ling's husband.

"Wait a moment."

Just as Chu Feng was about to pick up the brush and write his name on the wooden board, Duanmu Xiang suddenly spoke up to stop him. His voice carried a hint of hostility.

This changed Chu Feng's impression of the Duanmu Brothers.

He thought that the Duanmu Brothers were reasonable people, but it seemed like he had evaluated them too highly. So, he ignored them and swiftly wrote his name down at the frontmost area of the board, in front of Duanmu Xiang, Duanmu Yang, Zuoqiu Youyu, and Zuoqiu Yanliang.

Chu Feng knew that such an action would offend them, but he wanted to express his own stance.

Zi Ling was his lover, and he wouldn't yield her to anyone else! Those who wanted to vie for her would have to queue up behind him!

He could take a step back for everything else, but not for a matter concerning Zi Ling!

"I'm talking to you! Do you not hear me?" Duanmu Yang asked with an even more hostile voice.

"Oh, my apologies. Were you calling me earlier on?"

Chu Feng turned around to face Duanmu Xiang.

"Aren't you asking the obvious? We're the only ones on this platform. Who else would my brother be calling out to if not you?" Duanmu Yang spoke up with an even more awful attitude than Duanmu Xiang.

It could be seen that they were filled with enmity toward Chu Feng.

"Aren't you a human too? I don't see any reason why he would have to be speaking to me and not you," Chu Feng replied with innocent eyes.

However, anyone with a bit of wit could tell that Chu Feng was mocking Duanmu Yang.

"You're insulting me?" Duanmu Yang bellowed angrily.

“Insulting you? I’m saying that you’re a human, but you’re saying that I’m insulting you? Do I have to say that you’re not a human in order to not be insulting you?”

Chu Feng shrugged helplessly.

“What an insolent man. Do you think I dare not teach you a lesson?”

As Duanmu Yang spoke, he released his oppressive might as a rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator. They were indubitably one of the strongest disciples within the sect, or else they wouldn’t be ranked as one of the Hidden Dragon Disciples.

However, one must know that the square was filled with all sorts of powerful experts. Putting aside the elders, there were also quite a few sect members who were of an older generation than the juniors and were stronger than the Duanmu Brothers.

Yet, no one stepped forward to stop Duanmu Yang when he openly displayed aggression toward Chu Feng.

The sect members of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect seemed to fancy a good drama.

“Are you intending to use your strength to strong-arm me?”

Chu Feng’s smile deepened despite Duanmu Yang’s explicit threat, just that his smile was no longer polite but mocking.

It was then that Duanmu Xiang patted Duanmu Yang’s back, indicating for the latter to rein in his oppressive might. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng. You’re the one who broke Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record at the Snowy Heavenly Peak, right?”

“Yes, that’s right,” Chu Feng replied.

“You have made a significant achievement shortly after joining our sect, so I understand that you’ll be a little complacent. However, as your senior, I should offer you some pointers lest you stray down a wrong path. Do you know the significance of writing your name down on this board?” Duanmu Xiang pointed a finger at Chu Feng as he asked.

“You don’t need to explain to me. I know what I’m doing,” Chu Feng replied.

“You still dare to put your name on the board despite knowing. Do you think that you’re qualified?” Duanmu Xiang asked with an increasingly forceful tone.

“Is there anything wrong? I don’t think that there are any rules why I can’t put my name on the board.”

Chu Feng reined in his smile, and he looked at Duanmu Xiang with a solemn look.

“Chu Feng, it’s fine to be young and hot-blooded, but you should at least have some self-awareness of where you stand. Junior Zi Ling is the sectmaster’s closed-door disciple. Only the most outstanding person in our sect is worthy of someone of her caliber. Yet... you think that you’re qualified?” Duanmu Xiang asked.

“Didn’t the two of you put your names up on the board too? Are you trying to say that you are the most outstanding people in the sect, and no one else is worthy of Zi Ling other than the two of you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Stop twisting my words. You know very well what I mean. I’m saying that you aren’t qualified. Don’t think that you’re a bigshot just because you’ve broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record. Talent doesn’t mean everything. There are countless people who are stronger than you here,” Duanmu Xiang said.

“I, Chu Feng, have never looked down on the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but I don’t deny that I do look down on the two of you,” Chu Feng replied.

“What? That fellow sure dares to run his mouth!”

Putting aside the Duanmu Brothers, even the surrounding crowd was shaken to hear what Chu Feng had said. Everyone could tell that the Duanmu Brothers were messing around with Chu Feng, but given the situation, as long as Chu Feng humbled himself a little, there was not much the two of them could do.

Yet, Chu Feng chose to escalate the conflict instead, digging a hole for himself here.

He might have managed to one-up the Duanmu Brothers in the quip, but in exchange, he gave the Duanmu Brothers a reason to deal with him.

“You look down on the two of us? Who do you think you are to dare look down on us? Do you know who we are? We’re Hidden Dragon Disciples! This is a title bestowed by the sectmaster. Are you questioning the sectmaster’s judgment here?”

Duanmu Xiang managed to launch a counterattack by accusing Chu Feng of questioning the sectmaster’s judgment.

To that, Chu Feng calmly responded with a cold smile, “Do you not understand human speech? I said that I look down on the two of you. I’ve never said anything about questioning the sectmaster.”

“Chu Feng, what grounds do you have to look down on us? Since you look down on us so much, we’ll let you have a taste of the prowess of a Hidden Dragon Disciple!” Duanmu Yang said as he released his oppressive might once more.

“Hah! Are you intending on oppressing your juniors here? Who could have thought that a Hidden Dragon Disciple would pick on a newcomer like me openly like this!” Chu Feng replied.

“Didn’t you say that you look down on us?” Duanmu Yang asked.

“Yes, I do look down on the two of you. Well, if you want a fight, so be it. Let’s compete on the grounds of our talent then.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out an evaluation rock and tossed it on the ground.

“Don’t say that I didn’t give you a chance to prove yourself. If you find it unfair, you can take out your own evaluation rocks or borrow one from the elders present. We’ll pit our talents against one another here. The one with lower talent shall erase their names from the board. What do you say about that?” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, we’re cultivators. Naturally, we should compete on our martial power,” Duanmu Xiang replied.

“But I want to compete on our talents. Are the two of you turning down my challenge?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, you know that your martial power is beneath us, that’s why you proposed such a ridiculous duel!” Duanmu Yang bellowed.

“Well, I do think that my talent is above the two of you, that’s why I challenged you to a duel of talents. Are the two of you afraid to accept my challenge?” Chu Feng sneered.

“You!!!”

The Duanmu Brothers were infuriated, but they were also put in a spot here. They had already heard about how Chu Feng had triggered the god aptitude phenomenon. While they doubted the veracity of the matter, they weren’t willing to gamble here.

Seeing the conflicted looks on the Duanmu Brothers, the crowd beneath the elevated platform renewed their impression of Chu Feng. From the moment Duanmu Xiang shouted at Chu Feng, they knew that the two brothers were intending to pick on the latter.

After all, it was indeed arrogant for a newcomer to dare to step onto the elevated platform and write his name in front of Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang. Even if the Duanmu Brothers were being unreasonable here, they were willing to sit back and watch the show.

Yet, who could have thought that things would develop in this direction? Even though it was the Duanmu Brothers who started the fight, they ended up being cornered.

This made everyone realize that even though Chu Feng was a newcomer, he was definitely not a person who could be bullied.

Chapter 4736: Kneel Down and Beg for Mercy

“I’m asking you a question here. Do you dare to accept my challenge? Why aren’t you answering me? If you dare not to, you can just apologize right now and we can call it quits!” Chu Feng asked once more.

“Apologize? Why should we apologize to you?” the Duanmu Brothers replied together.

“Why? The selection is an event hosted by the sectmaster, and the rules are made quite clear. All juniors are able to participate in the event. There aren’t any requirements on the person is a man or a woman, an elder or a disciple. I fulfill all of the criteria on the boards.

“Yet, the two of you suddenly confronted and started talking about what qualification. For two people who don’t even dare to pit their talents against me, don’t you think that you’re unqualified to be questioning my abilities?” Chu Feng replied.

The Duanmu Brothers were rendered speechless. Indeed, they were not on the side of reason for this matter.

At this point, the two of them were starting to regret their decision. They thought that they could curb Chu Feng’s pride through their reputation as Hidden Dragon Disciples and their rank nine Exalted level cultivation.

They didn’t expect Chu Feng to be such a tough nut to crack. Not only were they unable to faze him, but they ended up cornering themselves too.

However, as Hidden Dragon Disciples, how could they allow themselves to be suppressed by a mere newcomer? With such thoughts in mind, they decided to put aside their hesitations.

“You sure have a load of nonsense! If you want a fight, so be it. However, I’ll only compete with you on martial power!”

Right after saying those words, Duanmu Yang exerted his oppressive might toward Chu Feng once more, but this around, he was far more aggressive than before.

Bam!

But in the next moment, another oppressive might suddenly emerged and knocked Duanmu Yang down from the platform. It had come from a tanned, brawny man standing under the platform.

He was a young man as well, and his appearance was so-so. However, he had an honest face that gave him a righteous appearance.

Seeing this, the Duanmu Brothers found themselves put even further in a spot.

That person was Lu Long. Despite his ordinary appearance, he was definitely not a pushover. He was only 113 years old, but his cultivation had already reached rank one Martial Exalted level.

He was a Hidden Dragon Disciple previously, and he would have still been one if not for the fact his age had exceeded the limits of a junior.

“Duanmu Xiang, Duanmu Yang. I think Brother Chu Feng’s words make perfect sense here. You are the ones who provoked him for no good reason, trying to abuse your position to oppress him. In the first place, you’re in the wrong here.

“Junior Chu Feng has proposed a duel to settle the matter, and if you had any qualms about it, you could have just accepted his challenge. It’s one thing that you don’t dare to accept his challenge, but you actually attacked him without any warning. Don’t you find your actions embarrassing?” Lu Long said.

n..0/.v//e--1-.b-(l-.n

To make things worse for the Duanmu Brothers, it would appear that Lu Long was known to be a just person in the sect, such that many people immediately voiced their agreement for his words.

The crowd had just been watching the commotion a moment ago suddenly began jeering at the Duanmu Brothers.

This made the Duanmu Brothers feel embarrassed, but there was nothing they could do. So, they shot a vicious glare at Chu Feng before awkwardly walking away.

As for Chu Feng, he walked over to Lu Long with the intention to thank him. However, before Chu Feng could say a word, Lu Long said, “I am Lu Long. Even though I’m not a junior, I’m a disciple of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect as well.”

“I am Chu Feng. Thank you for help earlier, Senior Lu,” Chu Feng replied.

“We’re members of the same sect, there’s no need to get courteous with me.”

In secret, however, Lu Long sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng, “Junior Chu Feng, there’s no need to thank me. Actually, I only helped me under someone else’s request.”

Chu Feng quickly replied via voice transmission too, “May I know who you’re referring to?”

“Brother Chu Feng, come along with me if you trust me.”

After saying those words, he left the area.

Seeing this, Chu Feng quickly bade Tu Yuanyuan farewell before leaving the area with Lu Long. Soon, he reached the territory of the East Dragon Hall.

“Senior Lu, may I know who is the one who requested you to help me?” Chu Feng asked along the way.

“Do you still remember Li Muzhi?” Lu Long asked with a smile.

“Yes, I do. Was he the one who made the request?” Chu Feng asked.

Li Muzhi was the one who trespassed on the Dragon Clan the other day with his grandfather, Li Fengxian, and took Yu Ting away. Back then, he even crossed blows with Li Muzhi too.

It was just that Chu Feng’s cultivation was too weak then, such that he didn’t stand a chance against Li Muzhi at all in a clash of martial power. As such, they competed on the grounds of spirit power instead.

That battle ended with Chu Feng’s victory.

It was due to his victory that Li Muzhi and his grandfather decided to speak up on Yu Ting’s behalf. Looking back, it would be more exact to say that there was a conflict between them.

It was not to say that they were enemies, but they weren’t friends either.

He didn’t expect that Li Muzhi would step in and help him.

“Help you? Chu Feng, you’re too naive.”

All of a sudden, Lu Long’s face turned livid, leaving Chu Feng feeling deeply uneasy.

Lu Long released his oppressive might as a rank one Martial Exalted level cultivator, shrouding Chu Feng like a cage.

“Chu Feng, if you don’t want to die, kneel down and apologize. Otherwise, you’ll have to face the consequences of your actions!” Lu Long said coldly.

“Kneel down and apologize? What have I done wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“You defeated Junior Li before his grandfather, embarrassing him. That’s a huge mistake in itself!” Lu Long said.

“A huge mistake?”

Chu Feng could see where Lu Long was coming from. Li Muzhi was likely to be a prideful person, and he hoped to receive the acknowledgment of his family members. In a sense, Chu Feng’s victory over him had humiliated him.

Others might have just thought of it as a minor spar, but for someone as headstrong and prideful as Li Muzhi, it was a huge matter.

“So, you helped me earlier today in order to lure me here and teach me a lesson in Li Muzhi’s place?” Chu Feng asked.

“Since you’ve already figured things out, why bother asking at all? Chu Feng, don’t think that I dare not to touch you just because you have the North Tortoise Hall behind your back. Even if I make a move on you, the North Tortoise Hall wouldn’t dare to do a thing at all. Kneel down and apologize right now, and you might spare yourself some physical agony,” Lu Long said.

However, Chu Feng sneered coldly and said, “Don’t waste your time with words. Make your move.”

The gaze he shot at Lu Long when he said those words was as vicious as a demon.

Chu Feng knew that Lu Long wouldn’t dare to really kill him here. He had miscalculated this time around by blindly trusting Lu Long, placing himself in a dangerous position. He only had himself to blame for this.

However, as long as he survived this ordeal, he would surely return this favor tenfold back to Lu Long.

Chapter 4737: The Founder’s Means

Chapter 4737: The Founder’s Means

“Hahaha!”

But upon seeing Chu Feng’s determined look, Lu Long suddenly burst into laughter.

“Not bad, not bad at all. You’re indeed a true man, unlike the other disciples of our sect.”

Lu Long looked at Chu Feng with a smile. His previous hostility had vanished without a trace, replaced by appreciation. At the same time, he also retracted the oppressive might he had been suppressing Chu Feng with.

“You are...”

Chu Feng swiftly realized that Lu Long wasn’t really intending to make a move on him. Rather, the latter was just probing him out.

“Junior Chu Feng, pardon me for my earlier disrespect. I don’t mean any ill-will. I just wanted to see what kind of person you are. It’s no wonder why even someone like Junior Li has such a high evaluation of you. There’s truly something different about you.”

As it turned out, Chu Feng hadn’t judged Lu Long wrongly. The latter wasn’t a vindictive and unreasonable person.

“Senior Lu, so it really was Li Muzhi who called you over to help me?” Chu Feng asked.

“It was indeed Junior Li who asked me to look for you. In truth, Junior Li wanted to visit you personally, but he had some matters on hand, so he sent me instead,” Lu Long replied.

“May I know what he’s busy with? If it’s not convenient for him to drop by, I can pay him a visit too,” Chu Feng replied.

“Yes, it’s convenient. We’re already here anyway. Follow me,” Lu Long said.

He seemed to want to bring Chu Feng along with him.

“I’ll be troubling you then, Senior Lu.”

As for Chu Feng, he wanted to meet Li Muzhi once more so as to find out about Yu Ting's current situation. If he could verify that Yu Ting was in safe hands, he would be able to put his heart at ease.

Under Lu Long's lead, Chu Feng soon arrived at a residence. This residence was atypical of the others in the sect. Just the doors themselves towered a thousand meters tall, carved with a delicate touch. The walls were forged out of precious metal and infused with spirit power. Above the doors was a huge plaque with two words on it, 'Li Manor'.

It was truly imposing.

Standing before the door, Chu Feng couldn't help but appear insignificant, almost as if an ant.

There were ten people standing in front of the door in two rows, guarding the area. It would be one thing if they were disciples, but astonishingly, they were actually elders of the East Dragon Hall!

Chu Feng couldn't help but think that Li Muzhi was really respected in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It was one thing for him to have such a grand residence, but to think that he had elders of the East Dragon Hall guarding his estate too.

Could this be the privilege enjoyed by Hidden Dragon Disciples?

Passing through the door, Chu Feng found himself met with not concrete buildings but lush fields and clear water. It was such a vast land that one couldn't see to the end of it.

This wasn't just an estate in itself anymore but a mini country!

"Junior Chu Feng, make sure not to speak carelessly in here. This isn't just the residence of Junior Li Muzhi but Lord Li Fengxian's too," Lu Long reminded.

That would explain the grandness of this piece of land. Considering the fact that Li Fengxian was one of the Hidden Dragon Elders, it would be justified for him to enjoy such special treatment.

Proceeding deeper into the manor, Chu Feng realized that there were hardly any buildings in sight. Other than the towering doors and walls he had walked through earlier, everything beyond that was mostly natural scenery.

There were quite a few wild animals, monstrous beasts, and ferocious beasts around, forming a complete ecosystem by itself.

Soon, they passed through a jungle to arrive at a sea.

However, this sea was a little peculiar. Due to some sort of phenomenon in the sky, this world had no concept of rising or setting sun, but the water was gleaming golden.

It turned out that the golden light was coming from the depths of the sea, causing the sea to be basked in its radiance.

“A formation?”

Chu Feng’s expression turned serious. Even before coming close, he could already sense some sort of energy suffusing the sea.

The further he proceeded, the more certain he was that the sea contained spirit power. It didn’t seem to be coming from a formation; the spirit power was simply in the sea. Or to be more exact, the entire sea was a formation in itself.

Chu Feng marveled at the grandeur of this handiwork.

“Brother Chu Feng, you’re able to sense the formation here? Are you able to tell how powerful this formation is?” Lu Long asked.

“This formation is unfathomably powerful. I can’t make an accurate assessment of it. Senior Lu, may I ask who is the creator of this formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“Heh. Needless to say, it’s the work of our sect founder,” Lu Long replied.

“Our sect founder? No wonder.”

Chu Feng had already seen the means of the sect founder via the Snowy Heavenly Peak. Without a doubt, the sect founder was an incredibly powerful world spiritist, possibly having reached the top. It wouldn’t be surprising if this powerful formation here was set up by the sect founder too.

“Senior Lu, may I know what kind of formation this is?” Chu Feng asked.

“This is a supporting formation,” Lu Long replied.

“Supporting formation? Really?” Chu Feng was surprised.

“Of course. I’ve no reason to lie to you,” Lu Long replied.

“Ah...” Chu Feng gasped in amazement.

As a world spiritist, who could he not know what a supporting formation was?

Supporting formation was a special type of formation that reduced the burden on a world spiritist in setting up a formation. However, as the name suggested, supporting formation tended to be an auxiliary means, so it was usually much weaker than an ordinary formation.

Yet, the formation before Chu Feng’s eye was boundlessly huge and powerful. Never in his entire life had Chu Feng seen such a powerful supporting formation before.

“Li Muzhi and the others are in here?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s rumored that he’s in closed-door training, but he’s actually already out. It’s just that he’s busy setting up a formation at the moment. Speaking of which, he sent me to look for you because he has a favor to ask of you,” Lu Long said.

“Does it have something to do with the formation he’s setting up?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu Feng, you’re indeed a smart man. He’s setting up a formation at the moment in order to assimilate a treasure. He’s preparing this treasure for the Vicious Beast Hellworld that would be opening two days later. However, it doesn’t seem like he’ll be able to finish assimilating it at the rate he’s progressing, so he’s quite anxious at the moment. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have asked this favor of me either,” Lu Long said.

“Vicious Beast Hellworld? Is that a cultivation place?” Chu Feng asked.

Chapter 4738: The One Who Mocked

“Vicious Beast Hellworld is a place where the Hidden Dragon Disciples and the personal disciples cultivate, opening once every year. The bones of the beasts in there harness natural energies, and some of them even have martial comprehension inscribed on them. By killing these beasts, a cultivator would be able to use them as cultivation resources.

“Of course, the gains differ based on how strong the beasts are. The treasure Junior Li is forging uses a plant called the Demonsoul Grass in the Vicious Beast Hellworld. This plant has the effect of casting an illusion over beasts. As long as he’s able to forge it into a treasure, he would be able to use it to control the stronger beasts. This way, he would be able to obtain far greater returns in the Vicious Beast Hellworld.

“However, there’s an issue here. Only juniors are able to enter the Vicious Beast Hellworld, and the treasures forged by the elders wouldn’t be able to work its effects there. So, we can only gather the help of juniors in order to forge this treasure,” Lu Long explained the matter to Chu Feng.

By this point, Chu Feng had already gained some understanding of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. The personal disciples simply referred to some of the more outstanding disciples amongst the juniors. In order to attain that identity, they would have to clear tests and defeat the other personal disciples in order to take their place.

All in all, there were only 100 personal disciples in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and they were all second only to the Hidden Dragon Disciples.

So far, there was not a single junior in the North Tortoise Hall who had the title of a personal disciple. From this, it could be seen just how difficult it was to obtain this title.

The two of them continued chatting while rushing forward. Lu Long informed Chu Feng that there were a total of six supporting formations in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and they were constructed by the sect founder.

There was one supporting formation that was shared by all disciples and elders, but the energy there was slightly weaker. The East Dragon Hall, West Tiger Hall, South Vermilion Hall, and North Tortoise Hall also had a supporting formation each, but they were all monopolized by an individual in each of the halls.

As for the final supporting formation, it was in the sectmaster's residence. Needless to say, that supporting formation was also the strongest one of the six.

"It seems like Lord Li Fengxian is quite a powerful figure even amongst the Hidden Dragon Elders," Chu Feng remarked.

There might only be one supporting formation in the East Dragon Hall, but there was more than one Hidden Dragon Elder in the East Dragon Hall. Yet, the supporting formation had become Li Fengxian's private property. Naturally, that wouldn't have happened without reason.

"There's no questioning Lord Li Fengxian's strength. He's one of the strongest elders of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. However, it's more of a stroke of luck that Lord Li Fengxian managed to obtain this residence.

"There were many people who coveted this residence, but it would sully the harmony in the East Dragon Hall if they were to compete on the grounds of martial power. So, they decided to do it through a draw. It just so happens that Lord Li Fengxian managed to get it."

Lu Long couldn't help but chuckle a little as he explained the event, seemingly amused by the events unfolded.

"I see. It looks like Lord Li Fengxian is a person with great luck."

Chu Feng also chuckled as well. He didn't expect a place as cutthroat as the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect would use such an amicable means to resolve such an important issue.

The further he ventured in, the more interested he was in the supporting formation. He realized that the spirit power harnessed inside the supporting formation was indeed very supportive. The more one understood about this formation, the greater the help one could obtain from it.

Chu Feng thought that if he could set up a formation here, he would be able to enhance his general understanding of formation. Perhaps, it might even provide him with some inspiration for unsealing the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

Finally, they arrived at where Li Muzhi was. He was accompanied by three guys and two girls.

According to Lu Long, they were all personal disciples and rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritists, same as Li Muzhi.

The formation they were constructing was located above the sea. From its sheer immense scale, it could be seen that they had prepared a long time for it.

All of them were currently focused on channeling the formation to forge the treasure. Due to how focused they were, they hadn't noticed Chu Feng and Lu Long's arrival.

Chu Feng also didn't wait for them to greet him either. He stared intently at the formation, scanning its details intently.

An hour later, Li Muzhi and the others finally ran out of strength and halted the channeling. From how they quickly took out pill to restore their spirit power, it could be seen that they were only taking a quick respite before continuing on.

During this break, they naturally noticed Chu Feng and Lu Long's presence too.

"Chu Feng, it really is you!"

Lu Muzhi was surprised to see Chu Feng. He had heard of Chu Feng's affairs, but he wasn't sure if the latter was the one he knew.

Chu Feng stepped forward and said, "Brother Li, thank you for sending Senior Lu to my help."

Had it not been for Lu Long making a move, Chu Feng might have been put in a spot today.

"Help? What did he help you with?"

Li Muzhi turned to look at Lu Long in confusion.

"Junior Li, it's like this..."

Lu Long quickly explained the matter.

As it turned out, Li Muzhi had tasked Lu Long to invite Chu Feng over upon hearing his affairs. He wanted to see if the Chu Feng was really the Chu Feng

he knew. If so, he could get Chu Feng to help him on this matter. Otherwise, it wasn't bad to get acquainted with a rising disciple either.

Lu Long headed over to the North Tortoise Hall to look for Chu Feng, only to hear that he had gone to the square where the news of Zi Ling's matchmaking had been announced. When he arrived at the square, he saw Chu Feng being picked on, so he stepped forward to offer his help.

"Lord Sectmaster is planning to matchmake Junior Zi Ling? Is that true?"

However, those present weren't concerned about how Lu Long helped Chu Feng. They were more interested in the news of Zi Ling's matchmaking.

All this while, they had been focused on forging the treasure that they hadn't been able to pay heed to what was happening around them.

"It is," Lu Long replied.

"What does Lord Sectmaster intending? Does he intend to matchmake Zi Ling with Zuoqiu Youyu?" Li Muzhi remarked contemplatively.

The others also seemed to agree with his thoughts too.

It couldn't be helped that they would think this way since Zuoqiu Youyu was the strongest one amongst the disciples in the sect, which meant that he was the most eligible one to become Zi Ling's husband.

"That might not be necessarily the case. Have you forgotten that Lord Sectmaster has brought back a junior who was immediately ranked at the top of the Hidden Dragon Disciples? It seems more likely that he's trying to bring the two of them together instead," Lu Long said.

"Senior Lu, what you said makes sense. That might very well be the case. However, I'm curious who the person Lord Sectmaster brought back is for him to be so highly regarded."

Li Muzhi nodded in agreement to Lu Long's analysis.

"Junior Chu Feng also registered for the matchmaking?"

All of a sudden, a person carrying some freckles on his face turned to Chu Feng and asked.

Based on Lu Long's introduction, Chu Feng knew that this guy is named Xu Langzhi. His cultivation was at rank eight Utmost Exalted level. While he wasn't a Hidden Dragon Disciple, he was one of the stronger ones in the personal disciples.

"That's right," Chu Feng replied.

"Heh..."

Unexpectedly, Xu Langzhi actually let out a burst of scornful laughter. The others, with the exception of Lu Long and Chu Feng, also quickly followed suit as well.

The intent of their laughter was obvious. They were mocking Chu Feng for his ignorance and not knowing his place

Chapter 4739: Doubt

"What are you laughing at? There's no man who doesn't love a beauty, and Junior Chu Feng does have the right to participate in the selections."

Sensing that the atmosphere was a bit off, he quickly tried to bring the matter over with a joking tone.

Li Muzhi's words clearly wielded some weight. Despite his joking tone, the others reined in their smiles right away.

"Junior Chu Feng, did Senior Lu tell you what we're doing?" Li Muzhi asked.

"Yes, Senior Lu has told me about it, and I've taken a look at your formation too. Senior Li, the reason why you haven't been able to succeed thus far is due to the formation you've constructed. It's far too conservative. If you were to dispel the second layer of formation you have built up, you will be able to successfully forge the treasure," Chu Feng said.

Li Muzhi's formation contained two layers. The first formation was the forging formation whereas the second one was a link between the forging formation and the supporting formation.

Chu Feng felt that the reason why Li Muzhi and the others weren't able to succeed was due to the obstruction of the second formation.

“You must be joking with me! Do you know what the use of the second formation is?”

Xu Langzhi looked at Chu Feng doubtfully.

“If I’m not mistaken, the second formation is constructed with the intent to better absorb the energy from the supporting formation,” Chu Feng replied.

“You’re only half right. This second formation also serves as a dampener to slow down the intake of the energy from the supporting formation. You should already know that this supporting formation was created by our sect founder. The energy it harnesses is so great that ordinary supporting formations can’t even hold a candle to it.

“If one wants to tap into the power of the supporting formation, one would have to construct another layer of formation in order to slow down the absorption of energy from the supporting formation. Otherwise, it’ll become difficult to control the excess of energy and possibly lead to a disaster.”

Xu Langzhi directed a sneering look at Chu Feng, as if he was looking at a countryside bumpkin.

However, Chu Feng simply chuckled softly and replied, “I know that.”

“You know that? If you know that, how could you even suggest for us to remove the second formation? Are you intending to kill all of us?” Xu Langzhi roared.

“Senior Xu, Junior Chu Feng is someone with true capabilities, or else I wouldn’t have invited him over. Let’s hear more about Junior Chu Feng’s thoughts before deciding on what to do.”

There was nothing wrong with Li Muzhi’s words, but his tone reflected a hint of displeasure. It was obvious to everyone present that Li Muzhi was unhappy with Xu Langzhi’s attitude.

Seeing that Li Muzhi was displeased, Xu Langzhi hurriedly explained, “Junior Li, I have no intention of picking on Chu Feng. It’s just that...”

However, Li Muzhi waved his hands impatiently and cut him short, “Enough, let’s listen to Junior Chu Feng’s idea first.”

After that, he turned to Chu Feng and asked, “Junior Chu Feng, can you share more about your thoughts?”

There was a clear difference in tone between how Li Muzhi addressed Chu Feng and Xu Langzhi. He was clearly much more amicable now.

“Just like what Senior Xu mentioned earlier, the supporting formation here is far too powerful that it’ll be hard to control the excess of energy without an additional formation to dampen the inflow of energy. However, forging the treasure takes time, and time is what you lack at the moment. At the current rate, I think that it’s unlikely for you to be able to finish the treasure on time.

“What we need right now is to take in more energy of the supporting formation to hasten the process. If you remove the second formation and create another formation core in the forging formation, I’ll help you to control the energy coming in from the supporting formation. With that, you can focus your effort on channeling the forging formation without worrying about anything else,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you... serious? The energy coming in from the supporting formation is no joke. Are you certain that you can control it all alone?”

Li Muzhi couldn’t help but doubt Chu Feng’s words.

“Senior Li, leave this to me. I’m willing to take any punishment if I fail. However, if I do succeed, I have a small request I’d like to make of you,” Chu Feng said.

“What request is it? Feel free to speak,” Li Muzhi said.

“I’d like to borrow the supporting formation to cultivate for a moment. It won’t take too long, just a couple of hours will do,” Chu Feng said.

“This... There’s no problem with that. Even if you don’t help me here, you’re more than welcome to use the supporting formation to construct any formation you need,” Li Muzhi replied candidly.

Li Muzhi’s attitude toward Chu Feng was far better than before. He had put down his lofty and domineering attitude. In fact, if not for the sharp edge in his tone when he addressed Xu Langzhi earlier, Chu Feng would have wondered if he was still the same person he had met back then.

“However, Junior Chu Feng, this matter is of grave importance. Do you want to try seeing if there are any other alternative measures first?”

Li Muzhi clearly had some reservations toward Chu Feng’s plan.

“Junior Li, as long as you open up another formation core in the forging formation so that I can control the flow of energy, I’m certain that it’ll work out. You just have to concentrate your effort on channeling the formation. If it fails, you can do whatever you want with me,” Chu Feng said.

“This...”

Li Muzhi didn’t respond right away as he wasn’t too sure about what Chu Feng was planning to do.

“Hmph, you’ll let us do whatever you want with you? Do you know how much effort and time we have spent on forging this treasure? If we fail because of you, not even your life will be able to compensate for our loss!” Xu Langzhi sneered.

Chu Feng shot a glance at Xu Langzhi and said, “It looks like Senior Xu is certain that I’ll fail.”

“Of course! What arrogance it is to think that you can single-handedly control the energy of the supporting formation here! Who do you think you are? Not even Junior Xia Yan will dare to spout such words of arrogance!” Xu Langzhi said.

“Since that’s the case, do you want to make a bet with me? If the forging process fails after using my method, my life will be yours. However, if it does work out, your life will be mine. What do you think?” Chu Feng asked.

“You!!!”

Xu Langzhi panicked. He didn’t think that Chu Feng would dare to refute him and even raise such a bet.

Betting on his life? Of course he wouldn’t dare to do it even if he was confident that Chu Feng was unwilling to do it.

“Since you don’t dare to do so, you should stop yapping off. It’s on Senior Li’s account that I’m here today. I’m here to propose ideas to Senior Li regarding

the problem he's facing. Whether he wants to adopt my solution or not is up to him. This has nothing to do with you at all.

"To put it in a more direct manner, if you really had the ability to forge the treasure, Senior Li wouldn't have to seek my help in the first place," Chu Feng said.

"Y-you!!! How arrogant! Do you know who I am? How dare you look down on me? Very well, let's compete our spirit power against one another then! If you can defeat me, I'll let you do whatever you want!" Xu Langzhi said.

"Sure. However, if I win, your life will be mine," Chu Feng replied.

"Y-you..."

Xu Langzhi's face turned steely. He was so frustrated that he felt like his heart was going to explode. He knew that Chu Feng was intentionally saying those words because he knew that he wouldn't dare to accept this bet!

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4740: Failure - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4740: Failure

Chapter 4740: Failure

"Life life life, all you know is to put your life on the line! Are you even worthy of betting your life against Senior Xu?"

The others quickly spoke up for Xu Langzhi upon seeing that the latter was unable to argue against Chu Feng, though they only dared to speak up against Chu Feng because Li Muzhi clearly reserved some reservations toward Chu Feng's suggestion.

This made them think that Li Muzhi wasn't fond of Chu Feng either. The only reason why he wasn't rejecting the idea was only because he was the one who had invited Chu Feng over and was sparing him some face. They felt that they could win Li Muzhi's approval if they were to speak up against Chu Feng at a time like this.

Their doubts were further affirmed when Li Muzhi didn't respond to their act of criticizing Chu Feng, which made them believe that they were making the correct choice here.

“You’re going too far here. Junior Chu Feng is someone who has broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record. Who else could be worthy if he’s unworthy? Has any of you broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record? Even if you might be stronger than him at the moment in terms of cultivation, that’s only because you’ve entered the sect ahead of him. Do you dare say that you wouldn’t be overtaken by him in a few years’ time?” Lu Long spoke up angrily.

Lu Long wasn’t close to Chu Feng in any way, but he was an extremely righteous person. He couldn’t stand watching these personal disciples acting all smugly just because their cultivation was a little stronger here.

“Senior Lu, it’s not our intention to make things difficult for Chu Feng either. It’s just that we’ve put in a lot of effort into this forging. We can’t allow the forging of the treasure to fail because of him!”

The other disciples explained.

Lu Long turned to Li Muzhi and asked, “Junior Li, what are your thoughts on this?”

“All of you are here to help me, and I consider you all my friends. So, let’s stop arguing for the time being. I know that it has been hard on all of you over the last few days, but I believe that you can tell that we won’t be able to finish forging the treasure prior to the opening of the Vicious Beast Hellworld at this rate. Rather than to persist on something that’s clearly unfeasible, I think that we ought to take a gamble here.

“I’ve made up my mind. Let’s try out Junior Chu Feng’s solution. Regardless of whether it works out or not, I’ll accept the outcome. If anyone is unwilling to work with Junior Chu Feng, feel free to back down now. I’ll not force you to do anything you don’t wish to,” Li Muzhi said.

“Junior Li, what are you saying? It’s not that we’re unwilling to work with Junior Chu Feng. It’s just that we don’t wish to see the failure of the forging of the treasure after everything you’ve done for it. However, since you’ve already made up your mind, we’ll heed your bidding,” Xu Langzhi quickly said.

“Senior Xu is right. We’ll heed Junior Li’s directives.”

The others nodded in agreement too.

“Since we have an agreement here, I hope that you can do your best here. However, I have a request here. If the forging succeeds based on what Junior Chu Feng mentions, I hope that you can apologize to him,” Li Muzhi said.

Xu Langzhi and the others hesitated upon hearing those words, but they eventually nodded quietly. They dared not to go against Li Muzhi’s will.

After that, Li Muzhi and the others worked together to remove the second formation before adding a new formation core on the forging formation so that Chu Feng could join in. Once the preparations were ready, they began channeling the forging formation once more.

What was different this time around was Chu Feng’s participation. They were going to channel the forging in accordance with Chu Feng’s method this time around, and the latter had guaranteed the success of it.

However, two hours soon passed, and the forging still wasn’t complete yet. Li Muzhi and the others ran out of energy and took a quick rest. After which, they dived back into the channeling and spent yet another two more hours on the formation, but they were still unable to finish the forging.

“Junior Chu Feng, didn’t you mention that things would work out as long as we do as you said? We’ve already tried it out twice, but it doesn’t look like we’re anywhere close to succeeding yet,” Xu Langzhi sneered.

There was no way he was going to give up on this opportunity to mock Chu Feng.

As for the others, they didn’t say a word at all, but the scornful looks they were directing toward Chu Feng said it all. They wanted to see Chu Feng embarrassed and humiliated.

Unexpectedly, Chu Feng didn’t appear awkward at all. He was unfazed by their remarks, and it only further infuriated them.

“Junior Chu Feng, you were the one who said that things would work out as long as we did as you instructed. We’ve already given it two tries, but nothing is happening at all. Shouldn’t you give us an explanation here?” one of the female disciples questioned Chu Feng.

“It’s not easy for Junior Chu Feng to control the energy coming in from the supporting formation. It’ll take him some time to adapt to the forging process,

so there's no need to panic just yet. Let's give it a few more times," Li Muzhi spoke up on Chu Feng's behalf.

However, Xu Langzhi didn't back down on Li Muzhi's account this time around. He continued pushing on, "Junior Li, Chu Feng was the one who declared confidently that he would be able to do it earlier on. I didn't say anything when we failed the first time and gave him a second chance, but we can't just allow him to do as he pleases again and again!

"The fact that we failed twice shows that his method doesn't work. Things will not work out even if we continue on trying! It took us a lot of effort to construct the second formation, but we dispelled it just because of what Chu Feng said. Even if we reconstruct it right now, we won't be able to make it in time anymore. We have to get Chu Feng to give a satisfactory explanation to us for this!"

Even Li Muzhi was put in a spot after hearing what Xu Langzhi said.

He was indeed the one in command here, but Xu Langzhi and the others had put in a lot of effort to help him too. Nevertheless, he still tried to help Chu Feng out.

"Junior Chu Feng has only joined us, so it's only normal for him to be unable to adapt to it. We've already worked on this for several days now, and what's the harm of giving it a few more tries?"

But all of a sudden, Chu Feng spoke up and said, "Junior Li, I've already adapted to this formation. The responsibility for failing to forge this treasure doesn't lie on me."

"Who else is responsible if not you? Are you going to say that we're responsible for it instead?" Xu Langzhi sneered.

"Indeed! Are you going to pin the blame on us then? Are we the pens who suggested the dispelling of the second formation?"

"How hilarious! I knew that he couldn't be trusted, and it was exactly as I'd thought! As soon as he realizes that his method doesn't work, he turns around and tries to shirk off responsibility! What a despicable scum he is!"

Seeing how Chu Feng was unwilling to admit to his mistakes, the others also began criticizing Chu Feng too. Their attitude was far more hostile than before.

To make things worse, Li Muzhi and Lu Long were not in a good position to speak up for Chu Feng either. After all, he was the one who gave the guarantee earlier on.

Chapter 4741: Successful Forging

Even though Li Muzhi and Lu Long weren't in a good position to stand up for Chu Feng, the latter didn't seem fazed by the pressure exerted by Xu Langzhi and the others at all. It was as if this matter had nothing to do with him at all.

His attitude made Xu Langzhi and the others even more infuriated.

"Chu Feng, you need to give us an explanation," Xu Langzhi said with a forceful tone.

It looked as if he would pursue this matter to the end as long as Chu Feng didn't give a satisfactory explanation.

"You're right. I can accept a failure or two, but I can't allow it to continue like this. I've already given you a chance, but you refused to treasure it. Since that's the case, you shouldn't blame me for this then," Chu Feng said.

Everyone was surprised to hear those words.

Li Muzhi asked directly, "Junior Chu Feng, what do you mean by that?"

"Senior Li, get Xu Langzhi to back out here and hand his formation core over to me too. I promise you that the forging will be successful," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, what do you mean by this?" Xu Langzhi roared in displeasure.

"You know deep well what I mean. I don't want to waste my breath with you." Chu Feng turned to Li Muzhi and continued on, "Senior Li, if I still am not able to succeed later on, I'll let you do as you deem fit."

"Junior Li, are you certain?" Li Muzhi asked with a frown.

He had already understood what Chu Feng meant.

“Yes, I’m certain about this,” Chu Feng replied affirmatively.

“Very well, I’ll let you do it your way. Senior Li, you should back down for the time being,” Li Muzhi turned to Xu Langzhi and said.

“Junior Li, we’ve already known one another for so many years. Do you trust him more than me?” Xu Langzhi looked deeply indignant.

“Senior Xu, Junior Chu Feng has already made it clear. What can I do? Let’s just do it this once. If it still doesn’t work, I’ll allow you to deal with Junior Chu Feng however you want.”

After saying those words, Li Muzhi turned to Chu Feng and said, “Junior Chu Feng, what do you think about it?”

“I have no qualms with that.” Chu Feng shrugged nonchalantly.

As for Xu Langzhi, he seemed to be deep in thought for a moment before he finally made up his mind.

“Fine. I’ll agree to this on Junior Li’s account. However, Chu Feng, I’ll make it clear first. This is your final chance. If you still fail over here, you need not dream of walking out of here with your own two feet!”

Xu Langzhi glared at Chu Feng coldly before finally walking out of the formation core.

Chu Feng turned a blind eye to Xu Langzhi’s threat, responding with just a calm smile. He proceeded to release his spirit power and meld the formation core Xu Langzhi was using earlier on with his own formation core.

Previously, Chu Feng was only guiding the flow of energy from the supporting formation, so they weren’t able to sense Chu Feng’s spirit power. However, this time around, Chu Feng was exerting his full power, such that they could feel the tremendous prowess of his spirit power fully.

His spirit power had already reached a level comparable to that of a rank eight Utmost Exalted level cultivator, towering far above all of them.

“Junior Chu Feng, you... you have already reached rank four Dragon Transformation Sensation?” Li Muzhi couldn’t help but ask.

“Just like the rest of you, I’m still at rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation,” replied Chu Feng.

“That’s impossible. Your spirit power is clearly that of a rank four Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist,” Li Muzhi replied in disbelief.

Chu Feng was indeed at rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation, but his world spiritist bloodline and the power of the Nine Dragon Saint Cloak raised his spirit power to a level comparable to that of a rank eight Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

However, he simply chuckled softly, not bothering to explain more. He knew that most people couldn’t imagine that he was able to raise his spirit power by two ranks through a treasure and bloodline.

Under Chu Feng’s full prowess, it didn’t take long before the formation core Xu Langzhi was in charge of fused together with Chu Feng’s.

“Senior Li, let’s begin once you recover your spirit power,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” Li Muzhi replied with a nod.

A moment later, after Li Muzhi and the others managed to regain their strength, they began the forging process. There were many ingredients placed in the middle of the formation, and these ingredients simply weren’t fusing together all this while.

But to their surprise, the ingredients actually began fusing together this time around.

Eventually, with the Demonsoul Grass as the base, they managed to forge two rings, two bracelets, and two necklaces.

“It worked! It really worked!”

Li Muzhi examined the items carefully, only to find that the medicinal energy had fused completely with the treasures. There was no doubt about it—they had succeeded!

“Why would it work out this time around?”

The others were also surprised and delighted, but more than that, they were confused. The success was so abrupt that it caught them by surprise.

In any case, they were delighted that things worked out perfectly... all except for one.

That single person felt only fright and horror, and he was no other than Xu Langzhi.

Li Muzhi turned eyes filled with rage toward Xu Langzhi and roared, "Xu Langzhi, how do you wish to explain this matter?"

The fact that the forging succeeded as soon as Xu Langzhi backed out showed that the problem lay with him.

"Junior Li, I... I also don't know what's going on! It must be Chu Feng. He must be messing around with me!" Xu Langzhi pointed a finger at Chu Feng as he exclaimed fearfully.

"Was I the one messing with you, or were you the one who messed with me? Every single formation core is of vital importance in this formation. It's only when everyone gives their all that the forging will succeed. However, you didn't infuse a single sliver of spirit power into the formation earlier on.

"Junior Li, you can check his spirit power. He didn't use any spirit power earlier, and he still consumed pills to regenerate his spirit power in order to put on the act. If I'm not mistaken, he should still be overflowing with spirit power right now, so much that he's going to suffer an internal injury from an excess of it. I reckon that he's probably trying his best to set up formations within his body so as to deplete his spirit power," Chu Feng said.

Shoosh!

Li Muzhi rushed forward to grab Xu Langzhi's wrist in order to check on the latter's spirit power, and his face swiftly turned awful.

Eventually, Li Muzhi hurled a fist onto Xu Langzhi's face and bellowed, "Xu Langzhi, are you tired of living?!"

This punch was definitely not for show. It harnessed such great power that it distorted half of Xu Langzhi's face, smashing him into the depths of the sea.

Despite so, Xu Langzhi quickly swam back up and kneeled down before Li Muzhi, crying, "Junior Li, please forgive me! I was just beguiled for a moment there. I didn't think that Chu Feng would really be able to control the energy of

the supporting formation, so I didn't give it my all. I didn't intend to harm him or sabotage you! You should know that I'm not that kind of person too!"

However, Li Muzhi and the other personal disciples who had spoken up for him earlier didn't trust his words at all. They stared at him with a complicated look in their eyes that carried a hint of scorn.

The evidence was more than enough to tell what had happened earlier, and there was no way Xu Langzhi could possibly talk his way out of this.

"Xu Langzhi, to think that I trusted you so much. Scram! From this day onward, you aren't a friend of mine anymore!" Li Muzhi roared angrily.

"Junior Li, I..."

"Scram!!!" none-LB)In

Xu Langzhi still wanted to explain his action, but he was met with an infuriated bellow from Li Muzhi. Shockingly, Li Muzhi's voice actually carried a hint of murderous intent.

Given so, Xu Langzhi dared not to continue lingering in the area anymore. He quickly rose into the air and left the area.

"Junior Chu Feng, we apologize for that earlier. We underestimated you earlier."

After Xu Langzhi left, the other personal disciples who made things difficult for Chu Feng earlier stepped forward and apologized to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew that they would apologize to him, especially since they were in the presence of Li Muzhi, but unexpectedly, their apology was sincere. They weren't just putting on a show before Li Muzhi here.

And what was even more unexpected was that Li Muzhi actually walked up to him and bowed down.

"Junior Chu Feng, I apologize for everything that has happened."

Li Muzhi had a remorseful look on his face, for he knew that he had distrusted Chu Feng for a moment there.

Chapter 4742: Another Level

Chu Feng didn't hold it against Li Muzhi and the others.

After assuring them that it was fine, he began setting up a formation that would increase his mental processing ability using the supporting formation. He didn't want to miss out on this opportunity. He wanted to see if the powerful supporting formation from the sect founder would aid him in unlocking the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

"I didn't expect Junior Chu Feng to have such high proficiency in world spiritist techniques. Among the juniors of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, I reckon that the only one who can match him is Xia Yan."

"Junior Chu Feng should have demonstrated his world spiritist technique earlier. If he had, we wouldn't have belittled him."

The other personal disciples stood by the side together with Li Muzhi and Lu Long as they watched Chu Feng set up the formation. As rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritists, they could tell that Chu Feng's control over his spirit power had reached an incredible level, far beyond their current reach.

If they thought of themselves as world spiritist prodigies, Chu Feng would be on a whole different level than them.

What Chu Feng was currently doing was more than enough to differentiate himself from them.

"He's someone who managed to defeat me once. How could he possibly be weak? In my view, it's only a matter of time before Xia Yan loses her position as the strongest world spiritist!" Li Muzhi said gleefully.

He was an incredibly proud person, such that he wasn't willing to let others know about his defeat. However, there was no doubt that Chu Feng's spirit power was above his, and the latter had managed to break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record not too long ago. *noVe.lb-In*

This made him think that it wasn't that much of an embarrassment for him to have lost to Chu Feng back then.

After Chu Feng finished setting up his formation, he stepped inside and started to activate it so as to increase his mental processing ability.

However, Li Muzhi and the others were suddenly horrified upon seeing this. Li Muzhi asked nervously, “Junior Chu Feng, shouldn’t you modify your formation a little?”

He was anxious because he realized that even though Chu Feng’s formation was formidable, there was a great chance that it might be overwhelmed by the immense prowess of the supporting formation and collapse.

“Junior Li, there’s no need to worry. I know what I’m doing,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

He proceeded to close his eyes before forming several hand seals, activating the formation for real.

Li Muzhi and the others couldn’t help but sweat profusely upon seeing this sight. It was only when the formation remained stable even after being activated for a while did they finally heave a sigh of relief.

At the same time, their perception of Chu Feng changed once more.

“What amazing control of spirit power!”

“Isn’t Junior Chu Feng’s skills as a world spiritist already above that of Xia Yan?”

“I can’t say much for the other aspects, but his feat of activating and controlling such a powerful formation without setting up a second stabilizing formation is amazing in itself. Xia Yan is definitely unable to do the same!”

The other personal disciples exclaimed in awe.

They were familiar with the supporting formation, and that was why they were shocked.

Chu Feng was using a method which they thought was completely infeasible to activate the formation, but he managed to pull off the impossible! To make an analogy, it was as if he was bathing into a whirlpool that would ravage anyone who tried to come close to it.

At this moment, they felt complete admiration for Chu Feng, for he had accomplished something which they felt that they might be unable to achieve in their entire life.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng couldn't hear what they were saying anymore. His attention was completely absorbed in driving the formation to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

To his delight, he found his mind clearing up more than ever under the effects of the formation, allowing him to notice some key clues. He was certain that he would be able to unseal the Fourth Essence at this rate. This made him excited yet worried at the same time.

According to the mysterious expert, his cultivation would rise as he continued to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, and this was the time to verify it. If his cultivation did rise with the unlocking of the Fourth Essence, he could possibly grow swiftly within a short period of time.

...

Other than the East Dragon, West Tiger, South Vermilion, and North Tortoise, there were many other neutral territories in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect too. Some of these territories were accessible to all disciples whereas others were limited to only members of a certain standing.

At this very moment, three people were standing in the depths of a cultivation location where only the most esteemed disciples could access. Two of them were Duanmu Xiang and Duan Yang whereas the last one was Xia Ran.

Xia Ran had regained his ability to walk, but his face remained incredibly pale. It was apparent that he had yet to fully recover from his injuries.

Xia Ran looked at the Duanmu Brothers in disappointment as he exclaimed, "Seniors, how could Hidden Dragon Disciples like you be afraid of Chu Feng?!"

As it turned out, after Xia Ran had regained his consciousness, he received a warning from the elders of the South Vermilion Hall not to make things difficult for Chu Feng anymore and admit his mistakes to him.

Xia Ran agreed to it on the surface, but he wasn't willing to let things rest just like that. So, he approached the Duanmu Brothers in hopes that the latter could teach Chu Feng a lesson on his behalf. That was also why the Duanmu Brothers provoked Chu Feng back then.

However, they didn't expect that Chu Feng would actually be able to find a backing so quickly, and it was actually someone with a high standing at that!

With Lu Long siding with Chu Feng, the Duanmu Brothers couldn't do anything at all.

"We aren't afraid of Chu Feng, but Lu Long is a different matter. He's a close buddy of Li Muzhi, and it's said that the two of them have braved through death before. Based on what I've heard, Lu Long brought Chu Feng to Li Muzhi's residence. Perhaps, it might even be Li Muzhi or Lord Li Fengxian's intention to help Chu Feng.

"You should know deep well who Li Muzhi and Li Fengxian are. They are people whom we can't afford to offend!" the Duanmu Brothers said.

"Seniors, do you still remember what my older sister told you?" Xia Ran asked.

"Junior Xia, you know deep well that we have no grudge with Chu Feng. If not for the fact that Junior Xia Yan told us to take care of you, we wouldn't have even provoked him in the first place. Putting aside whether he has backing or not, just the fact that he was able to break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record shows that he's no pushover. It's clearly unwise to make an enemy out of him. I believe that we have already shown enough respect to Junior Xia Yan by making a move here.

"Besides, we're aware of your grudge with Chu Feng, and you're the one who's at fault here. In any case, we've already done everything we could for you, so don't expect us to help you deal with Chu Feng anymore in the future. If you still want to provoke him, you should wait until Junior Xia Yan returns from her closed-door training."

The Duanmu Brothers seemed to have already made up their minds. After saying their piece, they turned around and left the area.

Xia Ran gritted his teeth furiously as killing intent flurried in his eyes.

Chapter 4743: Rank Seven Utmost Exalted Level

It had been four hours since Chu Feng activated the formation, and during this period of time, Li Muzhi and the others didn't leave the area at all. They were

standing outside the formation, chatting with one another while watching Chu Feng cultivate.

The formation which Chu Feng had set up was obviously a formation that increased one's mental processing ability. There wasn't anything particularly noteworthy of it, but even so, the gazes of Li Muzhi and the rest were still drawn to it.

Boom! nDvE)ℒ♂/In

All of a sudden, thunderous rumbling sounded in the sky above as the sunlight dimmed.

This phenomenon caught not just Li Muzhi's attention but that of the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was already enveloped in the calamitous phenomenon that threatened to destroy it, but at this very moment, another phenomenon was occurring on top of it.

A brilliant nine-colored bolt of lightning coiled around the sky, commanding a presence so imposing that it looked as if nine lightning beasts were threatening to rip the sky apart and destroy the land.

Even the initial calamitous phenomenon suddenly seemed to pale in comparison in the presence of this nine-colored lightning.

"This is the phenomenon triggered by someone who possesses the Heavenly Bloodline. Is someone going to make a breakthrough soon? But why does the phenomenon we see today appear much stronger than usual?"

"Much stronger than usual? That's a gross understatement! It looks as if it's going to destroy everything!"

"What a terrifying aura this is..."

"A phenomenon like this can't possibly be triggered by any ordinary person. Just who could it be?"

"Could it be that the Zuoqiu Brothers have made a breakthrough again?"

"That's impossible! The two of them have only just advanced their cultivation not too long ago. It's impossible for them to make a breakthrough now."

Besides, their breakthroughs wouldn't incur such a frightening phenomenon either."

"The phenomenon appears to be getting stronger and stronger. It looks almost as if it's going to fall down!"

"Who in the world could it be?"

Li Muzhi and the others fathomed guesses upon seeing the phenomenon in the sky.

Boom!

Finally, the phenomenon in the sky descended to the ground, but it caused Li Muzhi and the others to panic. To their horror, the phenomenon was actually racing their way!

"S-surely not?"

Li Muzhi and the others turned their sights to Chu Feng. They knew that the only one who could summon that phenomenon here was here.

While they knew that the phenomenon would only affect the Heavenly Bloodline possessor who summoned it, they still couldn't help but back away in fear of the immense destructive prowess harnessed within it.

Soon, the lightning bolt fell upon Chu Feng.

Once again, Li Muzhi and the others found themselves dumbfounded once more. Right before their eyes, they saw the terrifying phenomenon being absorbed by Chu Feng into his body!

It was not as if they hadn't seen Heavenly Bloodline possessors making a breakthrough before. Summoning the lightning was just the first step; one had to survive before its prowess in order to truly make a breakthrough.

However, never had they seen anyone deal with the nine-colored lightning as quickly as Chu Feng did.

"It's done!"

Chu Feng's eyes remained close, but joy was swiftly rippling through his heart. He had successfully made a breakthrough, raising his cultivation to rank seven Utmost Exalted level.

This was all thanks to the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor. In fact, the reason why the nine-colored lightning didn't faze him at all was due to it neutralizing the energy of the bolt of lightning. As long as the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor was looking out for him, he didn't need to worry about any trials arising from his breakthroughs at all.

All he had to do was to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, and everything would automatically fall into place.

Despite his breakthrough, Chu Feng didn't just stop there. He continued trying to decipher the part of the armor, but to his pity, he noticed that the formation had visibly gotten weakened after his breakthrough, and it was still weakening continuously at the moment.

He quickly took a look at the formation and realized that the supporting formation wasn't providing his formation any energy anymore.

"Senior Li, why did the energy coming in from the supporting formation suddenly weaken?" Chu Feng asked anxiously.

"Weaken? A-ah? It's really weakening! Why would this happen?"

Li Muzhi was clearly taken aback by the situation too.

"Junior Chu Feng, you really are incredible. Isn't the phenomenon you caused earlier a little too frightening? It looks like you possess extraordinary bloodline power on top of your spirit power."

However, Li Muzhi didn't pay too much heed to the anomaly. He was more concerned about Chu Feng's earlier breakthrough. The phenomenon was simply so tremendous that it shook him up.

On the other hand, Chu Feng was still unwilling to give up here. He tried to construct yet another stronger formation, but to his dismay, the supporting formation seemed to be rejecting him. It wouldn't accord him any help at all.

"Could it be that the supporting formation has lost its energy?"

Li Muzhi was initially paying it no heed, but he was starting to get nervous now. One must know that the supporting formation was of vital importance to them. If its energy had really dissipated, it would be a huge loss to them.

“Senior Li, come into my formation core and try activating my formation,” Chu Feng said as he walked out of his formation.

Li Muzhi wasn't sure what difference it would make, but he did as Chu Feng said anyway. Surprisingly, when he tried to activate the formation, the energy from the supporting formation immediately began flowing in right away.

“This... Why would it be like that?”

Li Muzhi and the others directed bewildered gazes at Chu Feng. They suddenly realized that things might not be as simple as they seemed. Very clearly, the supporting formation was still working normally for the others.

“Let me give it another try.”

Chu Feng entered his formation once more, but this time around, he got Li Muzhi to channel the formation core instead. Astonishingly, the energy from the supporting formation didn't flow this time around.

Chu Feng proceeded on to try a few other different methods, and eventually, he came to a conclusion.

It was not that the supporting formation had lost its energy, but for some reason, the supporting formation was refusing to lend its help to Chu Feng anymore, or to be more exact, enhance his mental processing ability.

Chu Feng had tried other formations later on, and the supporting formation worked perfectly fine for those. It was only when he set up formations that enhanced his mental processing speed that the supporting formation began playing dead.

“This is weird. Why would it turn out like this? Such a thing has never happened before.”

Li Muzhi and the others were baffled by the eerie happenings.

Chu Feng, on the other hand, had a vague answer in mind. It was likely to have something to do with the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, though he wasn't certain what exactly was going on.

Chapter 4744: Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Quarters

“This is really weird. Why would the supporting formation single a person out and only limit its support for mental processing enhancement formations? Such a thing has never happened before! Junior Chu Feng, don't worry. I'll ask my grandfather about this matter. He might have a solution for this,” Li Muzhi said.

He could tell that Chu Feng really needed help from the supporting formation.

“Thank you for your help, Senior Li.”

Chu Feng didn't reject Li Muzhi's goodwill since this was indeed something important to him.

“Senior Li, how is Yu Ting doing at the moment?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

This was something that he was very concerned about.

“Heh, I knew that you would ask about this. Don't worry, Yu Ting is doing fine. My grandfather kept her in our residence under the name of punishing her, but in truth, we're training her. She's currently in closed-door training at the moment. Once she's out, I'll bring her over to you,” Li Muzhi said.

“I really don't know how to thank you for your help,” Chu Feng said.

He didn't expect Lord Li Fengxian to not only spare Yu Ting from punishment but even take care of her. He felt that Li Fengxian was doing him a favor here by taking care of Yu Ting, so naturally, he felt extremely grateful to him.

After all, this was one of the things which he was the most worried about.

“You need not thank me. Junior Chu Feng, we didn't know each other well in the past, so it's only normal for misunderstandings to arise between us. However, we should be able to be considered as friends now.

“I, Li Muzhi, do have quite a bit of reputation in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. If anyone tries to make things difficult for you, you can put my name out

and say that you're my brother. If anyone still dares to trouble you, I'll head there personally to demand an explanation from them!" Li Muzhi thumped his chest as he said.

"Senior Li, I've taken your goodwill to heart. Similarly, if you ever require help, feel free to ask me. As long as it's within my abilities, I'll give it all I got," Chu Feng replied.

"Junior Chu Feng, I'll take your words for it then. Ah, speaking of which, our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect has five other supporting formations. Of them, one of them is in our sectmaster's private territory and three is in the other halls, so it might be hard for you to access those. However, one is located in the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall, and there's a mental enhancement formation there that is set up by a group of elders.

"You should head there and give it a try. Perhaps, the supporting formation there wouldn't suffer from the same problem," Li Muzhi said.

"Alright."

Actually, Chu Feng did have such intentions in mind. After all, his number one priority at the moment was to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

So, Li Muzhi, Lu Long, and the other four personal disciples headed over to the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall together with Chu Feng.

As its name suggested, the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall was a place for the disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to practice new martial skills. It was divided into three levels.

The first level was accessible to all disciples, the second level was limited to personal disciples and Hidden Dragon Disciples, and the third level could only be accessed by Hidden Dragon Disciples.

Fortunately, the supporting formation was located at the first level, so Chu Feng could access it without any trouble.

Chu Feng was able to gain some understanding of the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall from Li Muzhi's explanation, but even so, he still ended up underestimating the scale of it.

The Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall was located at the peak of a mountain that stood alone in the midst of a forest, reminiscent of a grand tower amidst the clouds.

There was a formation in the clouds that prevented Chu Feng from seeing through it with his spirit power. Unless he were to scale to its top, he wouldn't be able to see the true face of the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall.

There was also a pressure around the mountain that prevented one from flying up to it. One had to take the winding stairs around the mountain in order to access the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall.

It would have surely been toiling for any ordinary human to scale such a tall mountain, but for Chu Feng and the others, this was no more than a walk in the park. It would have only taken them only an instant to dash from the bottom of the mountain to the peak.

But surprisingly, all of those walking to and fro the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall didn't hasten their footsteps at all. They were walking at a leisurely pace.

According to Li Muzhi, this was a sign of respect toward the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall. Since this was a convention, Chu Feng and the others had no choice but to heed it.

While it did delay them by quite a bit, overall, Chu Feng still enjoyed the atmosphere of the hike. There was a huge crowd on the winding path, but amazingly, there was no din at all. Those who walked by them would simply bow slightly to Li Muzhi before walking away.

Other than footsteps, there was hardly any voice to be heard at all. Those who had to speak would choose to lower their voice to less than a whisper.

The symbolism of this was obvious to Chu Feng even without anyone explaining it to him. It was simply a sign of respect from the disciples to this location.

The Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall was a place where legacies from the preceding generations were passed down, so it could be said to be a sacred place for the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

That being said, it was still inevitable that Chu Feng and Li Muzhi would still garner quite a bit of stares along the way. No one said a thing at all, but their

expressions were more than enough to tell Chu Feng that they were gossiping discreetly amongst themselves.

There were even some who used voice transmission to greet Chu Feng as well, asking him if he was the new disciple who broke Lord Dugu Lingtian's record.

Clearly, Chu Feng's reputation was growing larger and larger, and it wouldn't be long before he became a figure whom no one knew not of in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

However, perhaps it was due to Li Muzhi's presence too, most of the voice transmission and gazes Chu Feng received had been rather amicable. There was no hostility directed toward him.

This was the first time Chu Feng saw such a harmonious sight to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

At the top of the mountain, Chu Feng found himself faced not with a hall but a massive spirit formation gate. This spirit formation gate stood at over ten thousand meters in height, and there was no particular decoration or ornament on it. Nevertheless, its sheer size still gave it quite a majestic presence.

There was a stone tablet placed horizontally above the spirit formation gate that wrote 'Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall'. By passing through the spirit formation gate, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at their destination.

It was like a whole new world before them.

The first thing that Chu Feng saw with his eyes upon passing through the spirit formation gate was an ocean. There was a sea breeze, and waves were crashing down.

The ocean stretched far and wide, seemingly having no end in sight... and this was no other than the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall.

Chu Feng could sense that the supporting formation was located in the water, or to be more exact, the entire ocean itself was the supporting formation.

At the heart of the supporting formation, there was a staircase that rose to the sky, leading toward the second level of the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall.

On top of that, there were also massive fluorescences floating on the surface of the ocean. Its light was reminiscent of fireflies, but they were sized like watermelons, floating quietly as if they had lives of their own.

These fluorescences were the martial skills and secret arts of the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall.

Chapter 4745: Top of the Personal Disciples

“There are actually so many martial skills here?” Chu Feng remarked in astonishment.

He couldn't see to the end of the ocean, but even so, the number of martial skills that he could see was already countless. If so, many martial skills were there in the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall? n((OvelbIn

Seemingly having guessed Chu Feng's thoughts, a voice transmission was relayed to Chu Feng. It was from Lu Long.

“Many of the martial skills are copies, but there are indeed many martial skill manuals in the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall. However, the strongest martial skill in the first level is only at rank four Exalted Taboo, so I reckon that the manuals here are useless to you.

“You should quickly raise your position to that of a personal disciple. If so, you'll be able to enter the second level, which contains rank five and rank six Exalted Taboo Martial Skills. That should be much more useful to you,” Lu Long told Chu Feng via voice transmission.

“Senior Lu, the positions of personal disciple and Hidden Dragon Disciples are only limited to the juniors. Would a sect member be able to access the second level if he's unable to become a personal disciple within a hundred years of age?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“For sect members of beyond a hundred years of age, the criterion will be their cultivation instead. Rank one Martial Exalted cultivators can access the second level whereas rank three Martial Exalted level cultivators can access the third level,” Lu Long replied.

“I see.”

Chu Feng nodded in response.

The two of them continued rushing forward while chatting with one another, and it didn't take them long to arrive at the heart of the supporting formation. There were many formidable formations here that could raise one's intelligence, and they were set up by the elders of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect with the intent of hastening the cultivation speed of the disciples.

However, the strongest ones had already been occupied, but Chu Feng decided to set one up by himself.

When Chu Feng stepped into the formation he constructed, he was glad to see that the supporting formation wasn't resisting him anymore. However, he realized that the supporting formation here provided much less energy to him as compared to the one in Elder Li Fengxian's residence.

Nevertheless, he still gave it a try.

Just as he expected, the supporting formation here wasn't enough for him to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor. Seeing that it was ineffective, he stood up and left the area.

As for his destination... he was aware that the North Tortoise Hall had a supporting formation too, and it was located in the territory of the North Tortoise Hall's chief elder.

Considering that the chief elder carried goodwill toward him, he felt that the other party should agree to his request to allow him to use it.

However, when Chu Feng walked out of the formation, he immediately noticed that something was amiss. Li Muzhi, Lu Long, and the others who had followed Chu Feng here had already left the area, leaving behind just a female disciple.

This female disciple went by the name of Zhao Shi, and her cultivation was to rank seven Utmost Exalted level. She was a personal disciple whose spirit power had reached rank three Dragon Transformation Sensation.

While she had humiliated Chu Feng together with Xu Langzhi earlier, she earnestly apologized to him after seeing that the forging of the treasure was indeed a success. So, his impression of her wasn't that bad.

She was another one who oppressed the weak but feared the strong, but at least she wasn't unrepentant.

What Chu Feng noticed was amiss wasn't just about Li Muzhi and the others' absence, but that there were over a dozen people standing outside of the formation Chu Feng had set up, staring intently at him. From the looks of it, they seemed to have been waiting for him.

And it looked like they didn't have kind intentions at heart.

They were all disciples from the East Dragon Hall, personal disciples at that.

"Junior Chu Feng, Junior Li Muzhi and Senior Lu Long have headed to the second level because they have some matters to attend to, but they said that they would be right back," Zhao Shi quickly spoke aloud.

She was doing this intentionally to let the others know that Chu Feng was accompanied by Li Muzhi and Lu Long so that these personal disciples would think twice before making a move of Chu Feng.

At the same time, she sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng too.

"Junior Chu Feng, these people are all personal disciples. The one with a birthmark on his left face is Nangong Yuliu. He used to be a Hidden Dragon Disciple, but he was demoted to a personal disciple after he was defeated by Junior Li. Currently, he's the strongest one of the personal disciples.

"He has been in closed-door training ever since his defeat to Junior Li, declaring that he wouldn't come out of his seclusion till he finally made a breakthrough, which meant that it's very likely that he has already reached rank nine Utmost Exalted level. On top of that, his grandmother, Lord Nangong Chunyue, is also one of the Hidden Dragon Elders of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

"In any case, be it in terms of strength or background, Nangong Yuliu is not anywhere inferior to that of Junior Li. He clearly has hostile intentions in mind, and his target seems to not just be Junior Li but you as well.

"If he says anything awful afterward, please don't talk back to him. Let's wait for Junior Li to return and have them deal with Nangong Yuliu instead," Zhao Shi advised Chu Feng.

"Are you Chu Feng from the North Tortoise Hall? I heard that you're quite a familiar figure, having broken even Lord Dugu Lingtian's record. It's just that I

wonder if you really accomplished it with your true strength or that you have resorted to lowly means in order to do it,” Nangong Yuliu remarked coldly.

Realizing that an interesting show was cooking up before them, more and more disciples began gathering in the area.

“Are you looking for me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I heard that an elder of our East Dragon Hall has extended an invitation to you, only for you to insist on going to the North Tortoise Hall. Are you looking down on our East Dragon Hall? Or is it because you know that you’re all fake, so you dare not to join our East Dragon Hall lest you are exposed?” Nangong Yuliu asked.

“This senior over here, we have no grudge between us, so why do you seem intent on provoking me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m provoking you? Do I sound that way? You over there, does it sound like I’m provoking Chu Feng?” Nangong Yuliu turned to a personal disciple around him and asked.

“Senior Nongong, you’re just greeting him normally. That man is just too narrow-minded that he’s twisting your intentions. How insolent! You should teach people like him a lesson, or else he would sully the reputation of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect!”

The personal disciples around Nangong Yuliu immediately understood his intention and quickly began putting Chu Feng down.

“You said that I was provoking you earlier? So what if I am? What can you do about it?” Nangong Yuliu stared at Chu Feng with narrowed eyes.

At the same time, the personal disciples behind him also began moving to encircle Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had already expected such a turn of events, and a cold sneer formed on his lips.

Seeing how Chu Feng was smiling instead of panicking, Nangong Yuliu asked in displeasure, “What are you smiling at?”

“Nothing much. I just want to remind you of one thing,” Chu Feng replied.

“Oh? You want to remind us of something? Very well, let’s see what you have to say then.”

The personal disciples behind Nangong Yuliu burst into laughter, and Chu Feng went along with them too.

“I want to remind you that there’s a limit to my patience.”

Chapter 4746: The Arrogant Nangong Yuliu

Two contrasting sights occurred. Nangong Yuliu’s face immediately darkened in anger whereas Zhao Shi’s face paled in fright.

“Senior Nangong, Junior Chu Feng doesn’t mean that!”

Seeing that things were turning awry, Zhao Shi quickly stepped forward and attempted to explain on Chu Feng’s behalf.

Pah!

However, Nangong Yuliu waved his sleeves and landed a resounding slap on Zhao Shi’s face. At the same time, he released his aura, fully displaying his cultivation as a rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

He had indeed made a breakthrough in his recent closed-door training.

“Zhao Shi, are you really Li Muzhi’s lackey? How dare you talk back to me! Are you even worthy of addressing me?”

Nangong Yuliu glared at Zhao Shi, treating the latter as if she was some maid instead of a personal disciple.

“Senior Nangong, I have no intention of rebutting you. It’s just that...”

Despite being struck in public, Zhao Shi didn’t lose her temper at all. Instead, she continued explaining with a subservient attitude.

Tzlala!

But while Zhao Shi was explaining, the crackling of lightning suddenly sounded behind her. Everyone turned their gazes over, only to be shocked by what they saw.

A Lightning Mark had appeared on top of Chu Feng's forehead, and his body was cloaked in Lightning Armor.

"This fellow! He's actually able to use both the Lightning Mark and the Lightning Armor despite only being at Utmost Exalted level?"

"No, that's not right. What's wrong with his aura? Isn't he supposed to be only a sixth rank Utmost Exalted level cultivator?"

"His cultivation actually reached rank nine Utmost Exalted level after using the Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor... Doesn't that mean that his cultivation has already reached rank seven Utmost Exalted level?"

"Wait a moment, is it possible that the phenomenon earlier on was caused by him?"

The crowd had complicated looks on their faces upon sensing Chu Feng's aura. They had already heard rumors about his Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor, but his current cultivation had surpassed their expectations.

They couldn't help but recall the terrifying phenomenon they had seen earlier, and that jolted their hearts greatly. The phenomenon was simply too frightening that it rattled them up greatly.

However, Chu Feng couldn't care less about their current thoughts. There was fury burning in his eyes, and they were directed at one person—Nangong Yuliu.

"Junior Chu Feng, calm down for a moment!"

Zhao Shi quickly rushed toward Chu Feng and held him tightly, not wanting him to make a move.

"What's with your gaze? Are you intending to make a move against me?"

Even though Chu Feng's cultivation had reached rank nine Utmost Exalted level as well, Nangong Yuliu didn't think much of him. His eyes were still filled with scorn, showing that he thought little of the other party.

"For hitting a woman for no reason, you deserve to die," Chu Feng said.

“Very well, give it a try then. I would like to see which of us is going to die today!” Nangong Yuliu replied disdainfully.

“Junior Chu Feng, calm down! You mustn’t make a move here!”

Zhao Shi grabbed onto Chu Feng even tighter as she knew that things would be extremely disadvantageous to Chu Feng if he were to start the fight here.

“If you dare not do it, just say so. If you really want a fight, would Zhao Shi be able to stop you?” Nangong Yuliu sneered.

“Senior Zhao, you were slapped due to me, so I must get it back for you. Don’t blame me for this,” Chu Feng said as he pushed Zhao Shi away.

“Hold it right there!”

All of a sudden, a figure rushed forward and blocked Chu Feng’s path. He was no other than Li Muzhi. He grabbed Chu Feng’s wrist tightly, stopping the latter from making a move.

“Nangong Yuliu, as a personal disciple, don’t you feel embarrassed for picking on a junior who has just joined our sect not too long ago?”

Lu Long also soon appeared on the scene too.

“Lu Long, how in the world am I picking on a junior here? It’s that insolent Chu Feng who showed an utter lack of respect for his seniors that tried to stir a fight,” Nangong Yuliu sneered.

“You were the one who provoked me earlier and slapped Senior Zhao. Someone of you isn’t worthy of respect,” Chu Feng remarked.

Li Muzhi and Lu Long quickly understood the situation. Based on their understanding of Nangong Yuliu, they were much more inclined to trust Chu Feng’s words.

Li Muzhi patted Chu Feng’s shoulders and said, “Junior Chu Feng, leave this matter to me.”

“Li Muzhi, are you intending to teach me a lesson on Chu Feng’s behalf? It just so happens that I was looking for you too. It’s about time for you to hand over your position as a Hidden Dragon Disciple!” Nangong Yuliu said.

“If you want to challenge me, you could have just chosen a date and send a challenge letter openly. I would be more than willing to accept your challenge. However, you have gone overboard by striking Senior Zhao, and you have to give me an explanation for that. Right now, apologize to Senior Zhao!” Li Muzhi said.

“You want me to apologize to Zhao Shi? What are you going to do if I refuse?” Nangong Yuliu sneered.

With a wave of his sleeves, a streak of light darted toward Li Muzhi. The latter raised his hand to grab the streak of light, only to notice that it was a letter.

“Here is the challenge letter. Three days from now, I’ll be officially challenging you on the Hidden Dragon Combat Ring for your Hidden Dragon Disciple position.”

After saying those words, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, did you think that Li Muzhi would be able to shield you? He’s already in a difficult position himself. Don’t even think that you’ll become a second Dugu Lingtian just because you have broken his record once. It’s nothing more than mere luck. Did you really think that you’re a real prodigy?”

“I, Chu Feng, has never said that I’m a prodigy, but it’s a fact that it’s my name—and not yours—that is being inscribed on the Snowy Heavenly Peak. Instead of wasting your breath on meaningless provocations, why don’t you head there and try to change that name to yours? That would have been a much better way to boost your ego,” Chu Feng sneered in response.

“What a joke! You think that you’re everything just because you broke a record. It’s all mere luck! Don’t say that I’m not giving you a chance to get even! The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is going to open very soon, and there’s Dugu Lingtian’s record there too. If you can break the record, I’ll apologize to Zhao Shi and allow her to slap me back ten times. However, if you aren’t able to do so, I’ll send you a tablet which you are to carry on you no matter where you go,” Nangong Yuliu sneered.

“Junior Chu, this is a small matter. I’m fine.”

Zhao Shi quickly spoke up, not wanting Chu Feng to accept this bet.

“Chu Feng, aren’t you intending to stand up for Zhao Shi? I’m giving you an opportunity here, but are you backing down out of fear here?” Nangong Yuliu asked.

“Very well, I’ll accept your challenge,” Chu Feng replied.

“At least you have guts. Since that’s the case, I shall prepare the tablet right away. You should also prepare yourself too, for you’ll be wearing my tablet no matter where you go in the future. You can’t be blessed with good luck forever.”

Leaving those words behind, Nangong Yuliu turned around and left.

Lu Long walked over to Chu Feng’s side and exclaimed, “Junior Chu Feng, you’re too reckless! Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record can’t possibly be broken that easily, so how could you accept that request?”

“I can’t let Senior Zhao get slapped for nothing, right?” Chu Feng replied.

Chapter 4747: Acknowledgment

Zhao Shi was moved by Chu Feng’s words. She was a person with some standing in the sect too, and she stood tall before most of the other disciples, enjoying their looks of admiration.

How could someone in such a position not be angry to be slapped in public? It was impossible for her to be unfazed even after getting humiliated in public!

However, it just so happened that Nangong Yuliu was someone whose standing and strength were far above hers. Even Li Muzhi and Lu Long dared not to fully turn their backs against him.

So, she could only tolerate it, and that was what she did too.

She never thought that someone would dare to stand up for her even after she had resigned herself to fate, and that person would be no other than Chu Feng.

It hadn’t been long since she had met Chu Feng, and they had hardly any ties between them... In fact, she had even mocked and humiliated him at one point in time.

There was completely no reason for Chu Feng to help her at all.

Overwhelmed with gratitude, her tears began dripping.

“Junior Zhao, what are you crying for? Junior Chu Feng has already accepted such an overboard challenge from Nangong Yuliu for your sake, so why are you still crying?”

Lu Long looked at Zhao Shi with a hint of reproach. He didn't want to blame her for this either, but he really felt that Chu Feng shouldn't have accepted the request.

“Senior Zhao, stop crying. You don't need to be afraid. Even if I win, you can choose not to hit Nangong Yuliu if you're worried about offending him. However, he's at fault for daring to hit you today, and I can't let this matter slip just like that. I'll have him apologize to you properly,” Chu Feng comforted Zhao Shi.

“Junior Chu Feng, it's all my fault. You shouldn't have put yourself in such a spot for me. I'll look for Nangong Yuliu and talk to him on your behalf. I'll have him cancel the bet.”

Zhao Shi sobbed even harder than ever.

“Senior Zhao, don't bother. You won't be able to change his mind. Besides, this is no longer a conflict between you and Nangong Yuliu anymore. It's also a fight between him and me. I know what I'm doing here, so you don't have to worry. Records are there to be broken, so have some faith in me. You're making it seem like I'll lose for sure,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“Indeed, what Junior Chu Feng says makes sense. Junior Zhao, you should stop crying. It's inauspicious, and you're only going to lower Junior Chu Feng's morale,” Lu Long said.

Hearing those words, Zhao Shi quickly wiped away her tears, fearing that her crying would really affect Chu Feng.

Li Muzhi patted Chu Feng's shoulder and sent him a voice transmission.

“Junior Chu Feng, you need not worry. Even if you lose, you can just disregard his request altogether. I'm only sparing him some face because my grandfather is cooperating with Nangong Yuliu's grandmother on some matters at the moment, and Nangong Yuliu's grandmother dotes on him a lot. I just don't want my interpersonal relationship to affect my grandfather's plans.

“Once the matter is over, I’ll make sure to teach Nangong Yuliu a lesson he won’t forget. As for you and Senior Zhao, you can be assured that I won’t allow you to be bullied for no reason.

Li Muzhi’s words affirmed Chu Feng’s guess.

Chu Feng could tell that Li Muzhi wasn’t the type of person to shy away from a conflict, but if this matter concerned his grandfather as well, it was understandable for him to hesitate a little.

After chatting for a bit, Chu Feng returned to the North Tortoise Hall.

To his surprise, he found Elder Dao Qnian, Law Enforcement Elder Li Boyi, and the chief elder waiting for him. As it turned out, the affairs over at the Hidden Dragon Martial Arts Hall had already gotten to their ears, and they had learned about the bet between him and Nangong Yuliu.

They were worried for Chu Feng and wanted to advise him to apologize to Nangong Yuliu, hoping to resolve this matter peacefully. After all, Nangong Yuliu was different from Xia Ran. If Nangong Yuliu wanted to make things hard for Chu Feng, even the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall would find it hard to stop him.

However, there was no way that Chu Feng would apologize to Nangong Yuliu, though he didn’t want the elders to worry about him too. So, he assured them that even if he won the bet, he wouldn’t make things difficult for Nangong Yuliu. If he happened to lose, he would also accept the punishment.

Seeing that Chu Feng had already made up his mind, they decided not to say anything more. However, there was a look of guilt on their face, which was understandable since they were supposed to protect him as elders of the North Tortoise Hall. Yet, all they could do when something happened was to ask him to apologize.

As for Chu Feng, he had no intention of blaming the North Tortoise Hall. He had chosen to join the North Tortoise Hall knowing the consequences of his decision, and he was the one who had decided to make an enemy out of Nangong Yuliu too. He would accept whatever came out of it.

When he requested to use the chief elder’s supporting formation, the latter agreed right away upon realizing that he could at least offer a bit of help to him.

So, Chu Feng quickly went over to the chief elder's territory and set up his formation. To his relief, he was indeed able to use its power.

However, while the North Tortoise Hall's supporting formation had come from the sect founder too, it was relatively weaker. It was unable to aid him in making a breakthrough.

Nevertheless, he didn't lose hope due to that. On the contrary, he thought that it was a piece of good news since it meant that he could use the other supporting formations too.

After asking about it, he learned that the supporting formations over at the South Vermilion Hall and West Tiger Hall weren't too much weaker than the one at the East Dragon Hall. Needless to say, the one taken by the sectmaster was the strongest of all.

Taking a quick calculation, it had only been a few days since Chu Feng had entered the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but he had already managed to make a breakthrough. If everything went well, his cultivation should continue to soar afterward. Perhaps, he might just be able to reach Martial Exalted level very soon.

This was something which Chu Feng dared not think about in the past, but it was finally already within sight.

If he could reach Martial Exalted level, he wouldn't have to fear even the Holy Light Clan. Of course, he still wouldn't be strong enough to confront the Holy Light Clan directly, but at least he wouldn't be completely helpless before their tyranny either.

Time swiftly passed by, and soon, it was time to head to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake for the tempering.

The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake was a cultivation formation set up by the sect founder, and it was usually sealed off by a formation. The sealing formation hadn't been released yet, but it was transparent, which allowed Chu Feng to see the true form of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake even from afar.

It consisted of six black mountains that looked just like six fingers rising from the ground, looking a little eerie. There was a huge name inscribed on the six mountains—Dugu Lingtian.

When Chu Feng saw that name, he couldn't help but feel a surge of excitement in his heart. To him, this name represented glory, and he wanted to take this glory for his own.

If he could succeed here, it would be his greatest chip to earning the acknowledgment of the sectmaster.

Chapter 4748: Challenging With My Life

The closer he got, the more disciples there were. He began spotting disciples from the other three halls too.

Regardless of whether they were from the West Tiger Hall, South Vermilion Hall, or East Dragon Hall, they broke out in gossips as soon as they saw Chu Feng. He became the star of the show as soon as he arrived at the scene.

Chu Feng had just entered into the Hidden Dragon Martial, being the newest batch of newcomers. Yet, he actually managed to break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record and was evaluated to possess god aptitude. Besides that, the news that he joined the competition over Zi Ling and made a bet with Nangong Yuliu had also caused a huge commotion too.

His name was constantly on the tip of people's mouth as everyone gossiped about him in intrigue.

But compared to the past, these disciples no longer just looked at him in disdain anymore. Instead, there was fear in their eyes.

They knew deep well that none of them was a match for Chu Feng, so they dared not compete themselves with him.

"Senior Chu Feng."

Two familiar figures appeared from the East Dragon Hall. They were Hua Xu and Tu Yuanyuan.

"Senior Chu Feng, did you really make a bet with Nangong Yuliu?" Tu Yuanyuan asked, worried about Chu Feng.

"Indeed," Chu Feng replied with a nod.

"Why are you so reckless?" Tu Yuanyuan exclaimed nervously.

“You don’t trust me? Or do you think that I’m unable to do it?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“That’s not what I mean. It’s just that I don’t think it’s wise for you to be putting such a high stake on something uncertain. Besides, I heard that Nangong Yuliu has quite a powerful background. Even if you win, it would only deepen the grudge between the two of you, bringing you endless trouble in the future. You should have properly thought things through before making a move here!”

Tu Yuanyuan was so anxious that she was stomping her feet, but there was nothing she could do.

“Don’t worry, I know what I’m doing,” Chu Feng replied.

Seeing how assured Chu Feng was, Tu Yuanyuan was in no position to say anything. She could only hope for the best for him.

At the same time, a voice transmission was relayed into Chu Feng’s ears. It was from Hua Xu.

“Chu Feng, I’ve already told my elder about the matter concerning Elder Ouyang Che. His punishment has already been sentenced, and it’ll undermine the authority of my elder if he were to retract on his decision right now. So, it’ll take a lengthy process to slowly bring Elder Ouyang Che back into the East Dragon Hall. But regardless, my elder has already promised me to get this matter done,” Hua Xu said.

This was the matter which Chu Feng had tasked Hua Xu with, so he was glad to see how the latter was taking it seriously.

Soon, their group arrived at the outer perimeter of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. There was a sect protector guarding the lake, and he was a black-haired old man with a scar on his face.

When the time was finally ripe, he opened the spirit formation gate and allowed the disciples into the midst of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

As Chu Feng approached the lake, he was finally able to get a complete look of the area. Beneath the six mountains that rose high into the sky, there were seven lakes. Six of these lakes were independent, located at the foot of each of the mountains, whereas the seven one was a convergence from those six lakes.

The water from the six lakes were constantly flowing toward the seventh lake at a fast pace, such that it was impossible to see it without paying close attention.

Beside the seventh lake, there was a stone monument erected that contained the word 'Forbidden'. The same 'Forbidden' word was also inscribed with spirit power above it as well.

This 'Forbidden' word stretched like a humongous net, covering the entirety of the seventh formation. However, it seemed to only serve as a warning as it didn't seal off the lake.

This 'Forbidden' word wasn't part of the formation that the sect founder constructed but was added later on by someone else.

"Undergoing the tempering of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake will awaken your energy, allowing you to fuse together as one with the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. You'll finally be able to experience the natural energies of the sect. As long as you can complete the tempering, it'll surely greatly aid you in your cultivation in the future.

"However, you should know that it's possible to fail the tempering too, and you would have to wait another five years if that were to happen. Fortunately, it's unlikely that you'll fail as long as you accept the tempering normally. So, make sure to remain sharp, don't let your attention waver, and make sure not to bite off what you can't chew."

The protector guarding the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake began to impart the tempering method to Chu Feng at the others.

Due to the unique energy contained within the lake, they would have to put on a special dao robe before entering its midst. There was a formation inscribed on the dao robe which would further enhance the effects of the tempering if they were to use it in unison with a special method.

After the briefing by the sect protector, the disciples began orderly heading into the lake.

The protector had clearly mentioned that the energy in the seventh lake was too great for any for them to bear, and disallowed any disciples from heading there, so none of the disciples headed in that direction. Yet, Chu Feng walked straight up to it.

“That disciple over there, what are you saying?”

Upon seeing that Chu Feng was approaching the seventh lake, the protector immediately bellowed at him furiously.

His bellow swiftly caught the attention of all of the disciples, making Chu Feng the center of attention once more.

“Lord Protector, I would like to try entering that lake,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re Chu Feng, right? I’m aware of your bet with Nangong Yuliu, and I know that you wish to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record and change the name on the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake to yours. However, didn’t you hear what I mentioned earlier? Do you know how dangerous the seventh lake is?”

“If you aren’t able to control its power, you’ll only end up swallowed by it. No one will be able to save you,” the protector said.

“Lord Protector, I’m well aware of the risks. I’ll accept whatever that comes out of my decision,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you’re a disciple of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so I still want to give you some words of advice. The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is different from the Snowy Heavenly Peak. Don’t ruin your future over your vanity,” the protector advised.

While it was clear that the protector did mean Chu Feng well, the scorn in his voice was rather apparent too. It was his responsibility as a protector to warn Chu Feng in advance, but he didn’t have high expectations for the latter. In fact, he felt that Chu Feng was only entering the seventh formation for the sake of fulfilling his own vanity.

“Lord Protector, I would still like to give it a try,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and said.

He had already made up his mind, and no one would be able to change his decision anymore.

“You may enter the seventh formation if you want to. I’ve already said everything that ought to be said. I shan’t stop you if you insist on entering, but I won’t take responsibility for anything that happens to you.

“However, Chu Feng, even if you can endure the power inside the lake, you only have an hour’s time. If you aren’t able to light up the formation within an hour, you won’t be able to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record. If so, I want you to get up right away, or else the water in the lake will start rampaging, and no one will be able to save you by then,” the protector warned.

Chu Feng’s impression of the protector changed a little upon hearing those words. He thought that the latter was simply underestimating him, but it seemed like he was earnestly doing his job here.

“Thank you for your advice, Lord Protector.”

Before the eyes of the crowd, Chu Feng clasped his fist and leaped straight into the seventh formation covered with the ‘Forbidden’ word.

Chapter 4749: Harmed

Chu Feng immediately began absorbing the energy from the lake using the method imparted to him and the ability of the dao robe, starting the tempering process. The other disciples also headed to their respective lakes and started doing the same too.

Time passed swiftly, and soon, it looked like an hour’s time was going to be up. Many of the disciples had already stopped cultivating and turned their gaze toward Chu Feng.

They wanted to know if Chu Feng would be able to break Dugu Lingtian’s record. They weren’t sure how it could be done, but as long as the formation inside the lake lit up and the name above the mountain changed, it would mean that the deed had been done.

Earlier, the protector clearly mentioned that Chu Feng had an hour’s time. If he couldn’t succeed in an hour’s time, he would have to leave the lake right away, or else he would risk losing his life.

It was going to be an hour soon, but the name above the mountains and even the lake itself hadn’t shown the slightest change at all.

Chu Feng also opened his eyes to look at the lake and the top of the mountains, but upon seeing that nothing had happened, he closed his eyes once more to concentrate on his tempering.

“Chu Feng, time is going to be up soon. If you don’t want to die, get up right now.”

But as soon as Chu Feng closed his eyes, the protector immediately urged him to come up to shore.

“Lord Protector, I would like to continue trying. I can’t afford to lose here.”

Chu Feng’s voice sounded a little anxious. He didn’t want to fail here.

“Chu Feng, a person should know his place. If you are able to break all of Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records, wouldn’t that mean that you’re someone who can surpass our sectmaster and even Lord Dugu Lingtian? You might have succeeded the first time out of luck, but luck won’t continue siding with you all the time. Hurry up and come up.”

There was a mocking smile on the protector’s lips when he said those words.

However, Chu Feng still showed no signs of rising from the lake. He simply ignored the protector’s words altogether.

“Senior Chu Feng, you’re really running out of time,” Tu Yuanyuan couldn’t help speaking up too.

If Chu Feng didn’t come out by the hour’s mark, the lake would really swallow him whole. That would be disastrous.

“Haaa, he’s really going to pay a heavy price at this rate.”

“Looks like he’s blinded by his own pride.

“He overestimated himself. Did he really think that he’s a prodigy on par with Lord Dugu Lingtian?”

The disciples present began gossiping amongst themselves while watching the sight too.

Weng!

All of a sudden, a pillar of light shone from the seventh formation Chu Feng was in. The light pillar swiftly split into six rays and gushed into the other six lakes, inducing a reaction in them.

“This... Does this mean that he’s really going to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record?”

Upon seeing this sight, the disciples all had complicated looks on their faces, especially for those who talked badly about Chu Feng earlier. It was obvious to them that Chu Feng was already on the verge of succeeding.

“Chu Feng, your life takes priority! Hurry up and come out!” the protector bellowed.

Not only so, he even raised his hand and released a burst of energy that wrapped itself around Chu Feng. He was intending to intentionally drag Chu Feng out of the lake.

Hulalalala!

However, as soon as the protector’s energy came into contact with Chu Feng, the water in the seventh lake suddenly flurried, forming a whirlpool that dragged Chu Feng in.

The light within the lake vanished in an instant.

“Lord Protector, hurry up and retract your energy!”

Chu Feng opened his eyes and glared at the protector.

“Chu Feng, even if you have managed to trigger the formation’s energy, it’ll still take some time for you to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record. There isn’t enough time here. The energy inside the lake has started to devour you. I’m saving you over here!”

The protector showed no sign of giving it a rest.

“Lord Protector, retract your energy right away!” Chu Feng bellowed.

“Chu Feng, wake up your idea and struggle free of the lake! If you continue remaining in there, you’ll only lose your life!” the protector advised while insisting on pulling Chu Feng out.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s face darkened.

“Lord Protector, I have no grudge with you, so why are you trying to sabotage me here?” Chu Feng’s voice turned incredibly hostile.

“Sabotage?”

“What are you saying, Chu Feng? Lord Protector is trying to save you here!”

The crowd couldn't understand Chu Feng's words, such that they began to criticize him. However, Chu Feng simply ignored them and continued questioning the protector, “Did you accept some sort of bribe from Nangong Yuliu?”

“Chu Feng, don't be an ingrate! I'm saving you here! Don't put yourself at risk for the sake of your own vanity. Hurry up and cooperate with me to escape from the lake!” the protector said.

“The seniors here, mark my words. If I die here, it would be that protector's fault. It's the protector tampering with the lake that it is reacting so vigorously despite an hour not being up yet. He's not saving me but sabotaging me here. I'll have to ask you to inform the sect of the truth lest I die for nothing here.”

n.)OveℓbIn

After saying those words, he turned to the protector and spat, “Remember this. If I survive this ordeal, the one to die will be you!”

“Lord Protector, Chu Feng clearly doesn't know his place. Someone like him isn't worthy of your efforts. Let him do as he pleases!”

Seeing that there was something amiss with the situation, the sharp-witted Tu Yuanyuan immediately spoke up. She could sense that something was wrong with the protector's actions too.

“Shut your mouth! I'm the protector here, so naturally, I'm in charge of your safety! How could I give up on a disciple just because of his ignorance?”

Yet, the protector wouldn't listen to Tu Yuanyuan's words. He continued exerting his force on Chu Feng.

The whirlpool spun faster and faster, dragging Chu Feng all the way down. However, instead of panicking, he burst into laughter and said, “Very well, it should at least be this much to make it interesting. That protector over there, I hope that you won't regret the decision you've made today!”

Chu Feng shot a glare at the protector before being fully submerged into the water.

Right after Chu Feng was swallowed whole, the terrifying seventh lake swiftly reverted back to its original state.

“How foolish. He let his own desires get ahead of him. He would rather die than to leave the lake. Ah, what a pity,” the protector remarked with a pained look on his face.

“Lord Protector, Chu Feng had it coming. You need not grieve over him.”

“Indeed, Lord Protector. Chu Feng might be talented, but his personality is simply atrocious. You helped him out of goodwill, but instead of being grateful to your kindness, he claimed that you were harming him instead. Someone like that deserves to die!”

The disciples swiftly began consoling the protector.

“Don’t say that of him. No matter what, he’s still a disciple of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Forget it. What’s done is done. There’s nothing I can do to change things anymore. The rest of you should focus on your tempering. Don’t waste this precious opportunity,” the protector said.

The disciples quickly returned to their respective lakes and continued their tempering.

In truth, they couldn’t care less whether Chu Feng was alive or dead, and none of them would bother redressing his grievances. Even Hua Xu had turned his focus back to tempering his body.

There was only one person who was too shaken by what had happened earlier to focus on her cultivation, and that person was Tu Yuanyuan.

She alone knew that there was something wrong with the protector, but there was nothing she could do at all to help. She could only sigh regretfully about Chu Feng’s death.

Oblivious to her, however, a spirit formation gate had formed at another location in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and a person fell right out of it.

Chu Feng.

He was desperately gasping for air, and his soaked body was still feeble from the turmoil he had just been put through. Nevertheless, there was a smile on his face.

“It’s not that easy to do me in,” Chu Feng sneered.

He got to his feet and began assessing his surroundings.

He knew that the protector wanted to deal with him, so he had to stay as far away from the latter as possible, or else he might risk losing his life.

After assessing the surroundings, he noticed that he was in the midst of an unbelievably huge mountain forest. There were terrifying cries sounding here and there, leaving Chu Feng not daring to move carelessly.

He used his Heaven’s Eye to scout out the area around him.

“That is...”

Chu Feng’s gaze swiftly fell upon a stone monument placed beneath a towering tree, leaving him surprised. This stone monument was extremely old, and it was covered in algae too. Nevertheless, he could still read the words inscribed on it clearly.

Vicious Beast Hellworld!

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4750: Linked Portals - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4750: Linked Portals

Chapter 4750: Linked Portals

Chu Feng knew deep well what kind of place the Vicious Beast Hellworld was. It was a cultivation location that opened once every year, and only Hidden Dragon Disciples and personal disciples were qualified to enter this land.

Previously, Chu Feng had helped Li Muzhi forge six treasures to be used in this Vicious Beast Hellworld.

“Could this mean that the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is linked to the Vicious Beast Hellworld?”

Aside from the stone monument, Chu Feng noticed that there were many beasts lurking in this unbelievably large mountain forest he was in too. Even within the range of Heaven's Eye, he could already spot out dozens of beasts.

The strongest one was of the same cultivation level as Chu Feng, rank six Utmost Exalted level.

All of the evidence proved that he was indeed in the Vicious Beast Hellworld at the moment.

“Wuuu!”

All of a sudden, Chu Feng's face began distorting in pain.

Sensing that something was amiss, he quickly took off his clothes, only to see black marks all over his body. These black marks looked incredibly enigmatic, and they released an aura similar to that of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, just more powerful.

These black marks seemed to possess a life of their own, wiggling their way toward Chu Feng's heart. They were the ones inflicting pain on Chu Feng at the moment.

Chu Feng could feel his body growing weaker by the moment, and he had a feeling that he would really die at this rate.

“Didn't I already take control of it? Why would things still turn out like this? Did I neglect something?”

Chu Feng was not surprised by the existence of the black marks, but he was shocked by the danger it was posing to him at the moment.

“No, that's not right. This is a curse, and curses all have their cures. Is this the final trial?”

Chu Feng noticed some clues from the black marks on his body, but he was still at a complete loss as to how he could resolve them.

“This feeling...”

But all of a sudden, he suddenly sensed a feeling that harmonized with the black marks on his body, and it was coming from the stone monument that wrote 'Vicious Beast Hellworld'.

He used his Heaven's Eye to take a closer look, only to see that there were actually even more words on it. There was light glimmering on the surface of the monument, and words would surface wherever it passed.

"There's indeed a link here!"

Chu Feng was certain that he wasn't brought here for no reason. The key to resolving the curse on him lay in the stone monument.

Not daring to hesitate, he quickly made his way over to the stone monument to assess it close up. Soon, he managed to figure out the cure.

So, he sat down with crossed legs, and using the power of the stone monument, he swiftly halted the progression of the black marks leading to his heart. A moment later, the black marks stopped wiggling, and the pain devouring Chu Feng earlier vanished too.

But soon, he frowned once more.

He had managed to take control of the black marks at the moment, but it would only ensure that he wouldn't be threatened by them at the moment. He still couldn't use their powers yet.

He could try to establish greater control on the black marks, but it would be dangerous for him to proceed any further from this point onward.

The stone monument provided him with a clue.

As long as he successfully accomplished what was asked of him, he would get a huge benefit from the Vicious Beast Hellworld. Otherwise, he would induce a calamity and bring utter destruction upon this place.

"It looks like I have no time to be thinking into this."

Chu Feng noticed that the power in the stone monument was weakening, and it wouldn't take long before it dissipated entirely. If he wanted to take full control of the black marks, he would have to do it before the power in the stone monument vanished entirely.

"I have no choice. Risk and reward come hand-in-hand. I can only hope that the others won't blame me if I fail."

Chu Feng knew that Li Muzhi and the others were in the Vicious Beast Hellworld at the moment. If he failed here, Li Muzhi and the others would be implicated as well.

Nevertheless, he still wanted to give it a try here.

He was indeed selfish for making this decision, but in another sense, he was also confident in his own abilities. If he didn't at least have that much trust in himself, he wouldn't even be able to save Zi Ling, let alone his mother.

With such thoughts in mind, he closed his eyes and began forming a series of hand seals. Soon, the black mark began fusing with the stone monument's power.

A moment later, the stone monument began trembling, followed by the earth beneath it. The area of the trembling grew further and further...

...

At another area in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, five gigantic beasts were flying side by side. The smallest one of these gigantic beasts had a length of several thousand meters, and the largest one reached a hulking 20,000 meters.

All of them looked incredibly vicious, reminiscent of the ruler of their turfs.

Yet, they were traveling together without attacking one another, and there were people standing above their heads.

All in all, there were six people, and they were all people whom Chu Feng was acquainted with—Li Muzhi, Zhao Shi, and the others whom Chu Feng had forged the treasures with.

There was an additional woman in their group though. She had long crimson hair and a youthful appearance. However, the truth was that she was already of 99 years of age, making her one of the oldest juniors at the moment.

She was Ma Yueyue, an acquaintance whom Li Muzhi had known for years. Li Muzhi was indebted to her, which was why she invited her to hunt together for this trial.

The six of them were currently riding the massive beasts around the area, seemingly looking for something. It didn't take them long to find their target.

It was a beast with a horse's body, lion's head, and bat's wings. It was over ten thousand meters in length and five thousand meters in height, making it look like a mini mountain in the midst of the forest.

Any ordinary human would have been scared out of their wits to encounter such a lifeform, but not Li Muzhi and his group. On the contrary, upon seeing the beast, they hurriedly made their way toward it.

Grarrrr!

Upon sensing that someone was approaching it, the beast immediately released a furious roar that stirred up a hurricane. The hurricane swept through the forest and uprooted the trees, devastating the area with holes.

The sheer destructive prowess of its roar was more than enough to demonstrate its prowess.

This beast was at rank one Martial Exalted level.

However, as soon as the beast started its attack, the five beasts controlled by Li Muzhi and the others also made their move too. As it turned out, four of the beasts were at rank one Martial Exalted level whereas the one Li Muzhi was riding was at rank two Martial Exalted level.

With these five beasts making a move simultaneously, it didn't take long for the lion-head, horse-body beast to be curbed.

"Senior Ma, this beast is suitable for you. Why don't you use this one?" Li Muzhi asked.

"I think that it looks decent too. I'll use it then."

Ma Yueyue nodded with a smile before swiftly making a couple of hand seals.

Slowly, her eyes and the ring on her finger began to light up in unison.

This ring was no ordinary ring. It was one of the treasures which they had forged with Chu Feng's help back then.

This ring was initially prepared for Xu Langzhi, but after knowing that the latter had intentionally sabotaged their work to do in Chu Feng, there was no way Li Muzhi would share the treasure with him anymore. As a result, he ended up having an extra on hand.

Li Muzhi thought that it would be a waste to leave it hanging, so he gifted it to Ma Yueyue, whom he was indebted to.

As soon as the power of the ring was evoked, Ma Yueyue leaped into the sky and walked up to the lion-head, horse-body beast. Two bursts of light shone from her eyes to cast a glow over the beast. Under the warm light, the beast slowly began to calm down.

Soon, the eyes of the beast began emanating the same light as that of the ring.

“Junior Li, is it a success?” Ma Yueyue turned to Li Muzhi and asked in uncertainty.

“It’s a success. Don’t worry, it’ll be safe.”

Li Muzhi shot a glance at Zhao Shi and the others, who immediately understood his intention and released the grip on the beast. Unexpectedly, the lion-head, horse-body beast still continued lying on the ground, not moving at all.

It had been tamed.

Ma Yueyue was delighted to see that. She immediately rushed toward the beast and climbed onto its back.

“Woah, this is incredible! To think that the ring is actually powerful enough to control even Martial Exalted level beasts! Junior Li, you’re too incredible! I’ve participated in this trial many times, and I’ve used the Demonsoul Grass before too, but I’ve never known that its effects could be amplified to this extent.

“With the help of this beast, I’ll surely be able to harvest huge rewards from the hunt. I really don’t know how to thank you for this!”

Ma Yueyue’s eyes shone in excitement upon realizing that the beast was under her control.

“Senior Ma, there’s no need to thank me. You should thank Chu Feng instead,” Li Muzhi said.

“Chu Feng? Why does that name sound so familiar to me?” Ma Yueyue asked.

Chapter 4751: The Cleansing

“Do you mean that Chu Feng who broke Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records?” Ma Yueyue asked.

“Yes, Senior Ma. I’m indeed referring to that Chu Feng,” Li Muzhi replied.

“Oh? I didn’t expect Junior Li to actually be acquainted with him! That’s the biggest matter I’ve heard ever since coming out of closed-door training. Many claim that he has only succeeded out of luck, and that he’s actually very weak though.

“Junior Li, since you’re acquainted with him, you should have a clearer judgment of the matter, right? How is it? Is Chu Feng the real deal?” Ma Yueyue asked out of curiosity.

“Senior Ma, these six soul possession treasures are Chu Feng’s credit. He’s the one who helped us forge them out,” Li Muzhi replied.

“Are you serious? He... actually possesses such skills?”

Ma Yueyue stared at the ring on her finger in astonishment.

“Of course, Senior Ma. We can all testify to that. If not for Junior Chu Feng, there’s no way we could have successfully forged the treasures. On top of that, the phenomenon he induced when he made a breakthrough was frightening too. That in itself was more than enough to prove that he’s an extraordinary individual.”

Zhao Shi and the others quickly spoke up too.

“It looks like Chu Feng is quite an incredible individual. You should introduce him to me then. I’m still single at the moment!” Ma Yueyue said with a chuckle.

“Senior Ma, I’m afraid that that’ll be a little difficult,” Li Muzhi said with a cheeky smile.

“Difficult? Why? There’s no way that he’ll be uninterested in me after seeing my looks,” Ma Yueyue said.

“Senior Ma, you might not have heard of it since you have just come out of your closed-door training, but the sectmaster is currently holding a matchmaking selection for Junior Zi Ling.”

Li Muzhi quickly informed Ma Yueyue about Zi Ling’s affair and how Chu Feng had signed up for that matchmaking too.

But despite knowing that Chu Feng was interested in Zi Ling, Ma Yueyue wasn’t deterred in the least. Instead, she proclaimed confidently, “Junior Zi Ling is deeply favored by the sectmaster, so it’s unlikely that Chu Feng would be able to win her over. Besides, even if he does succeed, it wouldn’t matter since I don’t mind becoming his concubine.”

The others burst into laughter upon hearing those words. They knew Ma Yueyue well, so they could tell that she was joking with them.

Boom boom boom boom!

Thunderous rumbling suddenly sounded from the distance, and it was growing louder with each passing moment.

They quickly turned their eyes over to take a look, only to be shocked when they saw countless beasts rushing from the depths of the forest in their direction, be it on land or in the sky.

Initially, they thought that they were coming under a coordinated assault by the beasts, but they soon noticed an anomaly. The thunderous rumbling wasn’t coming from the beasts but the quaking of the ground.

This wasn’t just any minor earthquake. The ground beneath their feet swiftly caved in, and it was still extending further at a frightening rate. It wouldn’t take long before the entire Vicious Beast Hellworld collapsed altogether.

These beasts were just fleeing because they caught the scent of danger.

Interestingly, these beasts didn’t attack Li Muzhi and the others upon seeing them. Instead, they circumvented them and rushed off. In fact, even the six beasts under their control were showing signs of unease.

They had to strengthen the possession through the rings on their fingers in order to calm their beasts down.

“Why do I have such an ominous feeling in my heart?”

Zhao Shu and the others subconsciously turned to look at Li Muzhi. Li Muzhi was the strongest one of all here, so he was their backbone when it came to such matters.

“Senior Ma, you’re the most knowledgeable of us here. Have you seen such a phenomenon before?” Li Muzhi turned to Ma Yueyue and asked.

Even though Ma Yueyue was weaker than him, she had a deep passion for gossip, which interestingly made her knowledgeable about all sorts of affairs in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, be it big or small.

In fact, she knew of many matters which even Li Muzhi was oblivious to.

“I’m not too sure either. I need to carefully think it through,” Ma Yueyue replied as she stared intently in the direction where the quaking was coming from.

The smile on her lips had vanished, replaced with grimness.

Soon, a black tornado swept over. It moved slightly slower than the earthquake, but still, its speed was nothing to make light of. Black clouds began to gather in the area as streaks of lightning struck down in the background of the scene.

It looked like the apocalypse had arrived.

“This is bad. It could be the emergence of the Hellking. Could it be that the Cleansing is happening prematurely?” Ma Yueyue exclaimed before seeing the black tornado.

“Hellking?”

Li Muzhi and the others frowned upon hearing those words.

Only Zhao Shi didn’t understand the significance of those words, so she asked, “What is the emergence of the Hellking and Cleansing?”

“You don’t know about the Hellking?” Ma Yueyue exclaimed in bewilderment.

Li Muzhi and the others began explaining the matter to Zhao Shi.

“The Hellking is a legendary beast in the Vicious Beast Hellworld who would appear once every five hundred years. It’s usually in a state of hibernation, but once it awakens, it’ll devour all lifeforms in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, a process which we call the Cleansing,” Li Muzhi explained.

“All lifeforms... Does that include us too?”

Zhao Shi was finally understanding the implication of this event and started to panic.

“Yes, that’s right. All living beings won’t be able to escape from this calamity. It’s not just moving animals; even plants and trees will wither away and die in its presence,” Ma Yueyue added on.

“Are we really certain that this is the Cleansing?” Zhao Shi asked.

“We have only read about this event in the records, but it looks likely to be the case,” Ma Yueyue said.

“Then what are we still standing in a daze for? Let’s quickly leave the area!” Zhao Shi said as she took out a talisman, hoping to tear it apart.

To her bewilderment, the talisman simply wouldn’t be torn. She cried out in horror, “What’s going on? Why isn’t it working?”

This was a talisman that allowed them to escape the Vicious Beast Hellworld whenever they met with danger, but at this very moment, the talisman seemed to have lost its effectiveness.

“It’s futile. The power of all formations will be rendered useless except for the sealing formation outside when the Hellking awakens. It looks like this verifies that it’s truly the Cleansing then,” Ma Yueyue said with a sigh.

“Are we all going to die here? Why would we be scheduled to enter the Vicious Beast Hellworld on the day of the Cleansing? Could it be that someone has intentionally plotted this?” a male disciple asked in horror.

His voice was quivering in fright, reflecting the mental breakdown he was going through.

He had a bright future ahead of him as a personal disciple, and he didn’t want to die here over a mere event in a trial.

“The Vicious Beast Hellworld would be sealed off ten years in advance before the Cleansing occurred to prevent any mishaps, such that no disciples would be able to enter the area. Judging from the timing, it shouldn’t be the time for the Cleansing to happen yet. Why would it happen in advance?” Li Muzhi remarked with a deep frown.

“Such a thing happened once before, but the Cleansing was stopped that time,” Ma Yueyue said.

“Senior Ma, are you referring to that incident with Lord Dugu Lingtian?” Li Muzhi asked.

It was the one time an irregularity happened in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, and Li Muzhi had heard of it too. Fortunately, all of the disciples who were hunting in the Vicious Beast Hellworld survived the ordeal as the Cleansing was somehow stopped by the legend of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, Lord Dugu Lingtian.

“Right, I’m referring to that incident,” Ma Yueyue said.

“Senior Ma, do you know how Lord Dugu Lingtian stopped the ordeal?” Li Muzhi asked. nove.Lb.1n

“I’m afraid not. There’s not a word about that written in the records. Let’s go. Since Lord Dugu Lingtian was able to do it, all isn’t hopeless yet.”

As Ma Yueyue spoke, she controlled the vicious beast under her control to steer it in the direction where the black tornado was occurring.

“Senior Ma, what are you doing? You can’t possibly be thinking of challenging the legendary Hellking, are you?”

Zhao Shi’s face paled as her body began shuddering. She looked extremely averse to the idea of approaching the eye of the storm.

“As long as we’re trapped in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, we’ll be doomed to die no matter where we run too. If we rush over to make a move before the Hellking fully awakens, we might still stand a chance of stopping it. If you’re afraid, you can wait here helplessly and pray that things somehow work out for you, but I’ll be giving it a try.”

After saying her words, Ma Yueyue turned to Li Muzhi and asked, “Junior Li, what do you think?”

“I’ll go,” Li Muzhi said.

Seeing that Li Muzhi was intending to head over too, Zhao Shi gritted her teeth and said, “Since that’s the case, let’s all head over then.”

“Indeed, let’s go together then. Since it’s all doom anyway, let’s at least give it a try.”

“Even if we’re going to die, the least we can do is to put up a good fight!”

The other personal disciples also nodded in agreement.

Having come to a decision, they quickly began making their move toward the black tornado. They knew that great danger lay there, evidenced by how even the beasts driven by their instincts knew to escape from it. Yet, they were marching straight into the face of danger.

Such an incomprehensible act caused even some of the escaping vicious beasts to momentarily halt their footsteps to glance at them, as if they were staring at fools who didn’t know what they were doing.

Of course, there was no way Li Muzhi and Ma Yueyue wouldn’t know how dangerous the black tornado was, but they knew that this was the only hope of survival they had here.

Chapter 4752: The Emergence of the Hellking

Aside from the vicious beasts, Li Muzhi and the others also encountered many personal disciples from the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect along the way. However, they didn’t try to stop those personal disciples from running away from the danger as everyone was entitled to make their own decisions.

Soon, they arrived at the depths of the black tornado, which was sealed off by a furious barrage of lightning. It was fortunate that the destructive prowess of the tornado had yet to fully show itself, so they were still able to hold on.

After rushing their way, they soon arrived at the eye of the black tornado, but there were already several disciples there by the time they arrived.

Aside from the personal disciples, there were the eighth rank and ninth rank Hidden Dragon Disciples too, the Duanmu Brothers.

However, the strongest one present wasn't the two of them. A young man stood on top of a rank three Martial Exalted level vicious beast, and he emanated the aura of a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator too.

He was the third rank Hidden Dragon Disciple, Zuoqiu Yanliang.

"Li Muzhi, you all... actually managed to control the vicious beasts?"

Li Muzhi and the others were riding on Martial Exalted level beasts when they arrived, so it was inevitable that they would attract the attention of the other disciples right away. Other than Zuoqiu Yanliang, the others all revealed looks of astonishment.

"Paying respects to Senior Zuoqiu."

Li Muzhi ignored the others for the time being and quickly bowed slightly to Zuoqiu Yanliang. Even someone as proud as Li Muzhi dared not to disrespect him, which showed the prestige Zuoqiu Yanliang enjoyed even amongst the Hidden Dragon Disciples.

"Li Muzhi, did you come here to stop this calamity too?" Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

His tone was lofty like a king interrogating his servants. They were all disciples of the same sect, but somehow, he acted as if Li Muzhi and the others were beneath him.

"It concerns the safety of all our disciples, so I wanted to contribute a little too," Li Muzhi replied.

"It's unlikely that you would be able to contribute anything at all, but at least you do have some sincerity," Zuoqiu Yanliang replied.

All of a sudden, a woman's voice interjected.

"Senior Zuoqiu, you shouldn't say that. We're here to pool our strength together so as to survive this crisis."

The crowd turned their sights over, only to see a humongous white crane gliding across the air. Its size was so big that its wingspan extended for over

thirty thousand meters. Despite its graceful appearance, its strength was definitely nothing to make light of.

It was at rank two Martial Exalted level.

However, the crowd was more focused on the small silhouette standing on the head of the white crane. It was an elegant woman with a fair complexion.

Her glowing presence made all of the other female disciples present look dull in comparison. If the others were beautiful fairies, she would be a fairy amongst the fairies. Her appearance wasn't the type to dazzle others at first sight, but she had an ethereal poise that seemed untouched by the vicissitudes of the mortal world. Just her disposition in itself was more than enough to attract the attention of others.

But of course, there was far more to her than her appearance.

Her name was Song Qian, and she was ranked five in the Hidden Dragon Disciples. Just like the white crane she was standing on top of, she was a rank two Martial Exalted level cultivator.

"How could I possibly make light of Junior Song? In fact, I was waiting for your arrival."

Surprisingly, Zuoqiu Yanliang's attitude changed right away upon seeing Song Qian. If Li Muzhi and the others were all beneath him, Song Qian would at least be someone worthy of being a peer to him.

Song Qian came a little closer and asked, "Senior Zuoqiu, did you notice anything amiss here?"

At the eye of the black tornado, there was a huge sphere of wind. This wind gave off an extremely dangerous aura, such that no cultivators beneath Martial Exalted level could hope to pass through it. On top of that, it was impossible to see through this revolving sphere of wind with one's spirit power either, so no one could see what was within it from the outside.

If the Hellking was really awakening from its slumber, there was a good chance that it was currently inside this sphere of wind.

“My guess is that the Hellking is currently inside. I’m intending to head in to confront it. Junior Song, do you still remember the Hidden Dragon Sword Formation?” nove.Lb.1n

As Zuoqiu Yanliang spoke, he drew a golden sword that had the inscription of a golden dragon on its blade. This sword was a little special. It didn’t emanate the aura of an Exalted Armament, but at the same time, it was made out of some sort of extraordinary material that hinted that it was no ordinary weapon.

Rather than a weapon, it felt more like a treasure.

“How could I possibly forget the Hidden Dragon Sword Formation?”

Song Qian also whipped out an identical golden sword too.

“Senior Zuoqiu, I’ll lend you a helping hand!”

Li Muzhi also took out an identical golden sword too.

“Li Muzhi, if I recall correctly, you are still unable to control the power of the Hidden Dragon Sword yet, right?” Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

“I’m indeed unable to control it alone, but I can tap into the power of my tamed beast through my soul possession treasure to aid me in controlling it,” Li Muzhi said as he quickly formed a series of hand seals before tossing the sword outward.

As the sword rose into the air, a brilliant golden light identical to that of the sword shone from Li Muzhi’s eyes.

Weng!

The golden sword in the sky suddenly began releasing the aura of a rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator.

Whoosh!

The tamed beast beneath Li Muzhi’s feet released a furious howl as its eyes turned golden too. Following that, the golden sword’s aura rose to that of a rank two Martial Exalted level cultivator.

“Not bad. If that’s the case, you’ll indeed be able to support me. Li Muzhi, it’ll be a great merit for you if we manage to defeat the Hellking and stop this calamity,” Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

Song Qian also quickly formed a series of hand seals and tossed the golden sword into the sky. Soon, her sword also emanated the aura of a rank two Martial Exalted level cultivator.

Even though both swords were at rank two Martial Exalted level, the energy that was emanating from Song Qian’s sword clearly felt much more condensed. After all, both Song Qian and her tamed beasts were at rank two Martial Exalted level, so their combined prowess was bound to be greater.

“The Duanmu Brothers, you should coordinate with the personal disciples to set up a supporting formation for us,” Zuoqiu Yanliang instructed.

“Understood.”

The Duanmu Brothers and the personal disciples quickly took out similar golden swords, though it was worth noting that the golden swords wielded by the personal disciples looked much cruder as compared to the ones Li Muzhi and the others had.

Through their coordination, it didn’t take long for the personal disciples to set up a powerful formation. By this moment, the brilliant golden radiance had already expanded to the point where it seemed to be able to put up a fight against the black tornado.

Whoosh!

A furious roar suddenly shook the surroundings, filling all of the disciples’ eyes with fright and unease. The roar had sounded from the sphere of wind!

Chapter 4753: The Legendary Vicious Beast

“Activate the formation.”

Noticing that the situation had gone awry, Zuoqiu Yanliang immediately shouted an order.

Li Muzhi and Song Qian quickly directed their beasts behind Zuoqiu Yanliang as they formed a series of hand seals and channeled two beams of light toward Zuoqiu Yanliang.

At this moment, their auras achieved synchronicity.

Li Muzhi and Song Qian's Hidden Dragon Swords came under Zuoqiu Yanliang's control, and they quickly flew over to the latter side. At the same time, the Duanmu Brothers and the other personal disciples also channeled the energy of the supporting formation into Zuoqiu Yanliang.

A brilliant light glowed from Zuoqiu Yanliang's body as his aura grew towering, reminiscent of an inviolable deity in the sky. No beings could hope to fight against him.

Whoosh!

However, a second terrifying howl coming broke his domineering aura, and this time around, a humongous beast tore through the sphere of wind to appear before everyone's eyes.

It was a demonic serpent with a peculiar appearance. It had two heads that looked oddly similar to that of a tiger, just much more terrifying. Its crimson eyes and teeth gave him a sinister appearance. Its size was also tremendous, such that even the part of its body that had broken through the sphere of wind was already more than fifty thousand meters huge.

All of the other beasts present were huge in their own rights too, but before this monster, they looked incredibly small and humble. As for the cultivators, they looked no more than specks of dust.

"Could that monster be the legendary Twinheaded Tiger Serpent? It's no wonder why there are no witness accounts of it. It turns out that it's the legendary Hellking."

There were rumors of an incredibly powerful and intelligent monster with the head of a tiger and the body of a serpent lurking in the Vicious Beast Hellworld. Thanks to that, the disciples were able to recognize its identity of the bizarre beast even though this was the first time they were seeing it.

“It’s only at rank three Martial Exalted level. It looks like that’s all there is to the Hellking. Brothers, we shall become heroes who have stopped this calamity today!”

Zuoqiu Yanliang looked much more excited compared to the others. Even though the Twinheaded Tiger Serpent looked terrifying, its aura showed that it was only at rank three Martial Exalted level. He definitely had the means to deal with an enemy of such caliber.

Just the thought that he would be able to defeat the Hellking and stop the legendary Cleansing made him incredibly excited.

So, he quickly formed a series of hand seals which caused the three Hidden Dragon Swords to grow over ten thousand meters long, emanating the aura of a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator.

He was intending to end things in a single blow.

“Hold it right there!”

But just as Zuoqiu Yanliang was about to make a move, a voice suddenly sounded in the air. Everyone was taken aback from the abrupt voice as they could tell that it hadn’t come from any of them. It was coming from the ground.

They quickly turned their sights toward the origin of the voice, only to see a figure rising to the air.

Everyone was shocked upon seeing the figure, especially Li Muzhi and the others. They rubbed their eyes in bewilderment, wondering if they were seeing things.

The figure who had appeared was no other than Chu Feng.

However, this should have been impossible as Chu Feng was neither a Hidden Dragon Disciple nor a personal disciple. He wasn’t qualified to enter this trial.

“Who are you?” Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

At the same time, Li Muzhi also asked, “Chu Feng, how did you get in here?”

“Chu Feng? He’s that Chu Feng? How audacious! Is this a place where you can enter?”

Upon learning who Chu Feng was, Zuoqiu Yanliang’s gaze turned even more livid.

As there was no evidence whatsoever, he simply figured that Chu Feng had snuck in here on his own accord and sentenced him guilty.

To be fair, the others also had the same suspicions as well as they couldn’t think of another reason why Chu Feng would appear here.

“I didn’t sneak in here. I was cultivating in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake when I stumbled upon a spirit formation gate that brought me here. This can be easily verified later on,” Chu Feng said.

“You got teleported here from Blackwater Sixfinger Lake? What kind of nonsense are you talking about? Do you take us for fools? Does this matter even need verifying? No matter how you try to explain things, you can’t possibly talk your way out of this!”

Zuoqiu Yanliang’s attitude turned even viler than before. If not for the fact that he was fully focused on driving the Hidden Dragon Swords, he might have already attacked Chu Feng by now.

“I heard rumors from an elder that the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake and the Vicious Beast Hellworld are linked, but that elder has only read about it in an ancient record and couldn’t verify the authenticity of the information. Could the two places really be linked?” Ma Yueyue muttered.

However, as soon as she said those words, she was immediately faced with Zuoqiu Yanliang’s criticism, “Ma Yueyue, are you out of your mind? How can you believe an excuse he fabricated on the spot?”

After berating Ma Yueyue, he turned to Chu Feng and sneered, “I don’t have time for you now. Once I get rid of this Hellking, you’ll have hell to pay for.”

After saying those words, he began channeling the three Hidden Dragon Swords to continue his attack toward the Hellking.

“Wait a moment, don’t attack the Hellking carelessly!” Chu Feng shouted.

Seemingly knowing that Zuoqiu Yanliang wouldn't just listen to him, he quickly began explaining, "Listen to me, this beast is assimilated with the black tornado, and it's currently using the power of the tornado to raise its cultivation. The current prowess it's displaying is unlikely to be its true strength. If you attack it carelessly, you'll just anger it and direct its attention toward us. If so, we'll be in deep trouble."

"Junior Chu Feng, how should we deal with this then?" Li Muzhi asked.

He knew how capable Chu Feng was, so he figured that Chu Feng must have noticed something that led to him saying those words.

"Hand your soul possession treasures to me. I can control it while it's still in the midst of cultivating. As long as we can put it under our control, we'll naturally be able to stop its rampage," Chu Feng said.

"Junior Chu Feng, is that really fine?" Li Muzhi asked.

"Li Muzhi, are you out of your mind? How could you listen to the words of that trash? Someone like him has no right to command me! Don't think that you're the strongest disciple in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect just because you've broken Lord Dugu Lingtian's record!" Zuoqiu Yanliang harrumphed as he directed the three Hidden Dragon Swords toward the Twinheaded Tiger Serpent.

The prowess of the three Hidden Dragon Swords was nothing to scoff at. With the three of them striking simultaneously, even the black tornado surrounding them was immediately sliced into two. But shockingly, the three swords were unable to leave even a scratch on the Twinheaded Tiger Serpent!

Grarr!

The Twinheaded Tiger Serpent let loose a furious roar. Its body wiggled a little as yet another head rose out of its neck. The moment the third tiger head formed, the aura of the beast began rising from rank three Martial Exalted level to rank four.

"..."

The hearts of all of the disciples clenched upon seeing this sight. None of them spoke a word, but they all subconsciously turned to look at Chu Feng.

If they thought that Chu Feng was talking rubbish before, they were wondering now if Chu Feng might have actually been right about this.

Chapter 4754: Chu Feng Makes a Move

“Hmph!”

Thinking nothing of the matter, Zuoqiu Yanliang harrumphed coldly, and a Lightning Mark immediately formed on his forehead, causing his cultivation to rise to rank four Martial Exalted level.

At the same time, he formed a series of hand seals and synchronized the auras of the three Hidden Dragon Swords to match his own.

Wu!

However, as the auras of the Hidden Dragon Swords grew stronger, Li Muzhi and Song Qian immediately revealed pained expressions. This was especially so for Li Muzhi, whose face had turned pale. Blood was flowing out from his nose and ears.

It was obvious that the strength infused within the Hidden Dragon Sword was already beyond what he could control. It was inflicting damage on him, but he chose to bear with it. After all, their survival was at stake here.

“Stop attacking it. If you infuriate it, none of us will be getting out of here alive!” Chu Feng reminded upon seeing that Zuoqiu Yanliang was unwilling to give up.

“Cut the crap. Who do you think you are? How dare a despicable scum who snuck into here dare to criticize me? Just wait till I’m done with the Hellking, and you’ll be next!”

Instead of heeding Chu Feng’s advice, Zuoqiu Yanliang replied with a malicious sneer. He quickly channeled the Hidden Dragon Swords to launch yet another strike down on the Tiger Serpent.

His attack was much stronger this time around, stirring powerful shockwaves upon striking down on the humongous beast. Even the surrounding disciples were sent flying from the force of those shockwaves.

As a result, the supporting formation maintained by the Duanmu Brothers and the other personal disciples fell apart, and many of them sustained severe injuries.

However, it wasn't just the personal disciples who had sustained injuries. Li Muzhi also began bleeding from his seven apertures due to his inability to endure the strength of the Hidden Dragon Sword, causing his body to slump down.

At the same time, the Hidden Dragon Sword he controlled shrank back to its original size and fell to the ground.

With this, there were only two Hidden Dragon Swords left.

However, to the crowd's astonishment, the other two Hidden Dragon Swords also soon reverted back to their original size. When they took a closer look, they were appalled to see that Song Qian and Zuoqiu Yanliang had sustained severe injuries too.

This was especially so for Zuoqiu Yanliang, who sat in a slump on the beast he was controlling. The Lightning Mark on his forehead had disappeared without a trace. He looked to be in an even weaker state than Li Muzhi.

As the one leading the Hidden Dragon Sword Formation, he ended up paying a heavy price from the rebound of his failed attack.

"What do we do now?"

The disciples began panicking. That earlier attack was definitely the strongest one they got, but the Tiger Serpent still remained completely unharmed. Not only so, but its body had also begun wiggling once more to form its fourth head.

It didn't take long for the fourth head to finish forming, and its aura immediately soared to rank five Martial Exalted level!

"We're doomed, doomed!"

Seeing how the Tiger Serpent had grown stronger yet again, the disciples fell into despair. As Zuoqiu Youyu didn't participate in the hunt, the strongest one amongst them at the moment was no other than Zuoqiu Yanliang.

They knew that Zuoqiu Yanliang could only raise his cultivation up to rank four Martial Exalted level with his Lightning Mark, so there was no way he could possibly hope to defeat the rank five Martial Exalted level Tiger Serpent.

A rank of difference in Martial Exalted level made all the difference in the world. There was no way they could stop the Tiger Serpent now.

But weirdly enough, despite the furious roars of the Tiger Serpent, it didn't launch an attack against them. This anomaly made the crowd instinctively turn their sights toward Chu Feng.

If they were still harboring doubts earlier, the current happening verified what Chu Feng had told them. This Tiger Serpent was currently using the power of the storm to evolve and didn't want to waste any energy, so it wasn't attacking them just yet.

However, if it were to continue evolving, they couldn't imagine just what kind of level it would eventually reach.

Grar!

A furious howl suddenly sounded from the beast Li Muzhi was standing on. Li Muzhi forced himself to get to his feet and leaped away from the beast. The beast flew a distance away before...

Boom!

A resounding explosion echoed. The beast had just committed suicide!

At the same time, Li Muzhi spurted huge mouthfuls of blood. The explosion of the beast had inflicted severe damage on him.

"Junior Chu Feng, take it!"

However, Li Muzhi paid no heed to his injuries and tossed his soul possession treasure toward Chu Feng.

Upon seeing this, Zhao Shi, Ma Yueyue, and the others quickly emulated Li Muzhi's actions.

In order to avoid taking away their beasts running rampant after releasing their control on them, they chose to use the soul possession treasures to have those beasts self-explode before handing them over to Chu Feng.

It was just that the soul possession treasures were currently linked to those beasts, so the self-explosion of those beasts would inadvertently harm them as well.

However, all of them still did it without hesitation and tossed their soul possession treasures to Chu Feng right after.

It was quite a valiant sight, just that it triggered one person's displeasure—Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“The lot of you actually believe his lies? How utterly foolish!” Zuoqiu Yanliang spat.

If not for the severity of his injuries, he would have surely tried to stop them.

“Senior Zuoqiu, there are no other solutions at the moment either. It'd be better to give it a try than to just give up here and wait for our deaths.”

Zhao Shi and the others quickly explained out of fear of offending Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“Ridiculous. Even if a frontal attack doesn't work, there are still other methods we can try. Yet, he wants to use the soul possession treasures to take control of the Hellking? That's just suicidal! Why don't you take a good look at the difference in the cultivation between the Hellking and Chu Feng? As personal disciples, how could you entrust your own lives to a mere newcomer? Are you brainless?!” Zuoqiu Yanliang hollered.

Zhao Shi and the others simply lowered their heads and ignored Zuoqiu Yanliang. They believed in Chu Feng, but they dared not to talk back to Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“Junior Chu Feng, are you certain about this? Are you certain that you'll be able to control the Hellking?”

Even Song Qian couldn't help but look at Chu Feng worriedly. She felt that what Zuoqiu Yanliang mentioned made sense. After all, Chu Feng's cultivation was simply too low compared to the rest of them.

Besides, there was a limit to what the soul possession treasures could do too. Typically speaking, it was already an amazing feat for a rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator to control a rank two Martial Exalted level beast.

However, Chu Feng was clearly not at rank nine Utmost Exalted level, and the Hellking was at rank five Martial Exalted level. To make things worse, it was likely that the Hellking's real cultivation was even higher than this.

"That senior over there, do you have any other ideas in mind?" Chu Feng asked.

"..."

A tight furrow formed on Song Qian's forehead as she fell silent. She indeed didn't have any other solution in mind.

Seeing this, Chu Feng simply smiled lightly as he quickly put on the six soul possession treasures. Then, he leaped forward to stand before the Tiger Serpent.

Seeing that Chu Feng was really going to make a move, Zuoqiu Yanliang immediately bellowed furiously, "Junior Song, hurry up and stop him! Even if we were to die, we can't let this kind of fool bring us to our doom!"

His agitation caused blood to spurt out of his mouth, and it was followed by a violent fit of coughs.

His injuries were simply too severe that he didn't even have the strength to exert his oppressive might or control the beast beneath him. Otherwise, he would have surely killed Chu Feng right away. *novE-lb-In*

As for Song Qian, she was already iffy about all of this right from the start, and Zuoqiu Yanliang's orders further convinced her to make a move.

"Stop me if you wish to die!"

But before she could do anything, Chu Feng suddenly shot her a frosty look that caused her body to shudder. Her face swiftly drained of blood, turning ghastly pale.

Her cultivation was clearly much higher than Chu Feng's, but she seemed to see something incredibly terrifying in Chu Feng's eyes.

And in the moment of her hesitation, Chu Feng finished forming his hand seals to release the energy of the soul possession treasures.

The next moment, the eyes of the Tiger Serpent immediately calmed down, revealing a gaze similar to Chu Feng's. At the same time, it also stopped its furious roars, becoming incredibly docile.

"This... Does this mean that..."

This sight shocked not just Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian, but even Li Muzhi and the others too. No matter how slow they might be, it was clear as day that Chu Feng had managed to put the Tiger Serpent under his control!

Chapter 4755: Utterly Shameless

"How did he manage to control the Tiger Serpent so easily? Am I seeing things?"

Everyone couldn't believe what they were seeing. They had seen for themselves just how powerful the Tiger Serpent was, and yet, Chu Feng actually managed to place it under his control just like that.

They could clearly sense Chu Feng's cultivation, and it was only at rank seven Utmost Exalted level.

Could a rank seven Utmost Exalted level cultivator really control a rank five Martial Exalted level beast with just six soul possession treasures? That didn't make sense!

"You need not panic anymore. I've already placed this Tiger Serpent under my control," Chu Feng said.

He then turned to the Tiger Serpent and murmured, "It's lucky that I woke up on time, or else it would be a great deal of trouble if you continue evolving at this rate. You nearly foiled my plans. So, you have to die for that."

Under Chu Feng's control, the Tiger Serpent began to climb out of the sphere of wind, revealing its full body. The aura it emanated with its full presence was far stronger than before.

It flew a distance away before exploding with a loud boom. Despite the self-explosion, the beast wasn't reduced to smithereens. All Chu Feng did was to explode its flesh and blood, choosing to leave its bone completely intact.

He knew that the bones of the beasts in the Vicious Beast Hellworld could be used for cultivation, which meant that the bones of the Tiger Serpent were likely to be true cultivation treasures.

“It looks like the beasts here are indeed created by a formation.”

However, upon seeing the Tiger Serpent’s carcass, Chu Feng felt a little disappointed. He was intending to collect the source energies of the beasts here and give them to Eggy and Yu Sha, but it turned out that the beasts here didn’t contain any source energies at all.

This verified Chu Feng’s conjecture that the beasts in this Vicious Beast Hellworld were artificial lifeforms. They were nurtured by a special formation using some sort of treasure, granting them the power to cultivate. However, just because they were able to grow stronger didn’t mean that they were real living beings, and the proof lay in how they lacked source energies and a soul.

“It looks like the sect founder is really a formidable individual.”

While the lack of source energies was disappointing, this also testified to the tremendous prowess the founder of the Hidden Dragon Formation Sect possessed. Chu Feng would have never imagined that it was possible to nurture such lifeforms using spirit power.

At the very least, it was impossible for him at the moment.

“Look, the storm is starting to dissipate!”

“The crisis is over! We’re saved!”

“Junior Chu Feng, you’re incredible! You stopped the Cleansing and resolved this catastrophe!”

The terrifying black tornado gradually dissipated and the Vicious Beast Hellworld reverted back to its original form. Knowing that the calamity was over, the disciples immediately cheered in excitement. Zhao Shi and Ma Yueyue even ran over to Chu Feng’s side excitedly.

Ma Yueyue leaped forth to hug Chu Feng, and Zhao Shi quickly did the same too. Admiration could be seen in the depths of their eyes.

There was also a change in how the other personal disciples looked at Chu Feng too. Compared to before, there was a hint of respect in their eyes.

With everything that had happened thus far, it was clear to them that Chu Feng's feat of breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record wasn't just a fluke. He did have the strength and capability to back it up.

Faced with the crowd's compliments, Chu Feng simply smiled in response, not saying a word at all.

"You're thanking him? Was he the one who resolved this calamity?"

However, while everyone was still immersed in their joy and relief of having survived a desperate situation, a dissonant voice suddenly sounded in the air.

The crowd immediately fell silent upon hearing those words, for the one who had spoken was Zuoqiu Yanliang.

Everyone could sense Zuoqiu Yanliang's displeasure.

The bootlicker, Duanmu Xiang, turned to Zuoqiu Yanliang and said, "The bones of the Hellking is a precious cultivation resource. Everyone has contributed to resolving the calamity here today, so Senior Zuoqiu, how should we distribute it?"

Zuoqiu Yanliang was currently seated on the ground with cross legs. With Song Qian's help, he was able to heal up his injuries by a fair bit. However, he didn't rise to his feet right away. He continued recuperating for a moment longer before finally opening his eyes to look at the crowd.

"Do you think that I should be the one to distribute the bones of the Hellking?"

His words carried a deeper meaning behind them. It was as if he was asking if 'Do you still recognize me to be the strongest one amongst you all?'.

"Senior Zuoqiu, you carry the greatest strength and highest prestige amongst us all. It's only right for you to determine the distribution of the Hellking's bones. You're the one who has contributed the most to stopping the Cleansing, so who else could be worthy aside from you?"

Under the Duanmu Brothers' lead, the other personal disciples began chirping in too. Even before leaving the Vicious Beast Hellworld, they were already starting to snatch the credit here.

"Since everyone thinks so, I shall determine the distribution then."

Zuoqiu Yanliang was pleased with everyone's response. He even directed a provocative look in Chu Feng's direction, as if saying 'So what if you're the one who defeated the Tiger Serpent? The credit is still going to me anyway'.

Zuoqiu Yanliang's shameless action greatly displeased Li Muzhi and the others, but Chu Feng thought nothing about it. He simply watched this farce with a smile on his lips.

Zuoqiu Yanliang really didn't put on airs and started distributing the Tiger Serpent. All of the disciples present got a share of it, except for a few, namely Chu Feng, Li Muzhi, Ma Yueyue, Zhao Shi, and the others. Basically, all of the disciples who handed their soul possession treasures to Chu Feng were excluded here.

"Senior Zuoqiu, isn't it unfair for you to distribute the bones in such a manner?" Li Muzhi questioned.

"Unfair? How am I unfair?" Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

"Everyone has come here with the intent to stop this calamity, and I don't deny that everyone ought to get a share here. However, it was Junior Chu Feng who contributed the most to killing the Hellking here. If anyone has the right to distribute the bones here, it should be Junior Chu Feng. Yet, you didn't even give Junior Chu Feng a share at all!" Li Muzhi remarked grimly.

He was afraid of Zuoqiu Yanliang, but he couldn't stand how shameless Zuoqiu Yanliang was being over here.

"Li Muzhi, do you know why neither Chu Feng nor the other six of you aren't given anything at all?" Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

"It's precisely because I can't understand the rationale behind this decision that I'm asking about it," Li Muzhi replied.

“Do you really think that it’s Chu Feng who defeated the Hellking? Did you think that you have made a huge contribution just by handing the soul possession treasures to Chu Feng, allowing him to control the Hellking?”

“Let me tell you this, you have done nothing that helped in killing the Hellking! It was my Hidden Dragon Sword Formation that severely injured it in the first place! Putting Chu Feng aside, anyone else could have easily used the soul possession treasure to control the Hellking. It was already severely injured by that point in time, having hardly any consciousness at all.

“It was I, Zuoqiu Yanliang, who severely injured the Hellking. Chu Feng is merely enjoying the fruits of my effort!” Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

“Zuoqiu Yanliang, you...”

Li Muzhi was so angry that his veins were on the verge of popping out.

He would have never imagined that Zuoqiu Yanliang would be this shameless. Everyone could tell that his attacks were useless earlier on, and it even led to a catastrophe for them. It was Chu Feng who single-handedly turned things around and saved them all.

Yet, Zuoqiu Yanliang twisted the story to make it sound as if Chu Feng was enjoying the gains of his hard work.

In truth, everyone was also rendered speechless by Zuoqiu Yanliang’s speech. For the first time, everyone got a glimpse of just what kind of person Zuoqiu Yanliang was.

Before this, no one thought that Zuoqiu Yanliang would actually be so shameless. Even if he wanted to steal some credit, his reason was still a little too forced that it was practically an outright lie.

Chapter 4756: The Real King

Even though everyone thought that Zuoqiu Yanliang was being shameless, none of them dared to say a thing except for Li Muzhi. They weren’t just afraid of Zuoqiu Yanliang himself but his backing too.

They only dared to direct pitiful gazes in Chu Feng’s direction discreetly.

“Hahaha! Truly incredible, I must say. I have seen plenty of shameless individuals in my time, but you really do outdo all of them!”

Chu Feng clapped his hands in amazement.

“You bastard! How dare you insult me? I still haven’t settled the score with you for sneaking in here yet!”

Zuoqiu Yanliang released his oppressive might to curb Chu Feng.

Even though he was severely injured, he could at least use his energy now. At the very least, dealing with Chu Feng was not beyond him at the moment.

“Senior Zuoqiu, even if Chu Feng is indeed guilty, we should still leave it to the elders to judge him.”

Surprisingly, Song Qian suddenly spoke up at this moment. Even though she was on Zuoqiu Yanliang’s side, she didn’t think that it was right for a talent like Chu Feng to die here.

“Don’t worry, Junior Song. I won’t kill him here. However, I must teach him a lesson here today,” Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

“Wait a moment, there’s no need to rush to make a move,” Chu Feng hurriedly spoke up.

Hearing Chu Feng’s request here, Zuoqiu Yanliang revealed a smile of glee.

“Chu Feng, if you plead guilty right now and admit that you had enjoyed the fruits of my effort earlier with the Hellking, I can plead on your behalf before the elders so that they would let you off lightly regarding the matter of you sneaking in here.

“On the other hand, if you obstinately refuse to admit to your mistakes, I’ll teach you a lesson right here right now,” Zuoqiu Yanliang threatened.

“Hold on for a moment, you’re misunderstanding something. I have no intention of pleading guilty or begging for mercy. I just want to ask if you’re really going to be unreasonable here with just that rank three Martial Exalted level cultivation of yours over there?” Chu Feng asked.

Zuoqiu Yanliang sneered in response, “Since you’ve asked such a question, I’ll be frank with you. Yes, I’ll be the one who determines what’s reasonable

here! You're right, I'm using my strength to oppress and insult you. What are you going to do about it?"

He knew he was being unreasonable here, but at the same time, he also understood that the other party couldn't do anything to him even if he were to force his point. His strength allowed him to do as he pleased, and he relished in such power.

"Very well. Since that's the case, I shall be unreasonable with you too," Chu Feng said.

"What did you say? You'll be unreasonable with me too? Surely I'm hearing things here. Does a mere rank seven Utmost Exalted level cultivator like you really think that you have the strength to go against me?"

Zuoqiu Yanliang burst into a peal of laughter so hearty that it didn't sound like he was severely wounded at all. He thought that Chu Feng was truly laughable.

Yet, everyone else present remained completely silent. No matter how unreasonable Zuoqiu Yanliang might be, they dared not to say anything. They could only direct a look of pity toward Chu Feng.

This was simply how the world was. Sometimes, it was not that people didn't right from wrong, but doing the right thing might not necessarily lead to the best outcomes.

Boom!

All of a sudden, a loud rumbling sounded. It was swiftly followed by a second, a third one, and before long, it reverberated the entire sky.

Along with the emergence of lightning, the terrifying black tornado reappeared too.

Once again, the disciples found their surroundings enveloped by the black tornado, but this time around, the danger they felt from it was several times that from before. On top of that, there was an incredibly terrifying aura coming from the very center of the storm.

"What's that?"

Everyone's face paled upon sensing the aura as their bodies began to tremble uncontrollably. This was not a fear that could be overcome by sheer willpower, for it arose in the very depths of their soul. They had a feeling that something really bad was going to happen.

Grar!

A furious roar shook the surroundings once more.

The black tornado was torn apart, and a humongous monster stepped out from within. It was entirely black, and its silhouette towered over a hundred thousand meters tall.

It was almost as if staring in the face of a moving mountain.

Its appearance was also incredibly feral, stirring the deepest fears in one's heart. Its skin was made out of some sort of granite-like material that seemed almost indestructible. The slight slits in its skin glowed fiery red, as if lava was flowing through its body.

What was the most terrifying of all were the crimson eyes that glowered from above like two red moons, just like harbingers of death.

This monster looked more like something that had walked straight out of hell, and it was the culprit who left the crowd feeling utterly despaired.

The monster was simply too terrifying that they couldn't even evaluate its cultivation level. It felt like its very will could bring upon complete destruction upon the world. At this moment, all of their lives were in this monster's grasp.

"T-this is..."

"We didn't stop the accursed Cleansing at all. The Tiger Serpent wasn't the Hellking in the first place! This is the real Hellking!" n.(OveℓbIn

It was such thorough despair that no one even thought about escaping at all. Before such an overwhelmingly superior being, the only thing they could do was to wait for it to pass judgment upon them.

Putting aside the other disciples, even Zuoqiu Yanliang's face had turned ashen. He was so frightened that he stumbled backward and fell on his bum. His body shuddered uncontrollably as he murmured, "This is the real

Hellking... This is the real Cleansing... How could there be something as terrifying as this? Did Lord Dugu Lingtian really defeat this being?"

His eyes reflected deep fear, and his words echoed the sentiments of the others present. None of them could fathom the slightest possibility of defeating this almighty being.

Grar!

While everyone was wallowing in fear, the Hellking released yet another resounding roar that left everyone feeling like their bodies were going to explode.

Despite their powerful cultivation, they still couldn't withstand the prowess of this monster's roar.

Knowing that this was the end, many of them closed their eyes and prepared themselves to meet their end. But even after waiting for a while, they were surprised to realize that they were still safe and sound.

So, they opened their eyes once more to look at the Hellking, only to widen them in shock.

They found the humongous Hellking kneeling before an incredibly small and insignificant individual. The individual was so small that he couldn't even be considered as a speck of dust before the Hellking, but it was precisely this individual that left all of them astounded.

They actually recognized the person whom the Hellking was kneeling to. It was Chu Feng!

While everyone was still bewildered about the situation, Chu Feng suddenly leaped onto the head of the Hellking, and the Hellking rose back to its feet.

As it stood back up, it began emanating its domineering aura once more.

With everything that had happened, it felt more accurate to say that Chu Feng, instead of the Hellking, was the ruler of this land. No matter how powerful the Hellking was, it still stood beneath Chu Feng's feet like a mere mount.

Everyone was dumbfounded. Even Zuoqiu Yanliang was flabbergasted by the turn of events.

Their inability to comprehend what they were seeing made their minds go completely empty.

While everyone was still shocked out of their minds, Chu Feng remarked nonchalantly, "I forgot to tell you, but I was the one who caused this Cleansing to occur."

Chapter 4757: Just a Paper Tiger

"Junior Chu Feng, w-what is going on?" Li Muzhi asked.

"Senior Li, you don't have to worry about anything. Everything is in my control," Chu Feng replied.

"Just what is going on?" Li Muzhi continued probing on.

"To put it simply, I triggered a fortuitous encounter by coming into this trial via the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. I managed to grasp the fortuitous encounter, which initiated the Cleansing," Chu Feng replied.

"You were the one who started it? But... that's not right. How could you have started the Cleansing? Even Lord Dugu Lingtian didn't initiate the Cleansing when he stopped it back then!" Li Muzhi found this matter hard to believe.

It wasn't just him. The other disciples were in a state of disbelief too. Everything that had transpired was beyond their imagination.

"Lord Dugu Lingtian might have gone about it another way, so I shan't speculate what he went through. However, I'm very certain what happened this time around. I was the one who triggered the Cleansing, but this is also a fortuitous encounter to the rest of you too.

"Based on what I've seen thus far, the entire Vicious Beast Hellworld is a formation constructed by the sect founder, governing the birth and death of the beasts. However, there's a limit to how much the formation can bear, and once it reaches its limit, it would carry out a Cleansing to reset everything back to zero.

“There are two types of Cleansing in total. One is an automatic function of the formation and the other one is a manual trigger. The results of resetting the world are the same, but the processes are different.

“Later on, when I fully trigger the Cleansing and the destructive energy suffuses the whole Vicious Beast Hellworld, you’ll find yourself surrounded with many fortuitous encounters for cultivation.

“If I’m not mistaken, all of you will be put inside an illusory world by then. There are varying difficulties to the illusory world, but as long as you can clear it, you’ll be able to receive a benefit that’ll be vital to you later on.

“Of course, you won’t be punished if you can’t clear the illusory world either. You’ll just be trapped inside, only allowed to leave once the destructive energy finally recedes. In any case, you won’t face any danger here,” Chu Feng said.

The disciples thought that they were all doomed, but who could have thought that there would be such a turn of events?

Not only would they not die to the terrifying Cleansing, but there were also fortuitous encounters waiting for them! It felt like they had been teleported from hell into paradise in the blink of an eye!

With such thoughts in mind, they began trembling in excitement.

“You bastard! In the end, you were the one who started this whole mess!”
n.)OveℓbIn

A furious bellow suddenly sounded, bursting everyone’s bubble. It was from Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“You interrupted our hunt and still dare to claim that you would be able to ensure our safety? Aren’t you the one who put us in danger in the first place?” Zuoqiu Yanliang pointed a finger at Chu Feng as he spat through gritted teeth.

He had fallen on his bum out of fear earlier, but when he realized that the Cleansing was under Chu Feng’s control, he rose back to his feet and reverted back to his initial arrogant state.

Grar!

All of a sudden, a furious howl echoed from the Hellking beneath Chu Feng's feet. Before the towering Hellking, Zuoqiu Yanliang looked as insignificant as an ant. It wasn't just a difference in physique; he was also hopelessly weak in comparison.

This roar directed toward Zuoqiu Yanliang ripped his robe apart, almost exposing his bare body before everyone. Meanwhile, Zuoqiu Yanliang felt his body turning numb as he fell to the ground once more.

"Zuoqiu Yanliang, you sure are shameless. Even till now, you still dare to act arrogantly before me? Do you think I dare not deal with you just because you have a grandfather to back you? Kneel down and admit your fault right now, or else... I'll make sure that you die a dog's death!" Chu Feng spat.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing? Are you intending to deal with me using the powers of the Hellking? Others might be intimidated by that trick of yours, but not me! Do it if you dare then! If you kill me, even if you can get out of the Vicious Beast Hellworld alive, you won't be able to escape from the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect!"

Unexpectedly, Zuoqiu Yanliang actually showed no fear before the powerful Hellking, putting on a hardy attitude instead.

"Are you questioning my guts?"

The Hellking raised its leg up, projecting a massive shadow over a large swathe of land.

"Junior Chu Feng, we're all disciples from the same sect. Why must you make things difficult for Senior Zuoqiu?" Song Qian spoke up with the intention of pleading on Zuoqiu Yanliang's behalf.

"How ironic for you to say that, Senior Song. To think that you do know that we're from the sect. If so, why didn't you try to stop Zuoqiu Yanliang when he was trying to oppress me? It looks like the only one you view as your fellow sect member is Zuoqiu Yanliang whereas I'm just a mere outsider," Chu Feng sneered.

"Junior Chu Feng, how can you distort the meaning of my words?" Song Qian tried to argue her way out of this. Needless to say, she wouldn't admit to being unfair here.

However, Chu Feng had already lost his patience with her.

“Scram aside, or else you’ll be dying together with Zuoqiu Yanliang here!”

The Hellking began lowering its massive leg. Despite its slow speed, the tremendous pressure from its weight had already crushed down on the ground, stirring up a furious gale and indenting a huge depression on the ground.

Seeing this, the other disciples quickly scattered away. Even Song Qian dared not to remain in the area. Only Zuoqiu Yanliang was left paralyzed on the spot.

It was not that Zuoqiu Yanliang didn’t want to escape, but his strength had been sealed off by the Hellking, rendering him unable to move at all.

“Stop, stop! I admit my fault, alright?”

Seeing that he was really going to die at this rate, Zuoqiu Yanliang finally relented. He broke down in tears, and even snot began dripping out of his nose.

How could he not be afraid before the powerful Hellking? He was merely putting on a strong front. He was betting on the fact that Chu Feng dared not to kill him.

However, he dared not to continue gambling on it anymore. Chu Feng would really kill him if he continued being obstinate here, so he ended up breaking down like a child who had done wrong.

He had completely lost his previous imposing front as a Hidden Dragon Disciple. If not for the disciples seeing it with their own eyes, they wouldn’t dare to believe that Zuoqiu Yanliang actually had such a weak side to him.

“Heh...”

Seeing the current state Zuoqiu Yanliang was in, he let out a sneer and didn’t continue pressuring him. He knew from the start that Zuoqiu Yanliang was just a paper tiger. It was just that he didn’t think that the latter would actually be so weak.

It was already a huge punishment for the arrogant Zuoqiu Yanliang to expose such a sight of him to the others. After all, he was obviously someone who had a lot of pride and cared a lot about his reputation.

“I officially declare the commencement of the Cleansing. Seniors, the opportunity is in your hands. How much you can grasp depends on yourself.”

Chu Feng quickly formed a series of hand seals, and the Hellking began releasing a white glow that swiftly enveloped the whole Vicious Beast Hellworld, blinding the surroundings.

Chapter 4758: Are You Intending to Harm Me?

Divine light filled the surroundings. It was so blinding that even cultivators of their caliber dared not to open their eyes. It was only fortunate that the light didn't linger for long before fading.

They realized that even though their relative positions to one another were still the same, their surroundings had begun changing. They were no longer in the Vicious Beast Hellworld anymore, and the terrifying black tornado was nowhere to be seen.

Instead, they were in a very clean place devoid of grass and wood. It was a white world of emptiness, but it felt oddly peaceful, as if it was a sanctuary of some sort.

The Hellking was still present at the same spot, just that it had morphed into a white sculpture. Its appearance still looked rather ferocious, but for some reason, the feeling it induced in others was no longer one of fear but divinity.

Most importantly of all, its opened mouth was actually a spirit gate formation. On the spirit gate formation were four huge words—Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace!

Despite only being a spirit formation gate, the aura it gave off was divine too. The crowd couldn't help but feel excited as they knew the land beyond the spirit formation gate was bound to contain a great fortuitous encounter for them.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was still standing on the head of the Hellking. Despite his small body, he stood tall and lofty, as if he was the ruler of this space. In comparison to Zuoqiu Yanliang, who was still weeping pitifully, having not yet

recovered from his mental breakdown, it was made apparent to everyone just who the coward here was.

“Junior Chu Feng, where is this place? Didn’t you say that we’ll be cultivating separately?” someone amidst the crowd asked curiously. n.)0veℓbIn

Chu Feng pointed to the spirit formation gate in the mouth of the Hellking and said with a smile, “This is the fortuitous encounter I’m talking about. Once you enter the spirit formation gate, you’ll walk right into the illusion. There, you’ll be able to obtain some benefits that are bound to be greater than whatever you can earn from hunting in the Vicious Beast Hellworld.

“At the same time, you’ll be put through a trial too. If you can clear the trial, you’ll be able to obtain greater benefits and leave this place in advance. If you fail to clear the trial, there’s nothing to worry about either since there’s no punishment here. However, you’ll be trapped in the illusion until it finally dissipates. There won’t be anything bad to it, just that you’ll be staying here for a little longer.”

“So, we can just walk into the spirit formation gate now and challenge the trial in the illusion? Junior Chu Feng, since you have such a deep understanding of the place, can you tell us what’s in the trial and what do we have to do in order to clear it?” a personal disciple asked.

“Indeed, Junior Chu Feng. Give us a bit of pointer. If we can clear the trial and obtain greater benefits, we definitely won’t forget your grace.”

The other personal disciples chirped in as well.

“To be frank with you, while I am able to govern everything here through the powers of the Hellking, I’d turn into no more than an ordinary mortal like you inside the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace. So, it’s not that I don’t want to help you but that I’m not sure what kind of trial awaits us there.

“However, I can confirm that this is something left behind by the sect founder. Regardless of whether we succeed or not, it’s an honor for all of us to be here. We’ll be the first ones since the founding of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to cultivate inside the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace,” Chu Feng said.

“The first ones? Indeed, I don’t think that I’ve heard of the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace before... Doesn’t that mean that we’re actually quite formidable?”

“Junior Chu Feng, this is all thanks to you!”

While Chu Feng didn't really offer them much help here, they were still excited to know that they were the first batch of disciples in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to enter this place, and it filled their hearts with gratitude.

This was indeed a huge honor, something that they could most definitely boast about in the future.

“There's no need to thank me. We're fellow disciples from the same sect after all. It's just that there's something I do need your help on,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, feel free to speak.”

Chu Feng waved his sleeves grandly.

Shoosh!

The Hellking's sculpture glowed brightly, producing balls of light that darted out from the sculpture and into the disciples' bodies. Before anyone could make sense of what the balls of light were, they had already dived right into their hearts, fusing as one with them.

However, what was worth mentioning was that Li Muzhi, Ma Yueyue, Zhao Shi, and the others who were on closer terms with Chu Feng weren't 'attacked' by the balls of light.

“Junior Chu Feng, what's this?” Song Qian asked with a deep frown.

Even though she saw the ball of light darting into her body, she couldn't feel its existence anywhere in her. However, her intuition told her that the ball of light meant nothing good at all.

“Senior Song, you're all witnesses of the events that transpired today. I was the one who cleared the Cleansing and opened the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace. I don't demand anything from the rest of you, and I don't expect you to pay me back either. I just hope that you can spread the word about everything that has happened here honestly lest I get slandered.

“I don't really care much about the accomplishment and everything else, but I just don't want to be cursed by others despite having done a good deed here.”

Chu Feng specially shot a glance at Zuoqiu Yanliang after saying those words.

Everyone immediately understood what Chu Feng's words meant. Chu Feng was simply afraid that Zuoqiu Yanliang would distort the truth and attempt to frame Chu Feng so as to get back at him.

However, as long as the crowd reported the matter honestly, it would become apparent who was at the right and who was at the wrong here. Given so, Zuoqiu Yanliang would be at a loss as to how he should deal with Chu Feng.

In other words, Chu Feng was just leaving an additional layer of insurance here so as to ensure that no one would backstab him after the matter was over.

“Junior Chu Feng, we aren't despicable individuals who would betray our benefactor. We'll reveal what we witnessed today truthfully without any falsehoods. However, I would just like to know what the balls of light that just entered our bodies are,” Song Qian asked once more.

“Senior Song, know a person's face but not his heart. It's not that I don't trust you, but I prefer to always have an additional layer of guarantee, especially when it comes to something as important as this,” Chu Feng replied.

“What do you mean by that? Just get straight to the point!” Song Qian's tone was getting more and more hostile.

“It's very simple. I've planted a seed of power from the Hellking into your bodies. Even after I lose control of the Hellking's power after leaving this place, I'd still be able to trigger the seed of power to take your lives. As long as you reveal everything truthfully, nothing will happen. However, if someone gets blinded by whatever and tries to distort the truth to pin false accusations on me, I'll make sure that he dies a horrible death!” Chu Feng said.

“You bastard! Chu Feng, how dare you use such means to threaten me?!” Song Qian flew into a state of rage.

While the other disciples didn't say anything at all, their complexions still turned incredibly awful. Chu Feng did have his own reasons for doing this, but the feeling of having their hands grasped in the hands of another was simply awful.

“Senior Song, why are you getting so agitated? Like I’ve said, as long you reveal whatever you have witnessed today truthfully, I won’t make things hard for you. It can’t be that...”

Chu Feng’s eyes suddenly narrowed as a biting coldness suddenly glazed over his eyes.

“... Senior Song, are you intending to do me harm?”

Chapter 4759: A Choice of Life and Death

Song Qian could clearly sense the killing intent in Chu Feng’s eyes, so she hurriedly clarified, “Junior Chu Feng, that’s not what I mean. It’s just that...”

Before Song Qian could finish her words, Chu Feng had already butted right in and interject, “All is fine as long as you harbor no such intentions. Just know that if you d attempt to backstab me, regardless of whether you’re a woman or not, I won’t let you off easily.”

After saying his piece, Chu Feng turned to Li Muzhi and the others and said, “Senior Li, you all should enter first.”

Chu Feng didn’t enter the spirit formation gate first out of fear that Li Muzhi and the others would be done in by Zuoqiu Yanliang once they weren’t under his protection anymore.

Li Muzhi and the others also understood Chu Feng’s intention and made their way into the spirit formation gate.

“I’ve already placed the opportunity into your hands. If you don’t trust me and think that I intend to harm you, you’re more than welcomed not to enter the spirit formation gate and remain here. Of course, you won’t get anything good by remaining here, and you’ll have to wait till the energy in the formation fully dissipates before you’re able to leave the area.”

With those words, Chu Feng leaped into the spirit formation gate himself too.

Upon seeing this, the others also prepared to make their way into the spirit formation gate, not wanting to miss this opportunity.

“Halt your footsteps!”

However, a furious howl suddenly echoed at this moment, causing all of the disciples' bodies to tremble in fear. The one who had just shouted was no other than Zuoqiu Yanliang.

The crowd turned to look at Zuoqiu Yanliang. His cheeks were still stained with tears, but his expression had already changed greatly from before. It made the crowd realize that Zuoqiu Yanliang's earlier 'mental breakdown' might have been feigned,

However, this was no longer important in the current situation anymore. What was key here was that he had an incredibly glacial look on his face, and the crowd had no idea what he was planning in mind at the moment.

“Don't worry, I won't stop you from entering the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace. This is a precious opportunity, and I have no intention of passing it by myself either. I just want to leave you with a warning—whose words do you think truly counts in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect? If you feel that Chu Feng can cover you even after leaving this place, by all means, heed his words. Otherwise, listen to my instructions.”

Afterward, Zuoqiu Yanliang began delegating some tasks to them. He wanted them to frame Chu Feng and pin all of the blame on him. Everyone realized that Chu Feng's earlier act of infusing the balls of light into them was indeed a wise decision on his part, for the shameless Zuoqiu Yanliang really started to coerce them to do his bidding.

However, this also put them in a spot too. They dared not to offend Zuoqiu Yanliang, but at the same time, their lives were grasped in Chu Feng's hands too.

“Junior Song, feed this to all of our juniors here.”

Zuoqiu Yanliang took out a black bottle and handed it over to Song Qian.

Song Qian uncapped the bottle, and a black aura immediately gushed out. When the black aura finally diffused into the surroundings, all that was left were many small colorless pills.

Despite the ordinary appearance of the pills, the faces of the crowd paled in horror. They knew that this was a delayed poison that could take one's life if one failed to consume the antidote within a given amount of time.

Chu Feng had already planted the power of the Hellking into their bodies to govern their life and death, and now Zuoqiu Yanliang wanted to feed them poison too.

Weren't they doomed already?

"Senior Zuoqiu, Junior Chu Feng doesn't seem to be a bad person. There's really no need for you to do this."

Knowing that they would be doomed if things continued proceeding down this direction, a female disciple began speaking up hesitantly. She didn't want to consume the poison, so she was trying to persuade Zuoqiu Yanliang otherwise.

Boom!

But the next moment, Zuoqiu Yanliang suddenly thrust his palm forth. There was a dull thud, and the female disciple was reduced to bits.

This sight shocked all of the disciples. Even Song Qian had a tight frown on her forehead.

"Shouldn't the rest of you know better as to what you should do now?" Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

Song Qian quickly handed the pills into the hands of all of the disciples present. Most of these disciples were hesitant to swallow the pills, but with Zuoqiu Yanliang eyeing them with murderous intent, they had no other choice. Without any hesitation, they quickly swallowed the poisonous pills down.

"That's more like it. Remember, Junior Luo's death was caused by Chu Feng."

The 'Junior Luo' Zuoqiu Yanliang spoke of naturally referred to the person whom he had just killed.

"Also, there's no need for the rest of you to be afraid. The balls of light that just entered your body poses no threat to you at all. We're all cultivators, so how could we possibly be oblivious when something life-threatening enters our bodies? Can you feel the ball of light anywhere in your body right now?"

"Besides, Chu Feng's strength was granted to him by the Hellking. Once he leaves this place and loses control of the Hellking, how could he possibly

continue controlling the Hellking's powers? The lot of you should at least understand the basic principles of world spiritist techniques, so you should know that what he said is impossible.

"Chu Feng's threat is nothing more than a facade, but the poison I've fed you is no lie. However, as long as you do as I say, not only will I give you the antidote, but I'll reward you for your service too."

After saying his piece, Zuoqiu Yanliang leaped upward and began heading toward the spirit formation gate. However, right at the entrance of the spirit formation gate, he suddenly halted his footsteps and turned to Song Qian.

"Junior Song, return me my pill," he said.

Song Qian quickly leaped over to Zuoqiu Yanliang's side and passed the bottle filled with the colorless pills back to him. Zuoqiu Yanliang took out a pill before stowing the bottle into his robe.

"Junior Song, you sure are careless. You distributed the pills to all of your juniors, why didn't you keep take one for yourself?" Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

"Senior Zuoqiu, do you not trust me too?"

Song Qian began panicking. There was no way she would be willing to consume that poisonous pill too.

"Junior Song, how could I possibly not trust you. It's just that there's something which Chu Feng said that I agreed deeply with. It's better to be safe than sorry," Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

"I won't eat it. If you don't trust me, you might as well just kill me."

Song Qian turned around and began walking away.

"Junior Song, don't be mad. How could I possibly bear to kill you?" Zuoqiu Yanliang said with a smile.

However, in the next instant, he suddenly rushed forth to grab Song Qian and pried open her mouth before forcing the pill in.

"Cough cough! You..."

Song Qian bared her teeth furiously. However, Zuoqiu Yanliang paid no heed to her anger and sneered disdainfully, "As long as you're obedient, I'll give the antidote to you and everyone else."

After saying those words, he made his way into the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace.

"Senior Song, what should we do?"

The other disciples looked at Song Qian worriedly, not knowing what they should do here.

In fact, they weren't in a mood to cultivate at all. No matter what benefits they might obtain here, it looked like the only fate awaiting them was death.

"We can only make a gamble here. We can only stake our bets that Chu Feng is lying to us and that he doesn't have the strength to kill us. That's the only way we can live. Chu Feng's claim might be false, but Zuoqiu Yanliang's poison is the real deal."

Song Qian hated Zuoqiu Yanliang more than anything right now, but she knew that she had no choice but to stand on his side if she wanted to survive.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4760: Returning From the Dead - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4760: Returning From the Dead

Chapter 4760: Returning From the Dead

Chu Feng had entered the Vicious Beast Hellworld through the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake and triggered the legendary Cleansing. Afterward, he even triggered the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace whom no one in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect had seen before.

Under Chu Feng's lead, Li Muzhi and the others who chose to fight against the Cleansing managed to earn the right to cultivate in the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace.

As for those who didn't head to the eye of the black tornado to stop the Cleansing, they knew nothing about what happened afterward. They only

noticed that the Vicious Beast Hellworld had suddenly turned completely white, as if turning into a holy land.

Such a change was incredibly confusing to them, and some of them even wondered if they had died and entered hell.

Some of the daring ones tried to head toward the center of the Vicious Beast Hellworld, where they found the sculpture of the Hellking and the entrance to the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace.

Unfortunately, they were unable to enter the spirit formation gate because they were unqualified. This was not the will of Chu Feng but a rule inherent to the Vicious Beast Hellworld, a setting decided by the sect founder.

...

Time passed swiftly, and the hunting of the Vicious Beast Hellworld should have already come to an end. However, the spirit formation gate still remained firmly shut, not opening at all.

What was even more worrisome was that in previous years, there would always be disciples who had encountered powerful beasts beyond their means to deal with that attempt to teleport back using their teleportation talisman, but not a single disciple had escaped from the Vicious Beast Hellworld this year.

This abnormality swiftly caught the attention of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

At the same time, it was also about time for the trial over at the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake to come to an end. The disciples had already climbed out of the lakes and washed themselves and changed out of their dao robes, ready to leave the area at any moment.

It was just that there were different expressions on the faces of the disciples. Some were overjoyed whereas others looked gloomy.

Those who were overjoyed were the ones who succeeded in the tempering and were now able to sense the powerful natural energies in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Their success here meant that they had a bright future ahead for them.

As for those who looked gloomy, there weren't just limited to those who failed the tempering, and Tu Yuanyuan was one such example. The reason why she was downcast despite her success was due to Chu Feng's death.

Regardless of whether the disciples succeeded or failed, they would still walk forward and thank the protector. Yet, Tu Yuanyuan didn't do so. She knew that someone of her identity couldn't afford to offend the protector, but she couldn't bring herself to do so at this very moment.

She was fully aware that Chu Feng's death was the doing of this protector.

Gululu—

All of a sudden, the seventh lake suddenly began rampaging. The disciples who were just about to leave the trial turned their gazes over curiously.

"Lord Protector, why would this happen?" someone tried to seek clarification from the protector.

However, the protector was also confused by the happenings too.

Hualala!

The pungent lake water suddenly rose into the air together with a figure. When the lake water finally settled and everyone managed to catch a closer glimpse at the figure's face, they immediately recoiled in horror.

Only Tu Yuanyuan began skipping excitedly and rushed straight toward that figure's side to leap into his embrace.

Even though the other party was covered in the dirty black lake water whereas Tu Yuanyuan had already washed herself clean, she didn't hesitate to wrap her arms around him.

She was simply too moved that Chu Feng had 'come back from the dead'.

"Ey, Junior Tu. Please have some self-respect. I know that I'm handsome, but you still shouldn't take advantage of me in front of everyone else."

Tu Yuanyuan might not have scorned Chu Feng, but the same didn't apply the other way around. Chu Feng pushed her away, though the smile on his face showed that he intended it as a joke. There was no way he would really scorn the only person who really cared about him here.

“Chu Feng, you’re still alive?”

Some of the disciples rubbed their eyes and confirmed that it was really Chu Feng before blurting out in astonishment.

“Why? Are you disappointed that I’m still alive?”

Chu Feng turned to the protector and said, “Lord Protector, surely you aren’t disappointed, right? After all, I’m a disciple whom you showered so much care and concern for earlier.”

His words were dripping with sarcasm. That shameless and despicable protector had intentionally rigged with the lake to kill him earlier while claiming that he was trying to help him.

“Chu Feng, it’s good that you came back alive. Where’s your dao robe? It’s only right for you to return your dao robe after the tempering is over,” the protector said.

“Lord Protector, it’s not that I don’t want to return it but that it has gone missing,” Chu Feng replied.

“It has gone missing? How could the dao robe you’re wearing go missing just like that?” the protector asked.

“Lord Protector, you can’t blame me for that. You have seen just what kind of adversity I’ve faced earlier on. It’s already a blessing that I was able to come back alive, so how could I possibly be able to pay any attention to that dao robe?” Chu Feng said.

“Senior Chu Feng, what did you go through earlier?” Tu Yuanyuan asked anxiously.

From her expression, it could be seen that she was more worried than curious.

“You won’t believe it even if I told you. I entered the Vicious Beast Hellworld,” Chu Feng said.

“Vicious Beast Hellworld?”

Upon hearing those three words, the crowd revealed looks of disbelief. While the crowd was still weighing how plausible Chu Feng's words were, the person-in-question continued on.

"After entering the Vicious Beast Hellworld, I triggered the Cleansing, which in turn brought about a fortuitous encounter known as the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace. I went through the trial of the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace before finally returning here. There were many close shaves there, but it's fortunate that it's all over now, so you need not worry for me," Chu Feng said with a smile.

All of the disciples were dumbfounded to hear those words.

Chu Feng's explanation only left them even more confused. In the first place, only a few of them had heard of the Vicious Beast Hellworld, so the term, Cleansing, was even more foreign to them. As for the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace, that was something that not even the protector had heard of.

"A load of nonsense! How can a disciple tell such blatant lies? Chu Feng, I can turn a blind eye to you maligning me, but you should pay careful heed to your actions and words from this day onward. The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is a place governed by rules. The behavior you have shown thus far is inappropriate!" the protector lectured Chu Feng.

He was still a little worried about it initially since he was aware of the rumors that the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake might be connected to the Vicious Beast Hellworld. If Chu Feng had really entered the Vicious Beast Hellworld through the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, he would have really achieved something significant.

That would really be the worst-case scenario to him.

However, when he heard the latter part of Chu Feng's explanation, he became convinced that Chu Feng was spinning up lies. He knew that the Cleansing couldn't be triggered by a disciple, and going by the natural cycle of the Vicious Beast Hellworld, it shouldn't be time for a Cleansing to happen yet.

As for the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace, it sounded even more ludicrous since he had never heard of such a place before. There was no record of it at all in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

From that, he concluded that Chu Feng was lying, and all of his worries immediately evaporated. Even if Chu Feng didn't die here, it didn't change the fact that he failed to break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record.

It would suffice as long as he failed the bet.

And since even the protector was doubting Chu Feng's words, there was no way the other disciples would believe him.

All of the disciples began gossiping amongst themselves. None of them spoke aloud, but their expressions made it clear that they were talking bad about Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng didn't pay it any heed.

"I told you that you wouldn't believe me, but it doesn't matter. The truth will eventually come to light."

As he said those words, he glanced at the protector and continued, "Don't you agree, Lord Protector?"

The protector's face darkened upon saying those provocative words from Chu Feng, but it was quickly replaced with a confident smile.

Despite the talent Chu Feng had displayed thus far, in the eyes of the protector, Chu Feng was someone who would never be able to pose a threat to him, not to mention that he had a powerful backing too.

However, what he didn't know was that Chu Feng was someone who had walked out of the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace. He had obtained a benefit and overcome the illusion.

Not long had passed since he was drowned in the seventh lake, but he wasn't the same person as he used to be anymore.

Chapter 4661: Rank Nine Utmost Exalted

"Chu Feng, did you succeed in your tempering?" Tu Yuanyuan asked.

"You silly girl. Isn't that obvious?"

Chu Feng's confident smile was more than enough to answer Tu Yuanyuan's question.

“Woah, the two of us succeeded in the tempering. This is incredible!”

Tu Yuanyuan was overjoyed.

However, the other disciples revealed conflicted expressions on their faces. They had seen with their own eyes how Chu Feng was swallowed by the lake water earlier on, so they thought that he would be dead. Yet, he actually emerged alive and successfully completed the tempering.

While he didn't break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record, his feat was still not one that could be evaluated using common sense.

“Lord Protector, thank you for your care. Have a good rest and don't work too hard. Make sure to treasure the present, for no one knows whether there'll be a tomorrow for you,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Chu Feng, what do you mean by those words? Are you cursing me?” the protector bellowed with a deep frown.

“Of course not, how could I dare to curse you? Lord Protector, please don't distort the meaning of my words. I speak with kind intentions in mind. I know that I'm not the best with words, but given how much you treasure all of us, you wouldn't really hold it against me, right?”

“Since the cultivation is finally over, I'll be taking my leave first,” Chu Feng said before turning around to leave.

“Hmph! Let's see how long more you're able to remain gleeful!”

The protector felt like his veins were going to burst just by seeing how arrogant Chu Feng was. It was only under someone else's request that he chose to deal with Chu Feng, but now, he would still ensure Chu Feng's downfall even if he didn't receive any further orders.

He couldn't tolerate a disciple acting so haughtily in his presence.

...

After leaving the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, Chu Feng headed straight back to his residence.

After learning of the encounters Chu Feng had at the Sixfinger Blackwater Lake, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall held a banquet in his residence

to celebrate this victory. Of course, there were only five people at this celebration though.

Other than the chief elder and Chu Feng, there was the Law Enforcement Elder Li Boyu, Elder Dao Qnian, and Song Xi.

Naturally, Song Xi could only participate in this banquet due to Chu Feng. The chief elder intentionally brought him over because he knew that the two of them were on good terms. nove.Lb.1n

According to him, it seemed like he had invited Chu Feng's big brother, Duan Liufeng, too. It was just that Duan Liufeng was in closed-door training at the moment, so he turned down the invitation.

"Duan Liufeng has been acting rather weird recently. Does he not know that he wouldn't even be qualified to enter the North Tortoise Hall if not for you? Given the calamity that you have just been through, the least he could do is to come over and show some concern for you!" Elder Li Boyi murmured in displeasure.

"Elder Li, Brother Duan must be trying to regain his cultivation at the moment. It wouldn't be good to bother him at the moment," Chu Feng spoke up on Duan Liufeng's behalf.

Since Chu Feng had already said so, Li Boyi chose not to harp on the matter. He was only grumbling for Chu Feng's behalf in the first place.

"Chu Feng, you mentioned that it was Protector Qi who intentionally trapped you in the seventh lake. Do you have any basis behind your claims?" the chief elder asked.

Everyone immediately put down their wine glasses to look at Chu Feng upon hearing those words. This was a matter with grave importance as Protector Qi was no trifling figure.

"I do. I was cultivating normally when he secretly used his energy to push me into the depths of the lake, intending to use the lake as an excuse to plot my death. However, he underestimated me," Chu Feng said.

"Haaa..."

The chief elder sighed helplessly upon hearing those words. Li Boyi, Dao Qinian, and Song Xi also frowned as well.

The banquet suddenly fell silent at this instant.

“This is unlikely to be an accident. I heard that Protector Qi is indebted to Nangong Yuliu’s grandmother, Lord Nangong Chunyue, and has joined her faction. If it’s a request from Nangong Yuliu, it’s likely that Protector Qi would indeed do it,” the chief elder said.

It turned out that the thing he had been worrying about all this while really came true.

“In the end, everything is still traced back to Nangong Yuliu. Chu Feng, you should just apologize to him,” Li Boyi advised.

Their North Tortoise Hall was simply too weak. Chu Feng had offended someone whom even they dared not to, so there was no way they could side with him. They didn’t have the power to resolve this matter on his behalf, so they could only ask him to swallow down his grievances and apologize to Nangong Yuliu.

“Elders, do you think that this is a problem that can be solved by apologizing? I have no grudge with Nangong Yuliu, but a conflict still occurred between us in the end,” Chu Feng said.

Those words made the chief elder, Li Boyi, and Dao Qinian fall silent. They knew the ins and outs of the matter, and Chu Feng was indeed not to be blamed for it. There was some truth in what Chu Feng said.

This was indeed not a problem that could be resolved by just apologizing.

Nangong Yuliu simply looked down on Chu Feng, and that was why he dared to trample on him. Regardless of whether Chu Feng put on a tough attitude or feigned weakness, the results would still be the same. They didn’t want to open up a path for Chu Feng to rise up through the ranks.

In truth, they were just praying for a glimmer of hope that Nangong Yuliu would let Chu Feng off if he was just willing to apologize.

After a short moment of silence, Elder Dao Qinian suddenly thought of something and asked, “Chu Feng, since you’re acquainted with Li Muzhi, why

don't you ask him for his help? If Li Muzhi's grandfather, Lord Li Fengxian, is willing to help you..."

However, before Chu Feng could respond, the chief elder shook his head and said, "It's futile. Lord Li Fengxian already has some conflict with Lord Nangong Chunyue, but they're looking to reconcile due to some official matters they have to cooperate on. There's no way Lord Li Fengxian would turn against Lord Nangong Chunyue for Chu Feng at this critical moment."

The chief elder's words plunged Dao Qian and the others into despair. Even though the chief elder wasn't particularly strong, he was still the leader of the North Tortoise Hall. The information he had was most likely to be true.

"Elders, I know that you're concerned about me, but you can put your mind at ease. I can deal with these matters myself. Today is a day of celebration, so let's put aside our worries for the time being, alright? Shall we have a toast?"

Chu Feng raised his cup with a smile.

The chief elder and the others raised their cups to return the formality, but they were still unable to bring themselves to smile. Despite it being a celebratory banquet, the only one who seemed to be happy here was Chu Feng.

And the reason why Chu Feng was so happy was because he had obtained a huge benefit and successfully overcome the illusion. The benefit from the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace was an accumulation of natural energies, but Chu Feng had already gathered sufficient natural energies in his body. All he lacked was just an impetus to make a breakthrough here.

While the natural energies from the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace contained bits of martial comprehension too, they were of little help to Chu Feng. Thus, this benefit wasn't of great use to him.

However, he obtained what he needed the most from breaking the illusion.

What was it that Chu Feng needed the most at the moment? Clearly, it was to unlock the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

And at the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace, Chu Feng managed to open two locks on the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor. It didn't remove the seal on his World

Spirit Space, but it raised his cultivation from rank seven Utmost Exalted level to rank nine Utmost Exalted level.

Chapter 4762: Xia Yan Comes Out of Closed-door Training

Chu Feng was just a step away from reaching Martial Exalted level. With the means he had at his disposal, he could be said to be invincible amongst all those beneath Martial Exalted level.

And it had only been a few days since he entered the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

He was able to raise his cultivation from rank six Utmost Exalted level to rank nine within such a short period of time, and naturally, it felt him overjoyed.

Martial Exalted level had looked so far away from him in the past, but it was finally within reach now.

But of course, he had no intention of going around bragging about this. He was waiting for the moment that the Vicious Beast Hellworld opened up and everyone was released before spreading the matter around.

Compared to breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record, this matter could stir an even larger commotion. After all, this was a feat that even Lord Dugu Lingtian was unable to achieve.

As the chief elder and the others were in a horrible mood from worrying about Chu Feng, the celebratory banquet didn't last for too long.

Chu Feng returned to his residence, only to find a crowd knocking on his door. This crowd consisted not just of disciples and elders from the North Tortoise Hall but some disciples from the South Vermilion Hall too.

And at the very center of this crowd stood Xia Ran.

"Junior Chu Feng, you're finally back."

Xia Ran didn't lose his temper right after seeing Chu Feng. On the contrary, he revealed a delighted smile instead. Those who didn't know better would have thought that the two of them were on good terms with one another.

This sight left everyone feeling astonished. They thought that Xia Ran was here to cause Chu Feng trouble, but his attitude was more than amicable.

However, Chu Feng simply sneered off his fawning, saying, “Xia Ran, what are you playing at this time around?”

“Junior Chu Feng, I know that I’ve done wrong this time around. I have no other intention in mind but to apologize to you. I have come with my utmost sincerity, so I hope that you get let bygones be bygones too.”

Xia Ran glanced at the six disciples behind him, who quickly stepped forward and took out a chest each from their Cosmos Sacks.

All six chests looked identical, but they contained different treasures ranging from rare medicinal herbs, martial cultivation resources, spirit power cultivation resources, ores, and so on.

There were even three top-grade Incomplete Exalted Armament too.

“Junior Chu Feng, this is a token of my sincerity. Please accept them,” Xia Ran said.

“I’ve received your sincerity, so you can take your items and leave now,” Chu Feng said with a wave of his hand.

The stuff that Xia Ran had brought out was indeed worth quite a bit, but there was nothing that Chu Feng really needed in there.

“Junior Chu Feng, please wait a moment. There’s a matter which I need to talk to you about. Is it convenient... if we enter your residence to talk?” Xia Ran asked.

“What is it? You can just speak here,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, let’s talk inside instead. It’s not convenient here,” Xia Ran replied.

“Oh? Very well, give me a moment.”

Chu Feng first stepped into his residence, and it was a moment later before he finally opened his door.

“Come in,” Chu Feng said with a beckon of his hand, indicating for them to come in.

Seeing this, Xia Ran and his subordinates walked in without any hesitation. However, just a short moment later, a loud 'peng' sound echoed, and the door to Chu Feng's residence suddenly blasted open.

Following that, the six disciples from the South Vermilion Hall scrambled out of the residence, shouting in a fluster.

"Save us, save us! Hurry up and get an elder here!"

"Chu Feng is out of his mind! He's trying to kill Senior Xia Ran!"

The spectating elders and disciples immediately rushed in to take a look, only to see Xia Ran lying feebly on the ground, bleeding profusely from his mouth, nose, and ears.

Xia Ran was indeed severely injured.

What was even eerier was that Chu Feng didn't look discomposed at the least. Instead, he burst into laughter.

"Xia Ran, I knew that you had ulterior motives for coming here. Just as I've expected, you're indeed up to no good! However, I must admit that I didn't expect that someone like you would go to the extent of harming yourself so as to do me in. What a tenacious cockroach you are," Chu Feng sneered scornfully.

"Chu Feng, I came here to apologize to you, but you snubbed off my kind intentions and assaulted me even! I must have been blind to think of reconciling with someone like you!"

However, Xia Ran feigned ignorance of Chu Feng's words as he yelled out in anger and indignance. It looked almost as if someone had really wronged him here.

The surrounding crowd didn't witness the sight in person, so they couldn't tell who was right and who was wrong here. However, one thing they did know was that Chu Feng was in deep trouble now.

"Where is Xia Ran? Who has seen Xia Ran?"

A voice suddenly echoed from the distance at the moment, and it was growing louder by the moment.

“That voice... Can it possibly be...”

The elders and disciples immediately revealed nervous looks upon hearing that voice. Despite having not seen the person yet, they could already recognize her by her voice.

Soon, a beautiful female disciple dressed in the robes of the South Vermilion Hall appeared by the horizon of the sky, searching her surroundings intently. As she traveled through the area, she kept shouting Xia Ran’s name.

This female disciple had an appearance and disposition that few in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect could hope to compete with, such that she seemed to make any scenery come to life.

However, compared to her appearance, her name was far more well-known. On top of being the granddaughter of Hidden Dragon Elder Lord Xia Zhicheng and the chief of the Law Enforcement Hall, she was also the fourth rank Hidden Dragon Disciple, Xia Yan.

She was the reason why Xia Ran dared to act so arrogantly.

“It’s all over. Xia Yan actually came out of her closed-door training.”

“It’s all over. Chu Feng is doomed.”

“She’s definitely here to exact vengeance for Xia Ran.”

Everyone who saw Xia Yan was convinced that Chu Feng was done for. There was no one in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect who didn’t know of just how much Xia Yan doted on Xia Ran.

“Big sis, you have to redress my grievances!”

A person suddenly rushed through the crowd to run over to where Xia Yan was. He grabbed onto Xia Yan’s legs and began crying pitifully.

Had it been anyone else, Xia Yan would have surely sent them flying with her kick. However, she didn’t get angry at this person instead, and everyone didn’t think that there was anything weird with it either.

This person was no other than the little brother Xia Yan doted on, Xia Ran.

“Xia Ran, how did you end up in such a state? Who’s the one who did it?!”

Xia Yan was horrified to see Xia Ran's current state, and her face began warping in anger.

"It's Chu Feng, the North Tortoise Hall's Chu Feng!" Xia Ran cried out.

"Chu Feng? Which Chu Feng? Does he not know that you're the younger brother I've acknowledged? How dare he make a move on you!" Xia Yan bellowed as a glint flashed across her eyes.

She was still resting after having just come out of her closed-door training when she suddenly received a letter from Xia Ran telling her to come over to the North Tortoise Hall. So, she came here not knowing anything about the affairs between Chu Feng and Xia Ran.

But regardless of who Chu Feng was, Xia Yan wasn't planning on letting the culprit who dared to make Xia Ran suffer off the hook.

Chapter 4663: This Is a Misunderstanding

"Big sis, that Chu Feng knows that I'm your younger brother, but he still dared to make a move on me!" Xia Ran exclaimed tearfully.

"He dares to make a move on you despite knowing that you're my younger brother? The galls of him!"

Xia Yan was infuriated to hear those words, but she didn't lose her rationality. Instead, she began asking, "How did the conflict between the two of you happen? Were you the one who started the fight?"

"Of course not! Big sis, you know what kind of person I am. I've always treated others kindly, so when have I ever gotten into a conflict with others on my own accord? My grudge with Chu Feng stemmed from..."

Xia Ran began recounting to Xia Yan the grudges between him and Chu Feng. Of course, he selectively chose the details of the story so as to make him out to be the reasonable one here whereas Chu Feng was an irredeemable villain.

His words shocked all of the spectators.

Had they not seen it with their own eyes, they wouldn't dare believe that Xia Ran would be so shameless as to blatantly distort the truth. However, they dared not to say anything out of fear.

“Those scoundrels! How could there be such a vile person in the North Tortoise Hall? Where is he? Bring him to me!”

Oblivious to the truth, Xia Yan assumed that everything Xia Ran had said was true. Upon learning that someone dared to bully Xia Ran, she gritted her teeth furiously as murderous intent flickered in her eyes.

On the other hand, Xia Ran was overjoyed to see Xia Yan's reaction, though he made sure to maintain an aggrieved look on his face.

This was all within his expectations since this was the very scenario he had planned out.

After learning that Xia Yan had come out of closed-door training, he had someone send the letter he had prepared beforehand to Xia Yan while heading over to the North Tortoise Hall himself so as to frame Chu Feng.

Judging by Xia Yan's reaction, he was confident that Chu Feng would never live past today. He felt gleeful to have managed to devise such an ingenious plan.

“It's a misunderstanding! It's all a misunderstanding!”

All of a sudden, several figures descended upon the area. It was the chief elder and the others.

As soon as they learned that Xia Ran was here, they knew that something bad was going to happen, so they rushed over right away.

“The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, you still dare to show your face here! You sure know how to impress me. How can your North Tortoise Hall tolerate such a vile disciple? It's no wonder why the North Tortoise Hall has been declining under your leadership!”

Xia Yan didn't panic in the face of the chief elder at all. Instead, she continued speaking with her head held up high, as if a lofty princess interrogating a criminal. Yet, no one thought that there was anything wrong with her attitude.

She did have the power and background to put on airs here.

“Xia Yan, it’s all a misunderstanding. The truth is not like that,” the chief elder tried to explain.

Xia Ran stood up and howled furiously, “A misunderstanding? Look at my injuries! How could this be a misunderstanding?”

With Xia Yan backing him now, he had nothing to fear.

“Xia Ran, the conflict between you and Chu Feng was a minor matter. There’s no need to blow things up to this extent,” the chief elder advised.

“Big sis, did you see that? I’ve been beaten up to this extent, but the chief elder still dares to say that it’s a minor matter. This is the kind of place the North Tortoise Hall is!” Xia Ran exclaimed.

“The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, you better hand Chu Feng over right now. Otherwise, I’ll invite both of my grandfathers here to have a chat with you,” Xia Yan said.

“ ... ”

Those words made the faces of the chief elder and the others turn livid.

Xia Yan’s grandfathers were lofty figures which even the East Dragon Hall and West Tiger Hall dared not to offend, let alone their little North Tortoise Hall. They had long known that Xia Yan would cause trouble once she came out of her closed-door training, but they didn’t think that she would react so explosively.

With such thoughts in mind, they turned their gazes toward Xia Ran.

Under normal circumstances, Xia Yan would indeed not act in such a manner. It was only due to Xia Ran’s intervention that things ended up like this.

Xia Ran had intentionally inflicted injuries on his own body and fed Xia Yan’s lies in order to stoke her anger. To make things worse, Xia Yan refused to listen to their explanation at all.

Even the chief elder was feeling despaired at the moment, thinking that there was no way to save Chu Feng anymore.

Who could possibly stop Xia Yan and her backing?

“Oh? Isn’t that Brother Xia? I didn’t expect that you’re actually Xia Yan,” a voice suddenly sounded amidst the crowd.

The voice seemed to have pricked the crowd as they hurriedly darted aside out of fear of being implicated. As a result, a huge empty space was created amidst the crowd, leaving behind just an isolated individual.

Chu Feng.

“You!!!”

Xia Yan’s eyes widened in disbelief.

The crowd could understand Xia Yan’s reaction. It was one thing for Chu Feng not to escape upon learning that Xia Yan wanted to deal with him, but he even ran out with a smile on his face.

How could he bring himself to smile so happily under such circumstances?

Putting aside Xia Yan’s disbelief, even the crowd felt completely incredulous too.

Even if you don’t fear death, surely you don’t have to court death here, right?

The chief elder quickly stepped forward to stop Chu Feng, but it was already too late.

“You!!!”

After a momentary shock, Xia Yan began dashing straight toward Chu Feng.

“Xia Yan, it’s a misunderstanding. Listen to me, I’ll explain it to you.”

The chief elder quickly stepped forward and grabbed Xia Yan’s hand to hold her back, not allowing her to approach Chu Feng at all.

“Why are you grabbing my hand? Let go of me!”

Xia Yan glared at the chief elder with eyes so furious that it looked as if she would kill him without hesitation. Her glare frightened the chief elder.

Realizing that the situation was really awry, the chief elder quickly bellowed, “Chu Feng, hurry up and leave! I’ll deal with the situation here!”

He had already made up his mind here.

It isn’t easy for such a talented disciple to come to our North Tortoise Hall. Even at the expense of my life, I have to protect Chu Feng!

“Chu Feng!!!”

But to the chief elder’s astonishment, not only did Chu Feng not run away, but he even walked straight up to Xia Yan’s side.

“Why won’t you just listen to me?”

Chu Feng’s action nearly made the chief elder spurt blood out of sheer frustration. He had already made up his mind to protect Chu Feng with his life, but the latter actually stepped forward to meet his doom.

The exasperated chief elder immediately thrust his hand forth, intending to push Chu Feng away forcefully, only to freeze in place before he could do anything at all.

Something utterly shocking had just unfolded before his eyes.

Xia Yan reached out to grab Chu Feng, but instead of harming him, she pulled him into her embrace. She was so forceful with the hug that even her ‘special parts’ were squeezed out of shape from being pressed against Chu Feng’s body.

The rage that was previously on her face also vanished without a trace, replaced with a peal of hearty laughter.

In truth, Xia Yan was a person who really loved to laugh, and it wasn’t hard to spot her with a smile. However, not a single person had seen her with such a bright smile before.

“Hahaha! Am I dreaming here? Is that really you? Chu Feng, how did you end up in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect? Could it be that my grandfather brought you here? Ah, it looks like my grandfather suddenly did something good for once. I told him that you were a prodigy, and that it would be a blessing to the

Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to bring you in!” Xia Yan began speaking excitedly.

From her words, it could be seen that Xia Yan had wanted her grandfather to bring him into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and he was thankful for that too. However, he felt that it would still be best to tell Xia Yan the truth.

“It wasn’t your grandfather who brought me in. I’ve never met your grandfather before,” Chu Feng said.

“Oh? If it’s not my grandfather, could it be my maternal grandfather then?”

Her words hinted that she had also recommended Chu Feng to her maternal grandfather too.

However, Chu Feng shook his head and said, “I was brought here by Elder Duan Liufeng.”

“Elder Duan Liufeng?”

Xia Yan fell into deep thought. She did remember someone mentioning Duan Liufeng’s affairs to her before. Her eyes widened in realization before quickly turning to look at Xia Ran.

She pointed a finger at Chu Feng and asked, “Xia Ran, you can’t possibly be referring to this Chu Feng, are you?”

“Ah? T-this...”

Xia Ran had never seen Xia Yan hugging anyone so tightly before, and he could vaguely sense a hint of killing intent in Xia Yan’s eyes too. Xia Yan had never directed such a look toward him before.

At this point, he could already tell that there was a peculiar relationship between Chu Feng and Xia Yan. He finally understood why the South Vermilion Hall’s Lord Tuoba Jianshu told him not to make an enemy out of Chu Feng and even told him to apologize.

It finally occurred to him that he had committed a grave mistake here.

Putong!

Xia Ran fell to his knees and began bawling.

“Big sis, this is a misunderstanding!”

Chapter 4764: Xia Yan is Xia Yan

Chu Feng wouldn't have dared to believe it if he hadn't seen it with his own eyes, but the backing which Xia Ran had been relying on all this while was actually an acquaintance of his!

In truth, Xia Yan was the same Xia Yan as he met back at the Asura Graveyard.

Back then, Chu Feng had visited the Graveyard Realm under Song Yun's request in order to obtain the Divine Rejuvenation Pearl. However, when he learned that the Asura Graveyard contained a lot of Asura Evil Spirits, his interest in the Asura Graveyard was piqued.

So that he could enter the Asura Graveyard, he participated in the marriage selection held by the leader of the Graveyard Realm, the Wretched Black Demon, for his own granddaughter. There, he met two allies, namely Xia Yan and Xiao Yu.

These two people were incredibly powerful and had a mysterious background. What was worthy of mention was that the two of them were women disguised as men.

The reason why Chu Feng knew that was because he had seen their real bodies by a stroke of coincidence, but fortunately, neither of them blamed him for that.

As Chu Feng had helped them quite a bit along the way, they managed to forge a bond of friendship despite having only known one another for a short while. This was especially so for Xia Yan.

However, he had never thought that the Xia Yan from the Graveyard Realm would actually be the same renowned Xia Yan in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

So, he was quite surprised and overjoyed when he first saw Xia Yan.

With his relationship with Xia Yan, he knew that the latter wouldn't just blindly believe Xia Ran's lies. As expected, Xia Yan was also incredibly moved when she recognized Chu Feng.

In fact, she even began questioning her beloved younger brother for his sake.

"A misunderstanding? In other words, the Chu Feng whom you said oppressed you is no other than him?" Xia Yan asked.

Everyone could sense the rage seething in her voice.

"It's a misunderstanding, big sis!" Xia Ran cried out miserably.

It was one thing for Chu Feng to know Li Muzhi, but he never thought that the other party would know his big sister, Xia Yan, too!

He felt incredibly panicked at the moment. He realized that there was nothing he could say that could save him from the quandary he was in at the moment.

"Misunderstanding? Is this the misunderstanding you're talking about?"

Chu Feng opened his palm, and a ball of light darted out from his hand. The ball of light was initially just the size of a little pearl, and as it flew into the sky, it grew larger and larger.

Weng!

Soon, the ball of light expanded to the size of a mini-moon in the sky. It was so large that all of the cultivators looked no more than ants in its presence.

Figures began appearing inside the ball. There was Chu Feng, Xia Ran, and the other disciples from the South Vermilion Hall.

Everyone belatedly realized that this was a formation that recorded everything that had happened after Xia Ran entered Chu Feng's residence. Through this formation, they saw that Xia Ran had intentionally hurt himself. Afterward, the subordinates suddenly barged out of the door and started screaming for help.

Everything else was as they saw afterward.

It turned out that Chu Feng knew that Xia Ran was up to no good right from the start, so he chose to enter his residence first so as to set up a recording

formation in advance so as to leave some evidence behind should Xia Ran try to pull anything.

“Xia Ran, is this the misunderstanding you’re talking about?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

However, Xia Ran ignored Chu Feng and pleaded with Xia Yan instead, “Big sis, things aren’t like that. You mustn’t trust him. It’s merely an illusion he forged through the formation!”

Then, he turned to Chu Feng and bellowed, “Chu Feng, you sure are despicable! It’s only on the account that you’re acquainted with my big sis that I said that it’s a misunderstanding so as to not put her in a spot. I swallowed my grievances and chose not to settle the score out of respect for my older sister, but you shamelessly tried to bite back and frame me of slandering you!”

He was eager to dump it all on Chu Feng upon realizing that his ploy was going to be exposed here.

However, Xia Ran’s actions only made Xia Yan more and more infuriated.

“Xia Ran, do you really take me for a fool? Others might try to slander you, but definitely not Chu Feng!”

Xia Yan turned her eyes toward Xia Ran’s subordinates and said, “The lot of you, tell me the truth. Otherwise, I’ll take your lives!”

Xia Ran’s subordinates had already turned pale in fright. Xia Yan’s threat made their legs wobbly as they kneeled down onto the floor. Upon seeing this, Xia Ran quickly shot a vicious glance in their direction while threatening them through his voice transmission.

There was no way he could allow his subordinates to reveal the truth to Xia Yan.

And between Xia Ran and Xia Yan’s threats, it was actually quite easy for the subordinates to come to a decision. So, all of them ended up confessing the truth.

They revealed that it was Xia Ran who told them to frame Chu Feng.

To make things worse, Xia Ran feared that things would look too suspicious if he only roped his aides in this, so he intentionally found two of the more righteous disciples from the South Vermilion Hall to help him on this. Naturally, those two disciples were unwilling to do Xia Ran's bidding, but Xia Ran coerced them with threats, leaving them with no choice but to follow his instructions for their own survival.

With the plan falling apart now, they made full use of this opportunity to tell Xia Yan how Xia Ran had coerced them into doing his bidding.

"You bastards! I treated all of you so well, but how dare you turn around and frame me? Tell me! Just what did Chu Feng give you?"

Xia Ran couldn't tolerate being betrayed by his own people. Despite being in public, he released his killing intent, displaying his intent to teach his subordinates a lesson.

Pu!

However, a dull thump suddenly sounded, and Xia Ran ended up freezing in place.

The crowd also stiffened up as well, not daring to believe what they were seeing.

Xia Ran's dantian had been pierced through, causing his blood to flow out profusely. At the same time, the cultivation he had built up with great difficulty also started flowing away from him swiftly too.

"Big sis, you..."

Xia Ran stared at Xia Yan in disbelief.

Yes, it was indeed Xia Yan who had personally crippled Xia Ran's cultivation.

"Xia Ran, my very mistake is to condone you to this day, but it all comes to an end now. You aren't worthy of anything you have at the moment. Return to the mortal that you used to be!"

Xia Yan clenched her fist tightly, and a mini-explosion sounded. Blood gushed out as the small hole in Xia Ran's abdomen immediately enlarged. His body immediately fell to the ground, having lost its ability of flight.

If his cultivation was still flowing away from him earlier, it had disappeared all at once this time around.

Xia Yan wasn't leaving any chances at all.

The crowd was all flabbergasted to see Xia Yan crippling Xia Ran's cultivation. Before they could snap out of their daze, Xia Yan had begun speaking once more.

"Xia Ran, you are convicted of using despicable means to coerce and harm your fellow sect members. As a Hidden Dragon Disciple, I sentence you to the crippling of your cultivation. However, in view that you have made past contributions to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, I'll spare your life. From this day onward, you'll be evicted to the outer hall, never to enter the four halls ever again! If an elder harbors some doubts toward my judgment, you're free to report it to the sectmaster or the Hidden Dragon Elders!" Xia Yan declared loudly.

That was a clear sign that Xia Ran was a goner. He had only risen to his current position due to Xia Yan's backing, so how could anyone possibly pose any doubts when Xia Yan was the one personally convicting him now?

In fact, most people were more than glad to see this turn of events.

Chapter 4765: A Chat By the Riverside

"What are you in a daze for? Can't you see that I'm injured? Hurry up and treat me! I'm going to lose all my cultivation at this rate; can you even take responsibility for that? Help me!

"You all... you all... Save me! Please, I'm begging you, alright?"

From his initial arrogant attitude, Xia Ran ended up pleading with the crowd, but everyone simply watched him coldly, not a single person willing to offer him a helping hand. In fact, no one could help him even if they wanted to. Xia Ran's cultivation was already completely crippled.

Left with no choice, Xia Ran could only try pleading with Xia Yan, "Big sis, save me! I know my fault now. Please don't cripple my cultivation. I can't live without my cultivation! If I don't even have my cultivation, I wouldn't want to live anymore!"

Looking at the current state Xia Ran was in, Xia Yan also felt awful inside. She closed her eyes and took a deep breath.

Everyone thought that Xia Yan couldn't bear to see Xia Ran in this state. After all, she had doted on him so much over the years. They might not be true siblings, but their relationship had already far surpassed that of one. How could she possibly put aside her feelings so quickly?

But all of a sudden, Xia Yan opened her eyes, revealing a sharp, steely look.

"Xia Ran, don't you know very well what you've done over the years? I've tolerated you for far too long. It's already kindness out of my part that I chose to spare you today. If you don't want to live anymore, you're free to end your own life."

Xia Yan tossed a dagger and a poisonous pill over, which landed right beside Xia Ran. These were tools for Xia Ran to end his own life.

"You..."

Xia Ran stared at the dagger and poisonous pill in disbelief. He still dared not believe that things would turn out like this.

The crowd was equally shocked as well. They couldn't understand why Xia Yan would suddenly have a change of mind and treat her younger brother with such callousness.

Of course, the crowd didn't think that Xia Ran was worthy of pity, but his state was indeed too miserable for them to continue watching without cringing.

After Xia Yan tossed the dagger and poisonous pill over, she decisively turned her attention away from Xia Ran. She turned to Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, where's your residence? Aren't you going to invite me over for a sit?"

"It's right here. Come."

Chu Feng pointed to his own residence.

"Let's go then," Xia Yan said with a joyful smile.

"Hey, let go of me. It's hard for me to walk like that."

The reason why Chu Feng was saying those words was because Xia Yan still hadn't released Chu Feng from her hug yet.

"We're good brothers, right? What's wrong with a little hug? Don't be so stingy and quickly lead the way. You're so wishy-washy like an old hag," Xia Yan chuckled softly.

She had a cold and lofty appearance, reminiscent of a mature ice queen, but her personality was bubbly and forthright, especially when she was standing before Chu Feng. The crowd had never expected to see such a side to her.

"Haa, you sure are troublesome."

Chu Feng sighed deeply before dragging Xia Yan toward his residence.

Even after the doors closed behind the two of them, they could still hear Xia Yan's muffled hearty laughter coming from inside. They turned to look at Xia Ran, who was lying on the ground, crying pitifully as he begged the elders to beg them, and they belatedly realized that the relationship between Chu Feng and Xia Yan had already surpassed that of ordinary friends.

Otherwise, why would Xia Yan cripple Xia Ran's cultivation for Chu Feng's sake? Not to mention, she even revealed such a happy smile despite this appalling turn of events.

The elders of the North Tortoise Hall turned to the chief elder and asked, "Chief elder, how should we deal with this matter here?"

"He's a disciple of the South Vermilion Hall after all. Toss him back to the South Vermilion Hall and let the elders there deal with it. Relay Xia Yan's exact words to them, and tell them to ask Xia Yan if they don't believe it," the chief elder said.

The elders of the North Tortoise Hall did as they were told.

At this point, no one was afraid of Xia Ran anymore. The latter had lost his backing and his cultivation, making him nothing of threat in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect anymore. His life from this day onward was bound to be miserable.

"Song Xi."

The chief elder suddenly beckoned Song Xi over with his hand. Song Xi quickly rushed over and bowed to the chief elder.

“What’s the background of your brother?” the chief elder asked softly.

Song Xi told the chief elder what he knew about Chu Feng. To be frank, he knew nothing much about Chu Feng’s background, but he admired Chu Feng’s personality and courage. While Chu Feng wasn’t particularly strong when they first met, Song Xi still viewed him as his idol.

“It looks like Chu Feng is quite a figure. It’s no wonder why he showed no panic offending Nangong Yuliu. It’s really great luck on the part of our North Tortoise Hall!”

The chief elder didn’t learn much about Chu Feng’s background from Song Xi, but the expectations he carried for Chu Feng grew even greater.

If Chu Feng and Li Muzhi were just acquaintances, Chu Feng and Xia Yan’s relationship had definitely exceeded that of ordinary friendship. This could be seen by Xia Yan’s attitude toward Xia Ran.

Xia Yan was no fool, so how could she possibly not know what kind of person Xia Ran was. It was just that she chose to side with Xia Ran instead of pursuing his faults.

Yet, she didn’t hesitate to turn against Xia Ran today despite treasuring him so much in the past, as if he no longer meant anything to her anymore.

Everyone knew the one who sparked such a change in Xia Yan was no other than Chu Feng.

...

Chu Feng led Xia Yan back into his residence, but the latter immediately showed a hint of disdain upon seeing the entrance.

“Your residence is too rundown. Just what kind of treatment are you getting here? Come, I’ll take you to somewhere better.”

She dragged Chu Feng into the sky with her after saying those words, Before leaving, she made sure to turn around and warn the crowd, “Don’t follow us. If anyone dares to come along, I’ll take his life.”

Who would dare to follow them after hearing Xia Yan's threat? Putting aside the disciples, even the elders of the North Tortoise Hall dared not to do so.

Xia Yan brought Chu Feng all the way into a forest. This was still within the territory of the North Tortoise Hall, but it was land that belonged to no one. The two of them landed on top of a large tree in the depths of the forest.

"How is it? Isn't it beautiful?"

Xia Yan finally released Chu Feng. She spread her arms wide and stretched her back lazily before placing her both hands on the tree trunk to stretch her legs too. While doing this set of movements, her eyes were directed into the distance.

She looked just like a mischievous little girl, a huge contrast from her mature appearance.

Chu Feng followed her line of sight and saw a clearing in the forest. Even though it was nighttime, the sky was covered by the calamity, so there were no stars or moon.

Nevertheless, Chu Feng could still spot a small little lake here.

"It's just a lake. There's nothing really beautiful about it," Chu Feng replied.

"Is that so?" Xia Yan looked at him with a deep smile, keeping him in suspense.

Then, she suddenly raised her arm and tossed a rock she had conjured out of her spirit power into the lake.

Whoosh!

The water began to bubble furiously. Countless specks of blue light began surfacing in the lake, dancing in the water.

Chu Feng had long noticed that there were fishes in the river, but he didn't expect them to shine so brilliantly. The corals were beautiful as well, bringing a marvellous scenery to the river.

Even the surrounding trees seemed to brighten up in the presence of the blue light.

“What about now?” Xia Yan asked Chu Feng gleefully.

“Not bad. How did someone from the South Vermilion Hall like you come to know this place?”

Chu Feng thought that this was a place where even the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall rarely frequented, but Xia Yan seemed oddly familiar with the vicinity. It looked like she had been here before.

“Do I look like a foolish person to you?” Xia Yan suddenly asked.

“You do,” Chu Feng replied with a nod of his head.

Xia Yan pouted her lips upon hearing Chu Feng’s response, clearly not expecting such an answer. She asked, “How do I look foolish?”

“Don’t they always say that big-breasted girls tend to have smaller brains? It’s only normal for you to have a bad head then,” Chu Feng replied.

“You... Are you asking for a beating? You should know that we can use martial power here.”

Xia Yan’s face reddened like a little apple as she raised her hand to hit him. Her strike didn’t land hard though; it was just a way for her to hide her embarrassment.

She knew that Chu Feng wasn’t just speaking empty words here as he did see it back then in the Graveyard Realm...

“Are you trying to silence me? Help! Murder!”

Chu Feng hugged his head as he tried to escape, but he couldn’t hide from Xia Yan’s ‘attack’ at all. After all, his cultivation was lower than hers, so he could only shout his grievances.

“You mustn’t speak of that matter to anyone else, or else you’ll have to take responsibility for me if my reputation were to be ruined!” Xia Yan exclaimed.

“Alright alright, I won’t tell anyone. I swear that I’ll be struck by lightning if I speak of it to another soul,” Chu Feng vowed.

“Wait a moment, why are you suddenly showing such conviction? You even went to the extent of making a vow! Are you trying to say that I’m not worthy of you?” Xia Yan asked with a pout.

“Ah well... Hey, look at the moon! What a round moon we have today!” Chu Feng pointed to the sky and said.

“Bullshit! Where can you find the moon in such a gloomy sky?”

Xia Yan shot Chu Feng a glare, but she wasn’t really angry.

“Alright, I’ll stop fooling with you. I still need to head back later on to settle the matter. Actually, I only brought you here to tell you why I treated Xia Ran so well. It’s not that I’m oblivious to his tyranny, but as long as he doesn’t go too far, I was willing to tolerate his misdeeds,” Xia Yan said.

“Tell me more.”

Chu Feng was a little curious as to why Xia Yan would blindly side with Xia Ran on this matter. Based on what he knew about her, Xia Yan wasn’t an unreasonable person who would condone Xia Ran’s folly.

And after hearing the explanation from Xia Yan, he could somewhat understand where she was coming from.

Chapter 4766: Xia Yan’s Tolerance

Chapter 4766: Xia Yan’s Tolerance

Xia Yan had grown up in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. She was dubbed as a prodigy from a young age, and her background was formidable too.

There were many important figures who bore great expectations of her and doted on her. Even in a place like the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, she was treated like a lofty princess.

Due to that, those around her tended to fawn on her, sometimes even fearing her.

Xia Yan had always been frustrated about how she could never find a friend whom she could really give her heart out to as she couldn’t tell who was being sincere to her.

However, when she was sixteen, she finally found a friend who treated her earnestly. That friend was of the same age as her too, and she was brought into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at a young age due to her unique Divine Power.

Her name was Zhao Xiaobu.

Due to her sincerity and their common interests, it didn't take long for them to become good friends. Xie Yan cared a lot about this friend whom she had been wanting for a long time, but due to her being brought up in an extremely privileged environment, it was inevitable that she would have quite a haughty attitude.

She would often vent her temper at Zhao Xiaobu, but the latter would never get angry or change her attitude toward her due to that.

Xia Yan was well aware of how tolerant Zhao Xiaobu was of her flaws, and it made her treasure her even more.

However, there was once they were out on a mission that Xia Yan made a grave error due to her greed and ended up in deep trouble. During a crucial moment, Zhao Xiaobu stepped forth to save Xia Yan. Xia Yan managed to survive the ordeal, but Zhao Xiaobu ended up suffering grievous injuries due to that encounter.

In order to save Zhao Xiaobu, Xia Yan engaged the help of her grandfather and even the sectmaster herself too. However, her injuries were simply so severe that she still ended up losing her life in the end.

Xia Yan was anguished by Zhao Xiaobu's death, feeling guilt-ridden that she had caused it. She wanted to make it up to Zhao Xiaobu, but there was no way to bring back the dead. She could only find other means to do so.

It just so happened that Zhao Xiaobu had once told Xia Yan that she had a younger brother, and this younger brother's name was Zhao Xiaoran.

Zhao Xiaobu and Zhao Xiaoran's parents had died when they were still young, so the two of them huddled tightly together for survival. However, after Zhao Xiaobu was brought into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, Zhao Xiaoran was left all alone outside to fend for himself.

Zhao Xiaobu had always been worried about her younger brother, and she had pleaded with the elders many times to bring her younger brother into the sect. It was just that Zhao Xiaoran's talent didn't meet the mark, so her wish couldn't be realized.

Before her death, she made her very first and last request to Xia Yan. She begged Xia Yan to use her connections to take care of her younger brother so that Zhao Xiaoran could at least live without worries.

In order to make it up to Zhao Xiaobu, Xia Yan agreed to the request without any hesitation. So, after Zhao Xiaobu died, she pleaded with her grandfather to bring Zhao Xiaoran into the sect.

Her grandfather rejected it without any hesitation due to Zhao Xiaoran's lacking talent, but after days of seeing Xia Yan in a gloomy mood, lacking motivation even in her cultivation, he eventually made an exception and brought Zhao Xiaoran in.

As soon as Zhao Xiaoran was brought into the sect, Xia Yan immediately acknowledged him as her sworn brother and was extremely tolerant of him.

She wanted to repay what she owed to Zhao Xiaobu to Zhao Xiaoran.

And this Zhao Xiaoran was no other than Xia Ran.

After being acknowledged as Xia Yan's sworn brother, Zhao Xiaoran changed his name to Xia Ran in order to create a deeper association between the two of them. To be frank, Xia Yan was extremely displeased with this action of his. After all, she wasn't really fond of Zhao Xiaoran; she was just trying to make up for what she owed to Zhao Xiaobu through him.

Every time Xia Yan thought about Zhao Xiaobu, she would find herself more and more condoning of Zhao Xiaoran's vile deeds. No matter what kind of wrongs he committed, Xia Yan would stand on his side. n)/0ve**1B**1n

In the end, others began viewing Xia Yan's action as a sign that she was extremely dotting of Xia Ran, and the fact that she allowed Xia Ran to take on her surname further drove in the belief as well.

"So, it's not that you're oblivious to Xia Ran's deeds. You just wanted to help Zhao Xiaobu take care of her younger brother," Chu Feng asked.

“You might find it hard to believe, but I actually loathe Xia Ran a lot,” Xia Yan said.

“I can tell. What I saw on your face after striking him wasn’t remorse but liberation,” Chu Feng said.

“I’ve long told myself that I can’t continue to condone his actions, and I even thought of sending him outside the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect too. It’s just that every time such a thought arose in my mind, I would hear Xiaobu’s voice, telling me to take good care of her younger brother,” Xia Yan said with a conflicted face.

“If Zhao Xiaobu is still around, I believe that she wouldn’t blindly condone Xia Ran either, let alone allowing you to do so,” Chu Feng said.

“Yes, I’ve made a grave mistake here. If I didn’t keep turning a blind eye to his misdeed, he wouldn’t have ended up the person he is,” Xia Yan said.

“You do have a responsibility to take in this, but don’t fault yourself too much. You have given him the best conditions here at the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to rise through the ranks, but he chose to trample all over it himself. So, what are you planning to do from now on? Are you really going to just let him be? If so, he’ll have a lot to suffer from now onward.”

Chu Feng could tell that Xia Ran had offended many people. If Xia Yan really chose not to help Xia Ran anymore, the latter would have hell to pay for. There might be quite a few people out there who would try to take his life.

Chu Feng couldn’t care less about Xia Ran’s life and death, but after learning about Xia Yan’s relationship with Xia Ran, he was worried that Xia Yan might regret her decision here. She would likely blame herself for life if Xia Ran were to meet his end here.

“I’ll demote him to the outer hall and let him experience how difficult life is. Afterward, I’ll get my grandfather to help me send him out of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect... I think he’s more suited to be a mortal,” Xia Yan said.

“No matter how much resources you have given him, he would still need to have quite some talent in order to reach his current level of accomplishment. He wouldn’t have been a bad cultivator, but it’s just a pity that he’s a horrible human being.

“In any case, Xia Ran did manage to experience a life which most would never be able to enjoy. It was transient, but still, he was lucky. Since you have already made up your mind, you should just toss the matter aside and don’t think about it anymore,” Chu Feng consoled.

“Yes, you’re right. I understand the logic behind it too... Do you know why I suddenly made up my mind to stop condoning him and punish him instead?” Xia Yan suddenly asked.

“What other reason could there be? Your tolerance simply hit its limit. The longer you tolerate a person, the greater the rebound will be,” Chu Feng said.

“No, that’s wrong.” Xia Yan shook her head.

“Oh? What’s the reason then? Surely it can’t be due to me, right?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“You sure are a shameless person. Alright, I’ll be heading back now,.”

Xia Yan suddenly started rising to her feet.

“Hey, you haven’t told me the reason yet,” Chu Feng asked.

“I decided that I shan’t tell you anymore. I’ll be heading back first. See you tomorrow,” Xia Yan said with a smile before rising into the sky and flying off.

“Keeping me in suspense, huh?”

Chu Feng shook his head before returning to his residence. Unexpectedly, there was still a crowd present at his doorstep. Even the chief elder and the others were here too.

But this time around, the commotion was not caused by Xia Ran but by someone else—Nangong Yuliu.

Chapter 4767: Lost the Bet?

Nangong Yuliu’s arrival had left an ominous premonition in the hearts of the North Tortoise Hall’s elders. Even though Nangong Yuliu was weaker than Xia Yan, his background was still nothing to make light of.

Chu Feng was able to overcome the crisis with Xia Ran through his relationship with Xia Yan, but it wouldn't be that easy to deal with Nangong Yuliu here. Everyone knew deep well the reason why he was here today.

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall carefully scanned the surroundings, and upon noticing Chu Feng's approach, he quickly sent a voice transmission over to tell him to stay away.

Unexpectedly, Chu Feng hastened his speed instead, passing through the crowd to stand before Nangong Yuliu.

"You sure came fast," Chu Feng said.

"You still dare to come back? I thought that you would have already hidden somewhere, not daring to show up."

Nangong Yuliu was also surprised to see Chu Feng, but his tone swiftly turned sarcastic as he said, "I guess you do know that you can't possibly hide from me forever too. You'll eventually have to face the consequences of what you did. I've already prepared the token that you'll be wearing around your neck."

Nangong Yuliu took out a token from his Cosmos Sack. The faces of the chief elder and the others immediately darkened upon seeing it, and the surrounding disciples also started gossiping fervently.

Chu Feng and Nangong Yuliu had made a bet on whether Chu Feng was able to break the record left by Lord Dugu Lingtian in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. If Chu Feng won, Nangong Yuliu would have to apologize to Zhao Shi and allow the latter to strike him ten times. Otherwise, Chu Feng would have to wear a token Nangong Yuliu prepared for him, never to take it off.

And now, the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake's trial was over, but Chu Feng didn't break Lord Dugu Lingtian's record. This meant that he had lost the bet.

The token Nangong Yuliu prepared had a leash and a chain, reminiscent of a dog's collar. It was obvious that he was insulting Chu Feng for being a dog.

However, the words on the token were even more humiliating, writing 'I am Nangong Yuliu's dog'.

Nangong Yuliu tossed the token toward Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, put it on."

Chu Feng caught the token and assessed it carefully. Everyone was eyeing Chu Feng intently, wondering if he would really put this humiliating collar around his neck.

However, Chu Feng simply chuckled softly and tossed the token back toward one of Nangong Yuliu's lackeys. He might not have said a word at all, but the meaning of his action was clear.

He was scorning those around Nangong Yuliu for being his dog.

"Chu Feng, do you not intend to honor the bet you made?" Nangong Yuliu asked.

"Nangong Yuliu, why didn't you participate in the hunt at the Vicious Beast Hellworld despite being a personal disciple?" Chu Feng asked.

"I'll do whatever I want to. It's none of your business. We have a lot of eye-witnesses for the bet we made, and I'll make sure that you honor the bet whether you want to or not," Nangong Yuliu said.

"Ah, what a pity... If you had been in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, you would have never done something as foolish as this," Chu Feng said.

Nangong Yuliu had no idea what Chu Feng was speaking of, but he felt that Chu Feng was trying to shirk off his promise by refusing to wear the token. So, his eyes turned cold as he said, "Are you waiting for me to put it on for you?"

"Nangong Yuliu, I'm not a person who doesn't honor my promise. It's just that I've no reason to put on that token. It looks like you've wasted your effort here," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, stop putting on an act, I've heard that you've managed to find a backing in Xia Yan, but even if you have her support, you'll still have to honor your promise. This is a rule of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Since you're unwilling to put it on, I'll help you on that," Nangong Yuliu said.

He rose into the air and charged straight toward Chu Feng. However, before Nangong Yuliu could get close, numerous figures had already rushed in to stand in front of Chu Feng in order to protect him.

They were the elders and chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall.

“Nangong Yuliu, our North Tortoise Hall isn’t a place where you can mess around!”

The chief elder put on a strong front this time around, but Nangong Yuliu thought nothing of it at all.

“Even if you can stop me, can you stop my grandmother? This is a bet between me and Chu Feng. He’ll have to fulfill the end of his promise eventually. So, I advise you not to get involved in things that don’t concern you. You’ll just end up burning yourself!” Nangong Yuliu sneered.

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall still resolutely stood his ground, refusing to allow Nangong Yuliu to harm Chu Feng. However, before he could say anything, Chu Feng had already interjected, “I appreciate your goodwill, but there’s no need for this. I’m willing to acknowledge my bet with Nangong Yuliu, but since I didn’t lose the bet, there’s no way I would put on that collar.”

“You’re saying that you didn’t lose the bet? The name above the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is still Lord Dugu Lingtian’s. That should be more than enough evidence to prove that you have failed to break his record!” Nangong Yuliu said.

“Don’t you think that it’s inappropriate of you to be spreading baseless accusations without verifying the matter in person? Why don’t we do this instead? We’ll all head to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake together and determine the victor of this bet once and for all,” Chu Feng said.

He rose into the air and began flying in the direction of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

The chief elder and the others also quickly followed him too. They were intending to protect Chu Feng if a fight broke out.

The other spectators also didn’t wish to miss this commotion, so they quickly tagged along as well.

One of the subordinates standing behind Nangong Yuliu stood forward and asked, “Senior Nangong, why is Chu Feng so confident about this? Is it possible that... he might make a turnaround here?”

“I checked it with my own eyes earlier on. Lord Dugu Lingtian’s name is still hanging above the mountains,” Nangong Yuliu replied.

“Then what’s he trying to do then? Is he trying to humiliate himself?” the subordinate asked uncomprehendingly.

“He’s just delaying the inevitable. Since he wants to play with us, let’s go along with him then,” Nangong Yuliu sneered in disdain as he rose into the air and headed toward the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake too.

The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake was usually closed, but the transparent barrier allowed one to see the situation inside. News that Chu Feng and Nangong Yuliu were heading to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake to determine the outcome of their bet swiftly spread within the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

Those from the other three halls swiftly joined in the procession toward the lake too, curious to see how this bet would end.

However, as soon as they came into proximity with the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, the faces of the chief elder and the others began stiffening nervously. Similarly, those who wished for Chu Feng’s loss began to smile brightly.

They might not have arrived yet, but they could see the huge name above the six peaks of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

Dugu Lingtian.

“Chu Feng, what else do you wish to say for yourself?”

Nangong Yuliu was so gleeful that he could hardly conceal his joy. He was delighted to see that Chu Feng was going to be humiliated before this huge crowd.

“What are you in a rush for? Take a closer look.”

Chu Feng swiftly began forming a series of hand seals.

Weng!

The next moment, the six peaks of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake began shining brightly, lighting up the dark sky!

Chapter 4768: I Call the Shots

The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake only opened once every five years. Outside of that, it was usually sealed off by a barrier, disallowing anyone from coming

close. Fortunately, the barrier was transparent, allowing on to view its true form even when the location wasn't open.

The calamity looming over the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect veiled the sky above with dark clouds, making it absolutely dark whenever night descended. The lack of light source in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake meant that other than the vague outlines of its six towering peaks, there was hardly anything that could be seen at all.

However, at this very moment, the six peaks of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake were currently glowing as brightly as the sun, radiating light into the surroundings. The night sky became so bright that it looked as if a new day was already before them. Even the dark clouds above were enveloped by the white light.

This was almost at the level of a phenomenon.

The crowd was astonished. Even those far in the distance who had no idea what was going on quickly rushed over to take a look. They thought that a mishap had occurred.

No one understood why such a phenomenon was occurring in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

However, there were also some who turned their eyes to Chu Feng. As unbelievable as it was, this phenomenon had occurred after Chu Feng formed a series of hand seals and made his speech.

Was it possible that this phenomenon was caused by Chu Feng?

"Chu Feng, a-are you the one who did this?" an elder of the North Tortoise Hall asked incredulously.

Too overwhelmed with shock, he even stuttered a little.

It wasn't just him. The others couldn't believe that this was happening due to Chu Feng too. It was not that they were looking down on him, but this matter was of grave importance here.

While the crowd was just bewildered by the turn of events, Nangong Yuliu's face had turned completely pale. He was so nervous that cold sweat was dripping down his face.

He had come here with the intent to deal with Chu Feng and embarrass him. He had even prepared the humiliating token which Chu Feng would be wearing around his neck from now onward.

However, if Chu Feng was really the one who triggered this phenomenon, even if he didn't break Dugu Lingtian's record, he would surely be highly regarded by the sect.

The tables might really turn on him at this rate!

"I never thought that it would be happening in advance."

While the crowd was speculating about the truth, a silhouette suddenly descended from the sky. The crowd was visibly relieved by the presence of this silhouette, for he was no other than Protector Qi of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

"Lord Protector, what's this phenomenon? Why would the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake suddenly look like that?"

The crowd asked.

"The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is a formation created by the sect founder. No one is able to control it, and the only reason why it's able to continue functioning to this day is due to his ingenuity. Every thousand years, the formation would replenish its own energy, and the phenomenon you are witnessing at the moment is a byproduct of that," Protector Qi said.

"Lord Protector, does this mean that the phenomenon has nothing to do with Chu Feng?" Nangong Yuliu asked anxiously.

"Heh..." Protector Qi sneered coldly. "It is a means left behind by the sect founder. How could a disciple like Chu Feng possibly hope to faze the formation?"

"I knew it! Chu Feng, you sure know how to put on an act!"

Upon receiving his answer, Nangong Yuliu smirked in satisfaction before turning to look at Chu Feng with a snark look.

"Chu Feng, do you have any pride at all?"

“He sure is lucky to stumble upon this phenomenon while he’s putting on an act. You might be able to deceive us once, but not anymore!”

“I reckon that his record at the Snowy Heavenly Peak is mere luck too. How could someone like him possibly break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record normally?”

Nangong Yuliu’s lackeys quickly hopped onto the bandwagon to insult Chu Feng. Even Protector Qi couldn’t resist bursting into laughter.

With the protector not displaying a sliver of respect for Chu Feng, the strangers also began criticizing Chu Feng as well, thinking that he was a scum with reprehensible morals.

From an outsider’s point of view, Chu Feng’s act of deception was indeed abominable.

However, Chu Feng was unfazed by everyone’s insults. Instead, he shook his robe slightly and examined his own body. He could see that the black marks were glowing on his body, and they moved slowly as if they were some sort of lifeforms residing in Chu Feng’s skin.

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall couldn’t take it anymore and started questioning, “Protector Qi, I’m aware of the situation you speak of, but it has never stirred this kind of commotion before. I believe that there’s a clear distinction between the two.”

“Are you claiming to be more knowledgeable than me? If that’s the case, you should be the protector of this place instead of me,” Protector Qi sneered.

Logically speaking, the chief elders were of equal standing with the Hidden Dragon Elders, which meant that they were superior to the protectors. It was just that the North Tortoise Hall was too weak, and its chief elder was lacking in cultivation too. That allowed Protector Qi to scorn him.

At the same time, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall also feared Protector Qi too. If not for his desire to protect Chu Feng, he wouldn’t dare to question Protector Qi’s judgment.

Nevertheless, when he noticed Protector Qi’s displeasure, he immediately backed down.

“Protector Qi, it’s not my intention to cast doubt on your judgment,” the chief elder replied.

“Chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, you shouldn’t misunderstand my intention either. I’m not trying to undermine you here either; I’m just speaking out the truth as I know it,” Protector Qi said.

He turned to Chu Feng and continued on, “Chu Feng, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is a place governed by rules. We value the development of our disciples’ character too. If you’ve lost, just admit it. Stop looking for excuses here.”

It was clear to the crowd that Protector Qi was telling Chu Feng to admit his loss and fulfill the end of his bet.

“Lord Protector, who told you that I’ve lost?” Chu Feng asked.

“Hahaha! Do you think that I, as the protector of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, wouldn’t know whose name is inscribed on the mountain peaks?” Protector Qi scoffed.

“Then, whose name is there?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, suffering a loss is not shameful. Knowing when to back down and admit one’s loss is a kind of bravery too. Take this as a lesson and live your life humbly in the future. Stop indulging in your own delusions. Luck won’t forever be on your side,” Protector Qi said.

However, Chu Feng insisted on his point, saying, “Lord Protector, you aren’t answering my question. I’m asking you whose name is on the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake right now.”

Protector Qi was starting to get displeased by how persistent Chu Feng was.

“Why are you asking the obvious? It’s clearly Lord Dugu Lingtian’s name. It has been this way since a long time ago, and it’ll continue being the case in the future. Don’t bother hoping for the impossible. You can’t possibly break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record!” Protector Qi said.

“If that’s the case, you ought to take a close look then!”

With a smirk, Chu Feng quickly formed a series of hand seals.

Weng!

The blinding light began to dim, allowing the crowd to see the top of the mountain peaks. What was there shocked everyone, be it disciples or elders.

The name above the peaks was no longer 'Dugu Lingtian' but 'Chu Feng'!

"W-what? This shouldn't be... This can't possibly be... It was still Lord Dugu Lingtian's name a moment ago! How could it possibly have changed?" Protector Qi uttered in disbelief, unable to accept the reality of things.

"Lord Protector, you mentioned that the earlier phenomenon was a natural occurrence of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. Well, do you think that it'll continue to stay lit up then?" Chu Feng asked.

"What do you mean?"

Protector Qi saw a cold smile seated upon Chu Feng's lips, and it left him with a bad premonition.

Chu Feng pointed to his lips and said, "Look at my mouth. Light up."

Weng! n-/o)-v(.e-(I-/b-(I(-n

The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake began glowing brightly.

"Extinguish."

The light dissipated, plunging the surroundings into darkness.

"Light up."

Once again, the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake was irradiated with blinding light.

"Extinguish."

Darkness.

This series of actions made it clear to the crowd that the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake was heeding Chu Feng's orders. The evidence was clear as day now.

The crowd was dumbfounded. All of the disciples looked at Chu Feng with eyes filled with reverence, for the formation Chu Feng was controlling was one that was constructed by their great sect founder.

Putting aside mere disciples, even Protector Qi didn't have the ability to control the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake!

"Lord Protector, do you understand what's going on now?" Chu Feng asked Protector Qi disdainfully.

"Chu Feng, what did you do?" Protector Qi questioned.

His tone was filled with disbelief, rage, nervousness, and panic.

"You might be unhappy to hear me say this, but the truth is that I'm the one who calls the shot over here at the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake now!"

Weng!

An even shocking sight occurred. Multiple spirit formation gates began appearing on the barrier of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. It was supposed to be in a closed state at the moment, but the crowd was now able to enter it!

Chapter 4769: Hidden Dragon Elders Joins the Fray

Protector Qi couldn't tolerate the fact that Chu Feng was actually able to control the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, his turf. So, he quickly took out a token with a flag inscribed on it. He formed a series of hand seals, and the flag in the token swiftly enlarged to over ten meters in length.

There were words on the fluttering flag. There was a large 'Command' word, followed by a smaller 'Blackwater Sixfinger Lake' beneath.

This was the token used to control the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, and typically speaking, there was no need to open the flag in order to tap into its authority. However, reverting it back to its original form would grant the protector greater control over the formation.

Protector Qi was unwilling to allow Chu Feng to act as he pleased on his turf, so he was intending to use his command token to close off the barrier.

To his horror, the token seemed to have lost its effects. He was actually unable to control the formation at all!

“Chu Feng, what in the world did you do?” Protector Qi growled at Chu Feng furiously.

“Lord Protector, do you really not understand what’s going on? Very well, I shall do you a favor and enlighten you. The Blackwater Sixfinger Lake is a huge formation that is linked with the Vicious Beast Hellworld. I have entered the Vicious Beast Hellworld through the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake and deciphered the formation left behind by the sect founder, allowing me to not only control the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake but to coexist symbiotically with it.

“If I leave the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake will only be able to open once every five years for the disciples. However, as long as I remain here, our disciples will be able to use the powers of the lake as and when they liked. If anyone doubts my words, he’s more than free to give it a try. It’s possible for anyone to temper their bodies in there right now.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began making his way into the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake.

Seeing this, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the other elders quickly followed suit. If this matter was true, it would truly be a huge merit under Chu Feng’s name.

Boom!

However, before Chu Feng and the others could even get close, a dangerous aura suddenly loomed ahead of them. It formed something reminiscent of an invisible metal wall that blocked their path.

Protector Qi was halting them from advancing any further!

At some point in time, he had overtaken Chu Feng and the others in order to stop them from entering the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. His barrier rose from the earth all the way into the sky, disallowing anyone weaker than him to pass him by.

Protector Qi looked at Chu Feng and the others loftily and said, “This is the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, not a place where you can enter and leave as you please!”

“Lord Protector, your words don’t mean anything here anymore.”

Chu Feng formed a series of hand seals that invoked light from the peak of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. It darted toward Protector Qi like a rope, seeking to tie him down.

Protector Qi immediately noticed that something was amiss and tried to fight back, but the light rope moved at a speed faster than he could react. Before he knew it, it was already completely tied up.

His barrier immediately dissipated, and he lost all power to retaliate.

One must know that Protector Qi was no ordinary Martial Exalted level cultivator. He was definitely one of the stronger ones amongst the elders, commanding prowess greater than even the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall.

“This...”

The crowd looked at Chu Feng with a fearful gaze. Putting aside the outsiders, even those who were closer to Chu Feng were frightened by the power he was displaying.

If the crowd still harbored doubt if Chu Feng could really use the power of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake before, all of their doubts were dispelled at this very moment. The truth was already being shoved right in their faces.

Putting aside Protector Qi, not even the sectmaster would be able to tap into the power of the formation in such a manner!

“Chu Feng, let go of Protector Qi,” a voice suddenly commanded.

Following that, two figures descended from the sky. It was an old man and an old woman. Both of them had white hair and an imposing presence.

“Paying respects to Lord Hidden Dragon Elders!”

All of the elders and disciples immediately bowed down to greet them, for the ones standing before them were no other than Li Muzhi and his grandfather, Li Fengxian, as well as Nangong Yuliu and his grandmother, Nangong Chunyue.

Chu Feng quickly did the same as well.

To be frank, he was a little concerned with Nangong Chunyue's arrival. He was able to use the powers of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake as he pleased, but this was unlikely to be sufficient for him to deal with Nangong Chunyue.

It was not just about her position as the Hidden Dragon Elder. Nangong Chunyue hadn't revealed her prowess at all, but Chu Feng could already sense a dangerous aura from her. His instincts told him that he wouldn't be able to suppress Nangong Chunyue with the prowess of the formation here.

It was only fortunate that Li Fengxian was here too. He seemed to have a good impression of Chu Feng, so it was unlikely that he would allow Nangong Chunyue to act as she pleased.

"Chu Feng, how dare you make a move against a protector?!"

Unexpectedly, instead of speaking up for Chu Feng, Li Fengxian took the initiative to confront Chu Feng. Both his tone and gaze were incredibly hostile.

"Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, I know that I shouldn't have shown such disrespect to Protector Qi, but I'm afraid that Protector Qi is not worthy of my respect. During my training in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, Protector Qi tampered with my daoist robe, seeking to end my life. I ask you to redress my grievances!"

Chu Feng took out the daoist robe and passed it over to Li Fengxian.

"That rat bastard Chu Feng..."

Protector Qi's face darkened upon seeing the daoist robe, and he began cursing under his breath.

He did tamper with Chu Feng's robe, which was why he demanded the latter to return it when he stepped out of the lake earlier on. Naturally, he was intending to destroy all evidence of his misdeed.

Back then, Chu Feng told him that he had lost the daoist robe, but it turned out that he had hidden it instead!

Li Fengxian took the daoist robe and assessed it for a moment before the rage in his eyes flared. It was just that his anger was directed toward Protector Qi this time around.

“Protector Qi, how do you wish to explain this matter?!” Li Fengxian bellowed.

“Lord Li, I have been framed!”

It went without saying that Protector Qi wouldn’t admit to the grievous crime of harming a disciple of the sect.

“You’re the only one with this daoist robe, and I can sense your aura embedded inside the daoist robe. The evidence is clear as the day, and you’re still trying to deny it?”

“Very well, it looks like I’m not enough to pressure you to speak the truth, huh? Very well, let’s bring this matter up to the sectmaster then!”

With a wave of his sleeves, Li Fengxian released a wind blade and sliced through the light rope binding Protector Qi.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4770: Lord Sectmaster - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4770: Lord Sectmaster

Chapter 4770: Lord Sectmaster

It was a simple move, but it showcased the formidable prowess of the Hidden Dragon Elders.

Chu Feng’s instinct was spot-on. The power of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake might be enough to suppress Protector Qi, but it wasn’t enough to deal with the Hidden Dragon Elders.

This wasn’t due to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’s formation being weak but that Chu Feng was unable to fully control it due to the limits of his cultivation. After all, he was just a beneficiary of the formation and not the sect founder himself.

After severing the light rope, Li Fengxian tossed out yet another rope to tie Protector Qi up. He was really intending to drag Protector Qi over to the sectmaster to make him confess to his sins.

“Chu Feng, seal off the barrier,” Li Fengxian ordered.

Chu Feng quickly did as he was told and sealed off the barrier.

“You should come with me as well,” Li Fengxian said.

A surge of energy suddenly wrapped around Chu Feng’s body before he was pulled uncontrollably toward Li Fengxian at an incredible speed. It took only the blink of an eye for the group to arrive at one of the forbidden grounds of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

It was the territory of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster.

“Wait here. Don’t wander around.”

Li Fengxian left Chu Feng in a gazebo by a lake before heading in with Nangong Chunyue and Protector Qi.

Not too long later, Li Fengxian returned alone.

“Chu Feng, are you really able to control the energy in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake as you wish now?” Li Fengxian asked.

“As long as I’m within the vicinity of the lake, I’d be able to do so,” Chu Feng replied.

“How did you manage to gain control over the lake? Explain the matter to me,” Li Fengxian instructed.

Chu Feng quickly filled Li Fengxian in on what he had been through. In truth, he had undergone some trials after entering the depths of the seventh lake, and it was only after clearing them that he managed to gain control over the formation.

The black marks on Chu Feng’s body that emanated the aura of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake was the key to the formation.

It was just that when Chu Feng wanted to head back to deal with Protector Qi, he somehow stumbled into the Vicious Beast Hellworld instead. The black marks suddenly lost control and released a vicious curse on him, threatening to take his life.

The abrupt turn of events confused Chu Feng, but he immediately took measures to resolve the crisis. He followed the steps on the stone tablet and overcame the trials in the Vicious Beast Hellworld. He managed to stabilize

the black marks and neutralize the vicious curse through that, but he found that he was unable to tap into its powers anymore.

He instinctively understood that he had to activate the Cleansing in order to tap into the power of the black marks. He knew that triggering the Cleansing was dangerous, but he knew that there were huge benefits if he could successfully clear this trial too. So, he eventually went ahead with it.

Eventually, he cleared the illusion and successfully returned back to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. By then, he realized that he could use the black marks to control the energy in the lake.

He knew that he could use this energy to suppress Protector Qi, but he refrained from doing so right away because he needed eye-witnesses. That was also the reason why he intentionally caused a huge commotion to lure people over to the lake.

He waited patiently for Li Fengxian's arrival before finally handing the daoist robe over. He wanted to ensure that nothing would go wrong in the process, and Li Fengxian was the only one whom he knew was trustworthy here.

“Ah...”

Li Fengxian gasped in astonishment upon hearing Chu Feng's story.

Even someone of his standing found it hard to take in Chu Feng's story right away. The implications here were simply too great.

“Chu Feng, can I trust that you haven't lied about anything in your story? You're a smart person, so you should know better than to mix in falsehoods into your story. There'll be severe consequences if we find that you have lied to us,” Li Fengxian warned.

“Lord Li, there's no falsehood in what I've told you thus far,” Chu Feng replied.

“I understand.”

Li Fengxian nodded in response before rising into the air. At the same time, Chu Feng's body floated upward and moved along with him. The two of them traveled at a speed so fast that Chu Feng couldn't even make out their surroundings.

By the time Li Fengxian finally came to a halt, Chu Feng was already out of the sectmaster's territory.

"Chu Feng, you've done well. It's just that this matter has grave implications, so we'll have to wait for the sectmaster's verdict. Remember, until the sectmaster finally gives her word, you aren't to use the power of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake anymore," Li Fengxian instructed.

"Is the sectmaster unwilling to meet me?"

Chu Feng knew that Li Fengxian had brought him along so as to bring him before the sectmaster, but he was brought out before meeting her. This was likely to be an order from the sectmaster.

"Why? Are you hoping to meet the sectmaster?" Li Fengxian chuckled.

"As a disciple of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, there's no way I wouldn't be curious about the sectmaster," Chu Feng replied with a smile.

"A disciple like you will definitely have a chance to meet the sectmaster in the future, so you need not worry about that. Alright, you ought to get going now," Li Fengxian said.

"I'll be taking my leave then."

Chu Feng felt a bit regretful since he was hoping to use this incident to win the sectmaster's goodwill, but since the sectmaster was unwilling to meet him, there was nothing he could do about it. In any case, he should have at least caught the sectmaster's attention with this.

After all, he accomplished something which even Dugu Lingtian failed to.

As long as the sectmaster was a smart person, she would surely treasure him.

Li Fengxian watched as Chu Feng headed off with a bright smile on his face.

"I've long known that that lad is no ordinary person, but I didn't think that he would be this formidable. It looks like our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect has picked up a great treasure this time around," Li Fengxian remarked with a smile.

It was only after Chu Feng finally disappeared from his line of sight that he turned around to head back to the sectmaster's residence. However, before he could get moving, he suddenly recoiled in astonishment.

Unbeknownst to him, someone was standing behind him.

It was a beautiful middle-aged lady dressed in a dragon robe, standing with a dignified air. However, her eyes were freezing cold, making it hard for anyone to meet her gaze.

It was not coldness arising from distance but loftiness. Anyone who set their eyes on her would instinctively lower their heads deferentially. Her presence was so strong that it humbled even someone of Li Fengxian's standing.

Li Fengxian quickly bowed deeply and greeted, "Paying respects to Lord Sectmaster!"

Chapter 4771: Punishment!

"Rise."

The sectmaster gestured to him to rise to his feet before turning around to head back to her residence. Her footsteps were elegant, but her speed was definitely not something to make light of. Li Fengxian had to give it his all in order to barely catch up with her.

In the blink of an eye, the two of them had already returned back to the gazebo where Chu Feng was waiting earlier. However, instead of entering the gazebo, the sectmaster descended onto the roof of the gazebo before gazing contemplatively at the sky veiled with calamitous dark clouds.

"Lord Sectmaster, I've long told you that Chu Feng is a prodigy, and I've been wanting to bring him into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for a long time now. It looks like my evaluation of him was truly spot-on. He's a true prodigy. Our sect has really picked up a treasure this time around. nDvE)Lb/In

"Now that I think about it, we really have to thank Duan Liufeng. If not for him..."

Li Fengxian was just about to get into talking about Chu Feng's feat when the sectmaster suddenly raised her hand, indicating for Li Fengxian to hold his tongue.

“I’ve heard what you’ve said earlier,” the sectmaster replied placidly.

Upon seeing this, Li Fengxian’s joyful face started turning a little tense.

It should have been impossible for anyone to remain calm after hearing of Chu Feng’s feat, so there was clearly something amiss with the sectmaster’s reaction.

“Lord Sectmaster, could it be that Chu Feng has been lying?” Li Fengxian asked carefully.

“Dugu Lingtian told me back then that there’s a key that governs the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’s formation. Anyone who manages to grasp it will be able to tap into the formation’s power. It’s just that he was a little lacking to claim that key,” the sectmaster said.

“If that’s the case, that would mean to say that Chu Feng’s story is true?” Li Fengxian remarked with a gleeful smile.

“He has indeed managed to grasp control over the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’s formation, and it’s true that there has been an abnormality with the Vicious Beast Hellworld too. However, we still need further investigation to determine whether everything he mentioned is true,” the sectmaster said.

“Regardless, Chu Feng has already proved his talent. He has managed to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record and achieve what he wasn’t able to do. He’ll be able to take over Lord Dugu Lingtian’s legacy and...”

Li Fengxian was in the midst of complimenting Chu Feng when the sectmaster suddenly turned her head over to eye Li Fengxian coldly, saying, “There’s no one who can replace Dugu Lingtian.”

Li Fengxian immediately explained, “Lord Sectmaster, I’ve no intention of making light of Lord Dugu Lingtian. I just think that it’s rare to come by someone of Chu Feng’s talent, and I believe that our sect should...”

“Are you trying to tell me what to do here?” the sectmaster asked.

“I dare not to.” Li Fengxian hurriedly lowered his head.

“I’m glad that you still remember whose words truly count in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. I want you to knock on the sect’s Dragon Bell later on

and relay my orders to all of the elders and disciples. Chu Feng has infringed on the rules of our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect by engaging in an act of insubordination. In my capacity as the sectmaster, I'll sentence him to three days imprisonment on the eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison," the sectmaster said.

"Three days imprisonment on the eleventh level? Lord Sectmaster, Chu Feng is still only at Utmost Exalted level! Isn't this punishment a little too harsh for him? I've already checked the daoist robe, and Protector Qi did tamper with it.

"Protector Qi was the one who tried to harm Chu Feng first, and Chu Feng only used the power of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake to restrict his movements. His actions can be justified as self-defense!"

Li Fengxian tried to speak up for Chu Feng despite knowing that he could incur the sectmaster's rage.

There were eighteen levels to the Hidden Dragon Prison, but the first ten levels were already severe punishments. Even the first level would be hard for any disciple to bear, and the horrors only grew with each increasing level.

It was a place feared by everyone in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

The eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison was more than enough to kill someone of Chu Feng's level. In fact, countless people had already died on the eleventh level, and those who survived the ordeal were either crippled or lost their minds.

Li Fengxian was afraid that Chu Feng wouldn't be able to walk out alive from this punishment.

"You have an objection with my verdict?" the sectmaster asked.

"I dare not to disobey your orders, but..."

Li Fengxian still wanted to speak up for Chu Feng, but before he could finish his piece, the sectmaster had already interjected right in.

"Just do as you're told to. I'll get someone else instead if you aren't willing to do it."

"I'll carry out your orders right now."

Li Fengxian had no choice but to obey the sectmaster's orders. He knew that the sectmaster was the king of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and a subordinate like him didn't have the right to reject her.

"Lord Sectmaster, pardon me for asking, but how do you intend to deal with Protector Qi?" Li Fengxian asked.

"Protector Qi will be punished for his crimes, but in view of his previous contribution to the sect, I'll temporarily strip him of his position as a protector and have him reflect on his actions in my prison," the sectmaster replied.

"This..."

Li Fengxian's face crumbled upon hearing those words.

The fact that Protector Qi was only temporarily stripped of his position meant that it was only a matter of time before he was reinstated. On top of that, the sectmaster's prison accorded fairly decent treatment.

It looked more like a way for Protector Qi to temporarily seek refuge so as to bail him out from the severe consequences of his vile actions.

It was true that Protector Qi had contributed significantly to the sect in his years of duty, so it would be fair to spare him from death. But still, such a punishment was simply far too biased. It was unfair to Chu Feng.

While there were many injustices going on in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect every day, any crimes that were indicted before the sectmaster would usually be harshly punished. The sectmaster's attitude toward this matter was completely baffling to Li Fengxian.

"Lord Sectmaster, isn't this... a little too lenient?"

Li Fengxian eventually decided to voice his thoughts.

"Li Fengxian, it looks like you're getting bolder with time. You seem to be displeased with my decision? Shall I step down and allow you to manage the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect instead?"

Despite the sectmaster's impassive voice, Li Fengxian felt cold sweat trickling down his back. He hurriedly kneeled onto the floor.

"I-I-I dare not to! Please forgive me!"

No one else in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect would dare believe that someone of Li Fengxian's caliber would actually get so nervous as to start stuttering.

"You may rise. Also... it wasn't easy for your relationship with Nangong Chunyue to improve a little, so make sure that you don't undo your efforts. If you allow your personal feelings to foil our plans, both of you will be severely punished," the sectmaster said.

"I understand," Li Fengxian replied with a nod.

He knew the implied meaning behind the sectmaster's words.

Regardless of the situation, he mustn't fall out with Nangong Chunyue. In other words, he shouldn't interfere at all if Nangong Chunyue intended to make a move against Chu Feng.

"You may leave now."

The sectmaster's voice reverberated in the surroundings, but she was already nowhere to be seen.

Li Fengxian rose back to his feet and sighed in a mixture of helplessness and confusion.

He thought that Chu Feng's accomplishment would win him the sectmaster's appreciation, who would then grant him the highest privileges amongst the disciples. Yet, things went in the opposite direction instead.

Not only was Chu Feng's accomplishment unappreciated, but he was even severely punished for no reason too.

Li Fengxian couldn't understand the rationale behind the sectmaster's decision at all, but he quickly rose to the air and headed toward the Dragon Bell anyway.

He simply dared not to defy the sectmaster's will.

Chapter 4772: Grandma's Doting

Chapter 4772: Grandma's Doting

Instead of returning back to his residence, Chu Feng headed to the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake. He still hadn't resolved his grudge with Nangong Yuliu yet.

By the time he returned, the entire place was already completely crowded. More people had headed over to join in the commotion while he was gone.

"Chu Feng is back!"

"Chu Feng, I told them that you were the one who controlled the phenomenon earlier, but they wouldn't believe me! It's good that you're back. Hurry up and show it to them!"

The crowd immediately bubbled in excitement at his arrival. Some of the elders even directed him with looks of respect.

Chu Feng's deed was unmatched by any disciple ever since the founding of the sect. Not even the great Dugu Lingtian was able to achieve such a feat.

If anyone still thought that it was only luck that Chu Feng broke Dugu Lingtian's record on the Snowy Heavenly Peak, they were now starting to believe that it was indeed his capability.

In fact, some of them even began discussing if Chu Feng could really best Dugu Lingtian.

Due to that, the elders and the disciples didn't hesitate to shower Chu Feng with fawning words. They hoped to get close to him before he truly came to prominence.

"Elders and fellow disciples, it's not that I don't want to demonstrate it, but Lord Li has ordered me not to abuse this power carelessly. I hope for your understanding," Chu Feng explained.

In the first place, those who wanted Chu Feng to demonstrate his control over the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake were doing it so that he could reinforce his reputation, but since he was unable to do so, they had no intention of pushing the matter.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng quickly swept his glance through the crowd, but Nangong Yuliu was nowhere to be seen. It seemed like the latter had slipped away upon realizing that the situation had turned awry.

“If there’s anyone here who knows Nangong Yuliu, I’ll have to trouble you to relay my words to him. While I’m the one who won the bet, I don’t intend to make things hard for him in view that we’re fellow disciples of the same sect.

“The reason why this started at all is due to him oppressing Senior Zhao Shi at the Hidden Dragon Martial Art Hall back then, and the condition we agreed on is that if I were to break Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record in the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake, he would apologize to Senior Zhao Shi publicly and allow her to slap him ten times.

“However, since I’m doing this to stand up for Senior Zhao Shi, the only request from my part is for him to apologize to Senior Zhao Shi. As for the part regarding the slaps, if Senior Zhao Shi is unwilling to do it, I have no qualms about it,” Chu Feng said.

The crowd nodded their heads in approval upon hearing those words.

They had already seen the token Nangong Yuliu had prepared for Chu Feng, and it was clear that he was intending to thoroughly humiliate Chu Feng. It was truly magnanimous of Chu Feng to say such words even after that.

In truth, Chu Feng wasn’t doing this to spare Nangong Yuliu’s pride. Someone of his personality couldn’t possibly tolerate Nangong Yuliu. He was just saying all of this out of consideration for Zhao Shi.

He could tell that Zhao Shi was frightened of Nangong Yuliu, and if he were to push this matter, he might just end up bringing trouble to Zhao Shi instead. That was also the reason why he chose to lighten the punishment against Nangong Yuliu.

After that, Chu Feng returned back to the North Tortoise Hall, hoping to rest. However, the chief elder and the others were simply too delighted with the turn of events that they insisted on drinking a few cups with him.

Chu Feng didn’t want to slight their kindness, so he went along with them.

He thought that it was a little excessive to have yet another celebration when it hadn’t been long since the last celebration banquet ended. However, he was in a good mood since he had managed to resolve several problems, so he was willing to accompany them.

It didn't take long for the news concerning the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake to spread throughout the sect, and those words that Chu Feng said about not making things hard for Nangong Yuliu soon reached Nangong Yuliu's ears.

"Senior Nangong, Chu Feng has risen in prominence today with his feats, but he chose to let you off. It seems like he isn't a bad person after all."

Nangong Yuliu and his lackeys were all gathered in his residence. They were here to console Nangong Yuliu because they thought that Chu Feng wouldn't let him off.

It was precisely due to such thoughts that they were overjoyed when they heard that Chu Feng wouldn't make things difficult for Nangong Yuliu.

This was especially so for one of the more beautiful female disciples here. She was in a relationship with Nangong Yuliu, so she was more concerned about him. Her smile was the brightest of everyone present upon hearing the news.

"What did you say?"

Nangong Yuliu turned to the smiling female disciple and asked with a cold voice.

"I..."

The female disciple was able to immediately sense that Nangong Yuliu's mood was off, causing the smile on her face to fade into nervousness.

Pah!

Before she could say a word, Nangong Yuliu raised his arm and planted a slap on the female disciple's face, causing her to tumble onto the ground.

The sheer force of the slap tore open a laceration on her face, causing her cheeks to bleed profusely.

However, Nangong Yuliu's rage wasn't placated with just this.

"You said that Chu Feng is going to let me off? What rights does he have to let me off? Who does he think he is? How dare you laugh? Are you that happy that Chu Feng is doing well now? Shit, was it Chu Feng who sent you over to my side?!"

Nangong Yuliu hurled kicks and punches onto the female disciple as he spoke. In just a short instant, the beautiful disciple was completely disfigured.

Yet, no one present dared to step forward to stop him. It was not that they didn't want to do so but they dared not to. They feared that they would be implicated here.

Nangong Yuliu was simply too frustrated that he wanted to vex his emotions. The female disciple was already severely injured, but he had no intention of giving it a rest.

Pah!

But all of a sudden, a palm reached forth and grabbed Nangong Yuliu's fist. The angry Nangong Yuliu was enraged that someone was trying to stop him, so he raised his arm to strike the other party.

However, when he finally caught a closer look at the other party's face, he gasped in shock and hurriedly backed away before bowing deeply.

"Grandmother..."

It turned out that the person who stopped him was no other than his grandmother, Nangong Chunyue!

"Are you intending to kill her? What's becoming of you to vent your rage on a woman after losing a bet?" Nangong Chunyue questioned sternly.

Nangong Yuliu knew that he was at fault here, so he lowered his head silently.

However, Nangong Chunyue didn't punish Nangong Yuliu for this. She took out a couple of valuable medicine and passed it over to the severely injured female disciple.

"All of you may leave now. Remember... you aren't to speak of the matters today."

Naturally, the other lackeys dared not to disobey the orders from someone of Nangong Chunyue's stature. They quickly bowed deeply before dragging the severely injured female disciple out.

With this, the only ones left in the room were Nangong Chunyue and Nangong Yuliu.

“Grandmother, are you fine?” Nangong Yuliu asked concernedly.

Nangong Yuliu knew that Protector Qi only helped him in view of his grandmother, and his grandmother had headed over to meet the sectmaster together with Li Fengxian earlier.

Naturally, he was afraid that his grandmother would be implicated in this matter.

“What could possibly happen to me?”

Nangong Chunyue took a seat and poured herself a cup of tea. Her attitude was so relaxed that it was as if nothing had happened at all.

“Then... what about Protector Qi?” Nangong Yuliu asked.

“Protector Qi has been stripped of his position. He’ll be reflecting on his own actions in the sectmaster’s residence for the time being,” Nangong Chunyue said.

“He isn’t going to be punished even with the evidence in place? Grandmother, what’s going on?”

Nangong Yuliu was surprised by how lenient the sectmaster’s verdict was.

He thought that it was already a huge blessing for his grandmother not to be implicated in this matter, and that Protector Qi was doomed for sure. Yet, everything was much better than he had expected.

“Protector Qi has worked in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for many years and achieved significant merits. How could the sectmaster possibly punish him severely for a disciple who had just joined the sect not too long ago?” Nangong Chunyue said.

“But grandmother, that Chu Feng is a person with great means. He seems to have really gained control over the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’s powers!” Nangong Yuliu said.

“Yuliu, having talent is a good thing, but being too conspicuous when you don’t have the strength to protect yourself is nothing short of foolishness,” Nangong Chunyue said.

“Does this mean that Chu Feng has gotten himself in trouble?”

Nangong Yuliu sensed that there was something deeper to his grandmother's remark, but he couldn't fully figure out what it was.

"You'll find out soon enough," Nangong Chunyue said with a gleeful smile. However, she quickly changed her tone and asked, "I heard that you issued a challenge to Li Muzhi?"

"Grandmother, I need to return the humiliation I suffered. No matter what it takes, I'll reclaim my position as a Hidden Dragon Disciple!" Nangong Yuliu said.

"Take this and hide it inside your dantian. Only use it when it's necessary."

Nangong Chunyue took out an exquisite box and handed it over to Nangong Yuliu. The latter took the box and opened it. His lips immediately curled in delight.

"Thanks, grandmother!"

He wasn't confident of dealing with Li Muzhi at the start, but with this object, there was nothing to fear anymore. He would surely be able to repay the debt without a hitch!

Nangong Chunyue was also heartened to see how happy Nangong Yuliu was. It wasn't easy for her to acquire this object, but she felt that it was all worth it upon seeing the smile on her grandson's face.

Chapter 4773: Death Sentence

There was a huge copper bell floating above the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It spanned a length of over ten thousand meters, looking almost like a floating mountain.

Despite its huge size, its intricate design showed that great effort was put into its construction. On the surface of the bell were eighteen lifelike dragons coiling around it.

Even someone with Li Fengxian's airs appeared tiny before the bell.

The bell also had quite a background to it too.

It was no other than the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's Dragon Bell.

Li Fengxian was currently standing beneath the bell, grabbing onto the rope to toll it. Yet, despite having stood there for more than an hour now, he was still unable to bring himself to do it.

As a Hidden Dragon Elder, he knew deep well what the bell represented. Unless something serious occurred, this bell would never be tolled.

The moment the bell rang, all of the elders and disciples would rush over and prepare for combat.

The sectmaster's order to have him toll the Dragon Bell to gather everyone in order to announce Chu Feng's punishment was more than indicative of the sectmaster's attitude toward him.

Even if Chu Feng could survive the eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison, his life in the sect from now onward would unlikely be smooth-sailing.

Li Fengxian really couldn't understand why the sectmaster was treating Chu Feng in such a manner. Chu Feng was a talented individual, and the sect ought to do everything it could to protect him.

"Could it be that... the rumors are true, and our sectmaster had really been in a relationship with Lord Dugu Lingtian back then... In other words, our sectmaster wouldn't allow anyone who can surpass Lord Dugu Lingtian to exist in the sect?"

Such a thought arose in Li Fengxian's mind.

Such rumors had been going around for a while now, so it was not just blind speculation on his part.

He didn't think that it was right for the sectmaster to do that, but he wasn't in a position to oppose the sectmaster. So, he closed his eyes, gritted his teeth, and began moving his arms to toll the bell.

Grarr!

Unlike normal bells, the Dragon Bell didn't chime a deep reverberation. Instead, the eighteen dragons coiling around its surface rose into the sky and formed a massive formation.

Garar!

All eighteen dragons released a furious howl at once that echoed throughout the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, alerting everyone in the realm.

This was the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's Dragon Bell. The bell's toll was no other than the dragon's roar!

All of the disciples and elders who weren't in closed-door training immediately rushed over from all directions to gather beneath the Dragon Bell. Despite the hurried assembly, they swiftly got into positions, forming a neat formation according to their affiliated halls.

Not everyone showed themselves though. Some of the experts noticed that the one tolling the bell was Li Fengxian and realized that it wasn't something of particular importance, so they chose to just watch the situation from a distance away.

"Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, what happened?"

The elders asked anxiously.

Instead of answering the question, Li Fengxian turned his sights toward the disciples of the North Tortoise Hall and ordered, "Chu Feng, step out."

Chu Feng had no idea what was going on, but he still stood out and flew toward Li Fengxian.

Shoosh!

However, before Chu Feng could get close, Li Fengxian suddenly tossed out a golden chain to bind him.

This abrupt event astonished not just the elders of the North Tortoise Hall but everyone else too.

By this point, Chu Feng's reputation had already reached everyone's ears. As someone who had consecutively broken Dugu Lingtian's records and grasped control over the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake's formation, the means he had displayed had indubitably surpassed that of anyone else since the sect's establishment.

Everyone thought that Li Fengxian was calling him forth to compliment him, but he ended up chaining him up instead!

“Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, may I ask why are you shackling me?” Chu Feng asked with a slight frown.

He never thought that he would receive such treatment after proving himself worthy.

“Chu Feng, do you plead guilty?” Li Fengxian asked.

“What am I guilty of?” Chu Feng asked.

“As a disciple, you’ve committed insubordination by daring to attack a protector. That’s a major crime in our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect!” Li Fengxian said.

“A major crime? What about Protector Qi harming me despite shouldering the responsibility to ensure the disciples’ safety? If not for my luck, I might have already lost my life to him. I could have killed him after grasping control of the Blackwater Sixfinger Lake’s formation, but I chose to only bind him instead so as to await the arrival of the elders to judge the matter.

“Am I still guilty despite all of that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, your actions are understandable, but the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect has its own rules. You could have reported the matter upward to have the elders deal with Protector Qi, but you shouldn’t have made a move against him,” Li Fengxian replied.

“Very well. If you wish to put it in such a way, there’s nothing I can say. However, I would like to ask what’s the punishment that is being accorded to Protector Qi,” Chu Feng asked.

“Protector Qi has been stripped of his position and is currently being punished in the sectmaster’s prison,” Li Fengxian replied.

Chu Feng didn’t know the inside details regarding the sectmaster’s prison, so he thought that it was some kind of cruel place. Due to that, he was at least able to accept this outcome, and it alleviated his anger significantly.

“It looks like the one who wished to punish me is the sectmaster, and I don’t dare to disobey the orders of the sectmaster. May I know how the sectmaster wishes to punish me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Insubordination is a severe crime. The sectmaster has sentenced you to three days of reflection on the eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison,” Li Fengxian said.

“Hidden Dragon Prison? The eleventh level at that?”

Everyone was astounded to hear those words. That was practically a death sentence!

Chapter 4774: Disappointment

“What did you say? You’re sentencing Chu Feng into the Hidden Dragon Prison, not to mention the eleventh level at that? What did Chu Feng do so wrong as to be punished so harshly?”

A piercing voice echoed in the air. It was Xia Yan.

As soon as Xia Yan spoke up, another elder swiftly appeared out of nowhere beside her. This elder was Hidden Dragon Elder Xia Zhicheng, Xia Yan’s grandfather.

Xia Yan immediately found herself unable to move, as if her body had been bound by something. Naturally, she was unable to speak either. She could only direct her furious eyes around.

Everyone knew that Xia Zhicheng was stopping Xia Yan because he didn’t want her to get involved in the affairs here.

“Milord, Chu Feng might have erred, but his actions are justified given the circumstances. Isn’t it too harsh to sentence him to the Hidden Dragon Prison over that?”

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall also spoke up for Chu Feng’s leniency.

The crowd immediately shot him a look of respect. The sounding of the Dragon Bell meant that the verdict had come from the sectmaster herself, so it must have taken the chief elder a lot of courage to dare to speak up in such a situation.

“Chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, this is a decision from our sectmaster. There’s no room for objections here,” Li Fengxian said.

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall felt deeply indignant, but he had no choice but to step down.

He might have still been able to voice his thoughts out if Li Fengxian hadn't clarified the matter, but with him explicitly pointing out that this was the sectmaster's decision, it was no longer his place to voice his comments anymore.

The sectmaster's decision was absolute in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

The crowd turned to look at Chu Feng, some feeling gleeful whereas others feeling sympathetic for his plight. Most of them couldn't understand the rationale behind the sectmaster's decision, but they dared not to question it.

"Chief elder, can you tell me what kind of place the Hidden Dragon Prison is?" Chu Feng asked.

He could sense from the atmosphere that the Hidden Dragon Prison wasn't as innocent of a place as he thought it out to be.

"The Hidden Dragon Prison is the harshest prison in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. The first ten levels are already unbearable for most cultivators, and anything beyond that can easily claim a person's life.

"Chu Feng, you should quickly beg for mercy. There might still be room for reconciliation here," the chief elder told Chu Feng through his voice transmission.

Chu Feng turned to look at Li Fengxian in disbelief upon hearing those words.

"Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, does my crime really warrant being sentenced to the eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison?" he asked.

"Chu Feng, this is the sectmaster's verdict," Li Fengxian replied.

"Hahahaha!"

Chu Feng burst into laughter upon hearing those words. His laughter was filled with scorn. Everyone could sense the disappointment in his voice.

"Chu Feng, how dare you act audaciously before the Dragon Bell?!"

Many elders stood forward to berate Chu Feng menacingly. They were prepared to teach Chu Feng a lesson if he didn't rein in his laughter.

However, Li Fengxian shot a cold glance at the elders who criticized Chu Feng and remarked sharply, "Are you all trying to obstruct the proceedings here?"

The elders quickly backed down fearfully.

Li Fengxian wasn't just a Hidden Dragon Elder at the moment but an envoy relaying the sectmaster's orders. Unless the sectmaster or vice sectmaster was here, no one else had the right to undermine Li Fengxian's authority here.

At the same time, Chu Feng reined in his laughter, but his gaze showed no hints of compromise at all.

"I've never provoked anyone on my own accord ever since entering the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Yet, the oppression constantly occurring in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect left me with no choice but to retaliate against those who abuse their power, but even so, I always made sure not to go too far. n.(OveℓbIn

"I did so not because I'm afraid of trouble but out of respect for the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Yet, I ended up landing in such a state."

Chu Feng glanced at the crowd as he spoke those words, as if he was addressing all of them.

"Shut your mouth, Chu Feng. If you dare to run your mouth once more, I'll end your life here before you can even find your way into the Hidden Dragon Prison!"

Another person spoke up. This time around, it was Nangong Yuliu's grandmother, Nangong Chunyue.

Only someone like her would dare to criticize Chu Feng after Li Fengxian had exerted his dominance.

However, Chu Feng had no fear of Nangong Chunyue. He simply sneered coldly and said, "Oh, isn't this Lord Nangong Chunyue of the Hidden Dragon Elders? Is your grandson not with you today? Or is he simply hiding amongst

the crowd? Tell him that he hasn't fulfilled the end of his bet yet, and I'll make sure to look for him once I'm back."

After saying those words, he turned to Li Fengxian and said, "Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, let's go. I'll accept my fate"

It was not that Chu Feng was without a temper. On the contrary, rage was filling up his mind at this very moment. Had it been in the past, he would have surely lashed out than to suffer such grievance. However, he was no longer the rash young man he used to be.

He knew that he was here to save Zi Ling, and he was more determined than ever to do so after realizing how repugnant of a place the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was.

He had tried his best to hold back so as to not go too far as to give Nangong Chunyue an opportunity to attack him. He knew that he was simply too weak at the moment that he had no choice but to lower his head for the time being. Otherwise, he would simply be courting death.

Li Fengxian quickly brought Chu Feng toward the Hidden Dragon Prison.

The Hidden Dragon Prison wasn't a forbidden ground, so all of the sect members were allowed to enter the area. So, the elders and the disciples quickly followed Li Fengxian, hoping to watch everything with their own eyes.

They knew that this could be the last time they would be seeing Chu Feng.

...

There was a radiant golden field in the Hidden Dragon Prison that gave off an air of divinity. Were it not for the eighteen black metal gates that towered over ten thousand meters high on it, no one would associate it with the Hidden Dragon Prison.

Each of the eighteen black metal gates had a number inscribed on it. It was the levels of the prison they led one toward. In front of each of the gates sat a black-robed elder.

These eighteen black-robed elders looked identical to one another in terms of dress-up and appearance, having long black hair and a thick mustache. It

would be hard to differentiate them from one another without taking a close look.

All of them remained perfectly calm despite the sudden arrival of a huge crowd.

Li Fengxian took out his Hidden Dragon Elder Token and ordered, "Open the gate to the eleventh level."

The elder sitting before the eleventh gate placed his hands together, and the gate behind him began to creak open, revealing a black spirit formation gate.

Chu Feng had no idea what was waiting for him beyond the spirit formation gate, but he knew that he had no other choice but to walk in. So, he turned to Li Fengxian and asked, "Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, do I have to walk in with the shackles?"

"No, there's no need for that."

Li Fengxian removed the chains binding Chu Feng's body with a wave of his hand.

Chu Feng directed a bow toward Li Fengxian. Even though Li Fengxian was the one who brought him here, he didn't blame him for that. He could tell that Li Fengxian had already tried speaking up for him through the helplessness in his eyes.

It was all the sectmaster's decision.

After the bow, he began making his way into the spirit formation gate.

Li Fengxian looked at Chu Feng's silhouette hesitantly. He wanted to console the latter and even apologize to him on behalf of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but he couldn't do so because it would be going against the sectmaster's wishes.

He had no idea what he should say or do right now.

Nevertheless, the moment Chu Feng was just about to step in, he still said, "Chu Feng, make sure to return alive."

Chu Feng turned around and replied with a smile, "Don't worry, elder. I'm bound to die one day, but this definitely won't be my burial ground."

With those words, he stepped into the spirit formation gate.

Chapter 4775: Opportunity Amidst Risk

Chu Feng didn't enter the Hidden Dragon Prison right away after entering the spirit formation gate. He felt a special formation flowing into his body before swiftly receding.

It was only after the formation fully receded was he finally transported to another location.

By the time he knew it, he realized that he was already standing in the midst of a gigantic beast's mouth. He could see the beast's fangs and its moving tongue.

But what was the most unbearable of all was the nasty stench lingering in the area.

Even though he was in the mouth of a beast, it looked almost as if he was on flat ground because everything was simply too huge. He was no different from a speck of dust that had accidentally flown into the mouth of a giant.

He quickly used Heaven's Eye to scan his surroundings.

He knew that the eleventh level of the Hidden Dragon Prison was filled with threats, so he needed to identify the dangers in the area first.

"Chu Feng, are you still unable to open your World Spirit Space?" Yu Sha asked.

She was worried about Chu Feng and wanted to come out to protect him.

"Are you able to share your powers with me?" Chu Feng asked in return.

"Not yet. I'm able to share your sense of sight and hearing, but I'm unable to share my powers with you," Yu Sha replied.

"It's the Hidden Dragon Armor. It's preventing me from borrowing your power or summoning the World Spirit Space. It feels like it's doing it on purpose. I'm clearly able to use my spirit power, but it just wouldn't allow me to borrow your powers," Chu Feng said with a bitter smile. n.)0veℓbIn

Yu Sha also felt helpless about that. It frustrated her that she was unable to lend a helping hand despite the danger Chu Feng was facing. She turned to look at Eggy, who had gone into closed-door cultivation, and she felt even more guilt-ridden.

She had promised Eggy to take care of Chu Feng, but it looked like she was already breaking her promise now.

“It’s coming...” Chu Feng remarked grimly.

He could sense danger coming from the distance. It was a heatwave that had arisen from somewhere and was swiftly coming his way. Even from a distance away, he could already see the distortions in space it was producing.

It enveloped him in the blink of an eye. It didn’t burn away his clothes, but it seared both his body and his soul.

It was unbearable. Chu Feng couldn’t help but clench his fists tightly together and his face warped from pain.

But a moment later, a smile suddenly broke out on his face.

“I see... Yu Sha, you need not worry. It looks like I won’t die here,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? Did you notice something?” Yu Sha asked.

“I won’t be able to avoid suffering a bit here, but there was a formation to check my abilities prior to entering this place. The intensity of the punishment here changes according to the individual’s cultivation, so I’ll still be able to endure it,” Chu Feng said.

“Is that really so?” Yu Sha asked worriedly.

“It won’t be a problem at all. I might be lacking in other aspects, but I’ve never met anyone who beats me in endurance.”

Despite the blazing heat searing his body and soul, Chu Feng still let out a chuckle.

However, Yu Sha felt even more pained upon hearing those words. His level of endurance only hinted at the countless suffering he had been put through along the way.

Chu Feng wasn't born with skin thicker than others. It was just that the suffering he had gone through had tempered his willpower to far surpass the others.

Once a cultivator reached a certain level, as long as their soul wasn't destroyed, they could swiftly recover their body. Due to that, it was not the body but the soul that was the most important to a cultivator.

As long as a cultivator's soul remained intact, he would be able to remain alive.

The resilience of one's soul tended to be related to one's willpower. The greater a cultivator's willpower was, the more resilient his soul was.

There were all sorts of talents that cultivators could be born with, but willpower was one aspect that could only be slowly tempered over time by undergoing suffering and trials.

“What's that?”

However, Chu Feng soon realized that in the depths of the Hidden Dragon Prison, other than the heatwave, there was a bundle of seemingly sentient aura floating into appearance. He couldn't see through this mysterious bundle of aura using his Heaven's Eye, but it glimmered with faint light and emanated an enticing scent.

Chu Feng tried to pull the mysterious bundle of aura toward his side using his martial power and spirit power, but it wasn't moving at all. This meant that he would have to approach it in order to take a closer look at it.

“Gahh...”

But as soon as Chu Feng started moving, the heat ravaging his body and soul suddenly intensified to a level that was almost unbearable for him.

“Chu Feng, what's wrong?” Yu Sha asked nervously.

“I'm fine. It's just think I have to obtain that object over there.”

Chu Feng gritted his teeth and tried advancing once more, but he was forced to stop not too long later. The further he walked, the more unbearable the heat became.

“What is that? Why do you have to obtain it?” Yu Sha asked worriedly.

She could sense that Chu Feng was getting weaker with every step he took. Even though Chu Feng didn't say a word, it was clear that he was paying a price for approaching the bundle of aura.

“I don't know what it is, but my instincts tell me that it's something beneficial to me,” Chu Feng replied.

“Instincts? Chu Feng, could it be a trap? Don't forget the reason why you're here. It'll be better if you just bear with it. Your safety takes precedence over everything else,” Yu Sha advised.

“In the first place, I wouldn't have tolerated that nonsense earlier on if not to save Zi Ling from this atrocious place. This is an opportunity for me, and there's no way I'm going to miss it. It's my philosophy in life to grasp opportunities amidst risks.”

Chu Feng began pushing his way forward once more, but barely a few steps later, he was forced to step once more. This time around, he even had to quickly retreat back to his initial position.

“It's indeed a valuable treasure.”

Chu Feng realized that the intensity of the heat had reduced back to its original level once he returned back to his initial spot.

It seemed like the intensity of the heat was really increasing the closer he got to the mysterious bundle of aura. This association convinced that the bundle of aura would bring him great benefits.

“Chu Feng, are you certain that's a treasure?” Yu Sha asked.

“Yes, I'm certain,” Chu Feng replied.

“What kind of treasure is it?” Yu Sha asked.

“I can't tell yet,” Chu Feng replied.

“ ... ”

Yu Sha didn't know how to respond to those words.

On the other hand, Chu Feng seemed to be getting more and more excited.

“Don’t worry, Yu Sha. I know what I’m doing. While I seek opportunities amidst risk, I know where my limit lies. I’ll back down right away if things get too dangerous. I wouldn’t have been able to survive to this day if I’m really that reckless,” Chu Feng replied.

Yu Sha knew that it would be impossible for her to talk Chu Feng out of it anymore, so she decided to give it a rest.

“Be careful,” she said.

Chu Feng rested for a moment before making his way toward the mysterious bundle of aura once more. His strategy was simple.

The closer he got to the mysterious bundle of aura, the greater the intensity of the heat. If so, all he had to do was to slowly adapt to the intense heat until he could finally approach the bundle of aura.

Chapter 4776: False Testimony

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Soon, it was time for the eleventh floor of the Hidden Dragon Prison to open once more. Many elders and disciples arrived at the prison entrance early in the morning, resulting in the area getting a little crowded.

They glanced in the direction of the eleventh gate as they discussed fervently amongst themselves, wondering if Chu Feng was still alive or not.

However, what was worth noticing was that there were a few familiar faces amongst the crowd, namely the third and fifth ranked Hidden Dragon Disciples, Zuoqiu Yanliang, and Song Qian.

Other than them, many of the disciples who were trapped in the Vicious Beast Hellworld the other day also appeared in the vicinity, though Li Muzhi and his group were nowhere to be seen.

The reason behind this had to be traced back to the second day Chu Feng was still trapped inside the Hidden Dragon Prison.

That day, the disciples trapped in the Vicious Beast Hellworld were finally freed. However, so as to obtain the antidote to their poison, they spoke the

lies that Zuoqiu Yanliang told them, pinning the blame of the Cleansing all on Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was the one who saved them, but in the end, they made him out to be the culprit who caused great devastation and nearly cost them their lives.

Of course, Li Muzhi and the others tried to speak up on his behalf, but there was little they could do when prestigious disciples like Zuoqiu Yanliang, Song Qian, and the Duanmu Brothers were standing on the same front, insisting on their statements.

It was apparent to the crowd who were the more trustworthy ones here.

Due to that, Li Muzhi and the others nearly got harshly punished for speaking up for Chu Feng. They were only spared due to Li Muzhi's grandfather pleading on their behalf before the sectmaster, but even so, they were still grounded to their respective residences for the time being.

All of a sudden, Chu Feng who had come into prominence recently suddenly became a greatly hated figure in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

Even those who thought that Chu Feng was a talent dared not to speak up for him, for the ones who were opposed to Chu Feng weren't just the elders and the disciples but the sectmaster as well.

Chu Feng had already demonstrated his talent, but the sectmaster chose to punish him instead of siding with him. Her attitude toward him was made very clear.

Creak!

Finally, the black gates to the eleventh level started opening, revealing a spirit formation gate.

There was nothing amiss with the spirit formation gate, but oddly enough, Chu Feng didn't emerge from within right away. Everyone began to wonder if Chu Feng had lost his life.

Zuoqiu Yanliang, Nangong Yuliu, and the other enemies of Chu Feng were all pleased to see that. They would be more than happy if Chu Feng were to lose his life in prison.

However, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the others lowered their heads guiltily. They felt conscience-stricken about Chu Feng's plight.

It was a huge honor for someone of Chu Feng's talent to choose their North Tortoise Hall, and they swore to protect him. Yet, every time Chu Feng met with danger, they found themselves unable to do anything to help.

They resented their powerlessness.

"Oh? Looks like there's quite a huge crowd here."

Just as everyone thought that Chu Feng was doomed, a voice suddenly sounded from the spirit formation gate.

Following that, Chu Feng stepped out from within.

"Chu Feng is actually alive?"

Zuoqiu Yanliang, Nangong Yuliu, and the others were disappointed with Chu Feng's appearance whereas the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the others broke out in beaming smiles.

But at the same time, their hearts couldn't help but ache on his behalf too.

Chu Feng was indeed still alive, but his face and lips had turned pale, and his eyes had lost their usual spirit. His physical condition and mental state seemed to be in horrible shape, such that his feet were wobbling with every step.

Even though he had survived the ordeal, it was clear that he hadn't fared well over the last three days. It must have been unbearable torture in there.

"You sure are lucky to have survived, Chu Feng," Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

"You've only managed to come out now? Looks like you've failed to clear the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace," Chu Feng remarked wryly.

However, Zuoqiu Yanliang simply sneered in response, saying, "Chu Feng, are you still spouting lies even at this point? Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace? Are you still going to continue spouting that nonsense? You should just admit to your crimes now," Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

"Chu Feng, do you plead guilty?"

A towering elder with a glowering look on his face suddenly questioned Chu Feng sternly.

He was one of the Hidden Dragon Elders going by the name of Huyan Xiaotian.

The moment Huyan Xiaotian appeared, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall immediately sent a voice transmission to inform him of Huyan Xiaotian's identity so that Chu Feng wouldn't cross him by accident.

"What crime am I guilty of?" Chu Feng asked.

"In the absence of elders, all disciples should heed the leaderships of the Hidden Dragon Disciples. Yet, you disobeyed the orders of Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian and instead wreaked havoc, causing them to nearly lose their lives in the Vicious Beast Hellworld. This is the first crime," Huyan Xiaotian said.

"What's the second?" Chu Feng asked.

"You left the Vicious Beast Hellworld in advance, but instead of speaking the truth and asking for forgiveness, you fabricated lies and made yourself out to be a hero. That's the second crime. Do you plead guilty to these two crimes?" Huyan Xiaotian asked.

"Hidden Dragon Elder, do you have any evidence for the crimes?" Chu Feng asked.

"All of the disciples in the Vicious Beast Hellworld are eye-witnesses. Are you trying to say that they're all lying? Chu Feng, the evidence is already in place. If you admit to it, we can still consider going lenient on you. However, if you still insist on denying your crimes, you'd only be putting yourself in a worse position," Huyan Xiaoting said.

Numerous disciples walked out amidst the crowd and stood behind Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian. They were all the people who were with Chu Feng in the Vicious Beast Hellworld the other day.

Chu Feng directed a smile toward those disciples.

They were all either Hidden Dragon Disciples or personal disciples, figures whom the others all looked up to. Yet, they couldn't help but feel panicked when they were met with Chu Feng's smile.

The overwhelming power that Chu Feng had displayed the other day in the Vicious Beast Hellworld was simply too great that it was imprinted in their minds. None of them dared to look down on Chu Feng anymore.

"If what Lord Hidden Dragon Elder said is true, it would mean that all of you have made false testimonies. What did Zuoqiu Yanliang give you all?" Chu Feng asked.

"False testimonies? Chu Feng, it looks like you're beyond redemption. You still refuse to give up at this point, instead claiming that we have falsified our testimonies? Just how insolent can you be? What kind of place do you think our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is?" Zuoqiu Yanliang roared furiously.

His tone made it sound as if Chu Feng was a true sinner.

"Chu Feng, just give up and plead guilty!"

"What's the point of struggling in futility here?"

The other personal disciples also began to criticize Chu Feng.

It was as if the whole world wanted his death, but Chu Feng didn't lose his composure at all. Instead, his lips curled further upward.

"Very well. Since you have all made up your minds, don't blame me for this."
n/-OVeℓB1n

Chu Feng's words induced laughter from the crowd. Those who were oblivious to the truth looked at him as if he was a fool. They thought that it was utterly foolish for him to dare to threaten others when he was going to get indicted very soon, not to mention that the ones he was threatening were the Hidden Dragon Disciples and personal disciples.

In their view, no one in their right minds would dare to do such a thing.

Little did they know that Song Qian and the other personal disciples felt their hearts clench upon seeing the look on Chu Feng's face. They sensed danger

from Chu Feng's smile, and it made them realize that they might have made the wrong call here.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

A series of dull explosions echoed the next moment. In the blink of an eye, ten of the personal disciples who had stood forward to accuse Chu Feng blew up into bits.

"W-what's going on?!"

All of the elders and disciples were horrified by the turn of events. Even the Huyan Xiaotian was stunned.

He quickly scanned the surroundings to see if there were any experts hidden in the shadows, but he couldn't find anyone at all. He couldn't figure out why the ten personal disciples would lose their lives.

While everyone was still baffled by this inexplicable tragedy, Chu Feng directed a sharp gaze toward Song Qian and asked, "Song Qian, do you wish to be the next one?"

Song Qian's heart lurched upon hearing those words. Without any hesitation, she knelt before Chu Feng and cried out, "Chu Feng, I was wrong! It wasn't my intention to frame you. I was forced into it!"

There was a look of absolute terror on Song Qian's face, and she seemed to be on the verge of an emotional breakdown.

But what everyone couldn't understand was why a Hidden Dragon Disciple like her would actually kneel before Chu Feng, and her words seemed to be hinting at another story here.

Chapter 4777: Acquittal

Chu Feng could tower over the others in the Vicious Beast Hellworld because he grasped the power of the Hellking. However, he also knew that he would lose control over the Hellking's power once he left the Vicious Beast Hellworld, causing the tables to be turned on him.

He was well aware that Zuoqiu Yanliang wasn't the type of person to give up easily.

Thus, he left a tinge of the Hellking's power in Zuoqiu Yanliang, Song Qian, and the other disciples' bodies as an additional layer of assurance.

Chu Feng had no intention of exploiting it against them, but if any of them dared to fabricate falsehoods to frame him, he would execute them with this power without any hesitation.

What he didn't know, however, was that shortly after he entered the Hidden Dragon Illusory Palace, Zuoqiu Yanliang fed the other disciples poison. He forced them to align their testimonies with his in order to frame Chu Feng.

The disciples were put in a dilemma, but they eventually decided to heed Zuoqiu Yanliang's commands. After all, Zuoqiu Yanliang's poison was definitely fatal whereas they couldn't sense the Hellking's power that Chu Feng fused into their bodies at all, so they were gambling on the fact that Chu Feng was just intimidating them.

Besides, it made sense to them that Chu Feng was no longer able to tap into the powers of the Hellking once he was out of the Vicious Beast Hellworld.

It was a gamble, but unfortunately, they had chosen the wrong side.

Chu Feng was indeed still controlling the power of the Hellking, though they weren't able to feel it. The mangled corpses of the ten personal disciples on the floor were the proof of it.

If they didn't come clean now, they would be the next ones to die.

"Junior Chu Feng, we have done you injustice!"

All of the disciples who were still pressuring Chu Feng to confess knelt onto the floor, including the Duanmu Brothers too. The only one who remained standing was Zuoqiu Yanliang.

"Injustice? How have you done me injustice? I think we should make things very clear here, or else the consequences could be dire for all of us," Chu Feng sneered coldly.

“I-it’s Senior Zuoqiu! He fed us poison! He forced us to frame you, saying that we would only get the antidote if we did your bidding. The poison is still in our bodies right now! Lord Hidden Dragon Elder should be able to find it!

“Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, we are speaking the truth this time around! It wasn’t our intention to frame Chu Feng. We were coerced by Senior Zuoqiu! Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, please redress our grievances!” Song Qian cried out.

The other disciples followed suit too, revealing the truth of the entire incident.

With everything that had happened, they had no choice but to expose Zuoqiu Yanliang’s evil deeds. They might suffer in the future for offending Zuoqiu Yanliang, but it was much better than dying here.

Huyan Xiaotian turned to Zuoqiu Yanliang and asked deeply, “Zuoqiu Yanliang, is what they said true?”

“Yes, I was indeed the one who did it. It was out of hatred for Junior Chu Feng that I did this.”

A shocking sight occurred. Zuoqiu Yanliang actually confessed to his crimes.

He turned to Chu Feng with a remorseful look on his face and said, “Junior Chu Feng, I apologize for what I’ve done. Please forgive me.”

Zuoqiu Yanliang was actually lowering his head!

“You want me to let you off with just an apology? Zuoqiu Yanliang, you should better than anyone else that your life is mine now. If I want you to die, not even your grandfather will be able to save you,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, what do I have to do in order to earn your forgiveness?” Zuoqiu Yanliang asked humbly.

“Kneel down and kowtow to me,” Chu Feng said.

“What? He wants Zuoqiu Yanliang to kneel down and kowtow to him?”

The crowd found what they were hearing inconceivable. Some even wondered if Chu Feng had gone mad.

Even if Chu Feng was justified to make such a demand, it was still Zuoqiu Yanliang they were talking about here! Putting aside his grandfather, he was one of the strongest juniors in the sect at the moment!

He had always been a lofty figure towering above everyone else. How could such a person possibly fall to his knees?

Putong! ~~no~~ ~~re-~~ ~~lb-~~ In

To everyone's astonishment, Zuoqiu Yanliang really kneeled down and kowtowed, earnestly pleading for Chu Feng's forgiveness.

"Junior Chu Feng, I was wrong. Please forgive me. I was despicable and shameless. I allowed my hatred to blind my eyes. Please give me a chance, I'll never dare to do it ever again."

Zuoqiu Yanliang's attitude caught everyone off-guard. Even the Huyan Xiaotian was stunned, not knowing what to make of this situation.

"Reveal what happened that day. You only need to speak of the truth and nothing else," Chu Feng said.

Zuoqiu Yanliang began to reveal the happenings that day honestly, and it was the same as what Li Muzhi and the others told them.

With this, the truth was finally out.

Everyone learned that Chu Feng had achieved yet another significant deed in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, and that he was the one who saved all of the disciples there from the Cleansing.

It was truly ironic that Chu Feng was framed by the very same people whom he had saved.

Regardless of how the sectmaster viewed Chu Feng, at the very least, the elders and the disciples present couldn't help but feel deep respect for Chu Feng at this very moment. Of course, they also scorned the vile deeds of Zuoqiu Yanliang and the others.

"Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, am I still guilty now?" Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, even if you were framed here, you shouldn’t have killed your fellow peers,” Huyan Xiaotian shook his head and said.

It went without saying that he was referring to the personal disciples who had just died.

“Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, is there any evidence that I was the one who killed them?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, are you denying it now? Isn’t what you’ve mentioned earlier enough to prove your guilt?” Huyan Xiaotian questioned sternly.

“Pardon my disrespect, Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, but I believe that it’s wiser not to rely on circumstantial evidence. Take the earlier situation for example, if I had not scared the other disciples into revealing the truth, it could have very well spelled my death. To put it even more harshly, if anything had really happened to me, Lord Hidden Dragon Elder... you would have been an accomplice too.

“Can we really take a person’s words as evidence and indict them of a crime so easily? Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, the notion that I could use the Hellking’s power to kill anyone I like even outside of the Vicious Beast Hellworld is ludicrous. It’s beyond my imagination that anyone could possibly wield such great power,” Chu Feng said.

“You have a glib tongue. Nevertheless, what you said does make sense, and I don’t have any concrete evidence to prove that you were the one who killed those disciples. They were indeed reprehensible for attempting to frame you, but their crime doesn’t warrant death.

“Fine, I’ll turn a blind eye to the deaths that occurred here. As for the others, I’ll punish them accordingly and return you justice. However, you must promise me to let this matter go. I don’t know whether you still wield the power of the Hellking or not, but I don’t want to see anyone else losing their lives because of this. Is that understood?” Huyan Xiaotian said.

To be honest, he couldn’t tell whether Chu Feng was truly the culprit of those deaths or not even though all evidence was pointing toward him. In any case, he decided to placate Chu Feng for the time being lest that Zuoqiu Yanliang, Song Qian, and the others became victims to him too.

It would be a huge loss to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect if they were to lose four of their Hidden Dragon Disciples here.

“Lord Hidden Dragon Elder, please be assured that I have no interest in harming the innocent. Since they have already revealed the truth and acquitted me of the accusations, I shan’t pursue this matter anymore. Otherwise, Zuoqiu Yanliang wouldn’t be standing before me anymore,” Chu Feng said as he directed a sharp glance at Zuoqiu Yanliang.

It was then that the crowd realized that Zuoqiu Yanliang was still kneeling on the ground, not daring to raise his head at all.

“Disgraceful. All of you, follow me.”

Huyan Xiaotian led Zuoqiu Yanliang, Song Qian, and the others who framed Chu Feng out of the area. Once they were gone, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the others quickly rushed forward to Chu Feng’s side.

“Chu Feng, how are you feeling?”

While they were overjoyed to see that Chu Feng had managed to overcome this crisis, they were very worried about Chu Feng’s injuries.

At the same time, there were also some who tried to leave the area, such as Nangong Yuliu. As soon as he realized that the situation had turned awry, he immediately tried to flee from the area.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng had his eyes set on him.

“Nangong Yuliu, where do you think you are going? We have yet to finish our bet,” Chu Feng spoke aloud.

Chapter 4778: Song Xi’s Plight

Chapter 4778: Song Xi’s Plight

Nangong Yuliu’s heart jolted upon hearing those words. It was hard for him to keep his head up before Chu Feng after losing the bet, but his pride didn’t allow him to lower his head. He feigned composure and put on his usual high and lofty attitude.

“Chu Feng, I’m a man of my words. Zhao Shi is grounded at the moment, but I’ll pay her a visit and apologize to her once she’s out. You need not remind me of this matter,” Nangong Yuliu said.

“It’s good that you still remember that. However, I believe that our bet states that you’ll have to be slapped ten times by Senior Zhao too. If Senior Zhao is unwilling to do so, I’ll do it on her behalf,” Chu Feng said.

“You? What rights do you have to slap me on her behalf?” Nangong Yuliu bellowed with a frown.

“That’s simply how it is. I was the one who won the bet. Are you intending on reneging on the bet now? Remember, you were the one who proposed the bet in the first place. If you’re going to be a sore loser, just say so. I won’t stoop so low as to try to corner a terrified coward,” Chu Feng sneered.

This put Nangong Yuliu at a spot. There was no way he could bring himself to say that he was a sore loser before such a huge crowd.

“Nangong Yuliu, I’ve told you that I won’t pursue the matter even if I win the bet. All you have to do is to apologize to Senior Zhao, and whether she wants to slap you or not is up to her. Yet, you simply don’t know how to give it a rest. I’ve already given you a way out, but you still desperately try to bite down on me. You need to be given a taste of your medicine!” Chu Feng bellowed.

“How high and mighty you are, Chu Feng! Let me offer you some words of advice. You shouldn’t think that there’s no one who can curb you in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect just because you got lucky once or twice. In the end, you’re still no more than a disciple,” Nangong Yuliu said.

“Nangong Yuliu, allow me to return you with some words of advice too. Don’t try to test my patience too far, or else I’ll snap back at you no matter what it takes. I’m indeed just a mere disciple, but you aren’t the emperor either. Our grudge can stop with Zhao Shi’s slaps, but if you still want to continue coming after me, I’ll make you dearly regret your decision!” Chu Feng said.

“Hahahahaha...”

Nangong Yuliu burst into laughter upon hearing those words.

“You’ll make me dearly regret my decision? I would love to see you do it!”

Nangong Yuliu looked at Chu Feng with a contemptuous smirk on his lips, as if challenging him to his worst. Leaving those words behind, he rose into the air and left the area.

The rest of the crowd continued to loiter in the area despite Nangong Yuliu's departure. The chief elder and the others from the North Tortoise Hall anxiously rushed up to Chu Feng once to check if he had sustained any internal traumas.

However, there was one person who particularly stood out in the group because she was not from the North Tortoise Hall but the East Dragon Hall—Tu Yuanyuan.

“Senior Chu Feng, have you really managed to grasp the Hellking's powers?” Tu Yuanyuan asked.

“Indeed. The Hellking's power lingers within my body. If anyone dares to cross me, be it an elder or a disciple, I'll make sure that they drop dead before they even know what's going on.”

Chu Feng made sure to direct a sweeping glance at the surroundings as he said those words. His eyes were so chilling that even the elders felt shivers running down their spine.

“Chu Feng, what do you mean by that? Are you saying that you were able to kill those disciples not because of the Hellking's power you planted in their bodies but that... the Hellking's power is currently in your body and you can control it freely?” an elder from the East Dragon Hall asked.

The horrified expression on his face showed that he was not trying to provoke Chu Feng here, but that he was genuinely asking out of fright.

The death of the personal disciples was so inexplicable that it was doubtful that Huyan Xiaotian could have done anything even if he had known about it in advance. From that, it could be seen just how powerful the Hellking's means were.

If Chu Feng was able to freely tap into this strength, it would mean that he could easily kill anyone present except for the elders guarding the Hidden Dragon Prison.

This was indeed a huge issue.

“That elder over there, please watch your words. The deaths of those personal disciples have nothing to do with me. Of course, if anyone who crosses me in the future dies of inexplicable reasons in the future, I can only say that it’s a coincidence,” Chu Feng remarked with a smile.

There was no way he would be so foolish as to admit to killing those personal disciples, but such a response only served to further evoke the crowd’s fears.

There were many in the crowd who harbored doubts whether Chu Feng really wielded such great powers, but they weren’t willing to risk it. From now onward, anyone who wished to provoke Chu Feng would have to really think twice before making a move.

“Chu Feng, have you really managed to grasp the Hellking’s power?”

Yu Sha’s voice echoed in Chu Feng’s ears. She was surprised to hear that too.

“Silly girl, how could I have possibly grasped the Hellking’s power? I was indeed able to tap into it back at the Vicious Beast Hellworld, but the connection was severed once I left the area. To be honest with you, even though I planted the Hellking’s power in everyone back at the Vicious Beast Hellworld, I’m only able to kill ten of the personal disciples who had weaker souls,” Chu Feng said.

“And they are the ten who died earlier on?” Yu Sha asked.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng replied.

“What about Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian?” Yu Sha asked.

“The Hellking’s power indeed lurks within their bodies, but it’s not enough to take their lives. It’s only there to scare them,” Chu Feng said.

“You rascal!”

Yu Sha widened her eyes in realization.

It turned out that Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian survived not because Chu Feng didn’t want to kill them but he was unable to do it! Yet, he still managed to intimidate Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian by making them believe his lies.

Even the disciples and elders were convinced of his means.

“Oh right, why don’t I see Song Xi around?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

He had taken a look around earlier on, but Song Xi was nowhere to be found. There was a conflict between the two of them a while back, but they had already managed to clear the air. Based on his understanding of Song Xi, the latter was not the type to avoid him.

Astoundingly, everyone fell silent upon hearing the question.

Chu Feng immediately realized that something was amiss, so he quickly asked, “What happened to Song Xi?”

“Chu Feng, you must remain calm. This is not a matter which you can get involved in,” the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall said.

“Chief elder, hurry up and tell me what happened to Song Xi!” Chu Feng exclaimed.

...

The prison cells of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s Law Enforcement Hall were rather unusual. There were different cells for criminals of different sins.

Of them, Song Xi was caged inside one that was filled with thorns.

His neck, hands, and legs were tied with vines filled with crimson thorns, and he was hung in mid-air. His body was a complete mess of blood and flesh, a result of constant whipping.

“Song Xi!”

A person suddenly called out to him. It was no other than Chu Feng.

He stood by the entrance of Song Xi’s cell, accompanied by the chief elder. He had already learned of what had happened.

It turned out that Song Xi had committed the major crime of forcing himself on a female disciple, and for that, he was sentenced to the cell of thorns for ten days, and after which, he would be put to death!

“Chu Feng? Am I dreaming? Is it really you?”

Song Xi's consciousness was very faint, such that he couldn't tell whether he was seeing things or not.

"Song Xi, it's me. You don't need to worry about me, I'm fine. What happened to you? Were you framed? Who was it?" Chu Feng asked.

He felt that no matter how reckless or immature Song Xi was, there was no way he would do something as vile as forcing himself on a female disciple. There was no doubt in his mind that Song Xi was framed.

"I... I... Wuahhhhh!"

Looking at Chu Feng, Song Xi's lips began quivering in agitation before suddenly breaking out in tears. The indignance in his voice was clear for everyone to hear.

"Don't cry. Tell me what's going on!" Chu Feng said.

Song Xi continued to sob, his tears and snot flowing down ceaselessly. Nevertheless, he still managed to fill Chu Feng in on the series of events.

It turned out that Song Xi received an invitation from a female disciple from the East Dragon Hall named Li Jiaojiao to visit her palace. The two of them did end up having a one-night stand later on, and it was indeed a forced one.

However, it was not Song Xi who forced himself on Li Jiaojiao but the other way around.

Chapter 4779: Remorse

"Song Xi, are you really innocent? Why didn't you say so earlier?" the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall exclaimed.

He had previously questioned Song Xi on the matter, but the latter just wouldn't say anything.

"But Li Jiaojiao's cultivation is beneath yours. How could she possibly force you into a relationship with her?" the chief elder asked.

Song Xi didn't respond right away. He seemed to harbor some reservations about revealing the truth, but his indignance made him bawl even harder.

"Song Xi, tell me what happened. I'll redress your grievances," Chu Feng said.

Upon hearing those words, Song Xi raised his head and saw Chu Feng's steely and infuriated eyes. Feeling a boost of courage, he decided to reveal the truth.

"Nangong Yuliu was present too."

"Nangong Yuliu? It's actually him?!"

Chu Feng felt a surge of fury rising up his chest. It was just a moment ago that he warned Nangong Yuliu not to cross him, but the latter actually did such a thing!

Now that he thought about it, Nangong Yuliu had directed him with such gleeful eyes, but he thought that the other party was just provoking him. It turned out that he had already made a move on Song Xi!

"Chu Feng, there's no way to redress my grievances anymore. No one other than you will believe me. With Nangong Yuliu's influence, there's no way I'll be able to escape from his clutches.

"However, you must avenge me. You must make sure to do so! I... I'm no longer a man anymore. You must return the favor to him, or else I won't be able to die in peace!"

Song Xi cried even more pitifully as he used his martial power to take off his pants.

Both Chu Feng and the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall were stunned by what they were seeing. Song Xi's manhood was actually severed!

"How could this be? Men, men! The cell of thorns should only involve whipping, so how could Song Xi be humiliated in such a manner?" the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall bellowed.

However, Song Xi shook his head and said, "It's not them. It's Nangong Yuliu. He came by earlier."

"What are you crying out for?"

The elders of the Law Enforcement Hall heard the chief elder's bellows and came over.

“You came at a good time. How do you do your job? How could you allow an outsider to inflict harm on your prisoners?” the chief elder questioned furiously.

However, the chief elders of the Law Enforcement Hall simply sneered coldly and said, “Oh? I’m afraid that we aren’t aware of that matter. Besides, you should be going for the person who harmed the prisoner, not us. What’s the point of complaining to us? You’re the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, so don’t you at least have the power to bring justice for your own disciples?”

“If you know that I’m the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, how dare you speak to me in such a manner?” the chief elder bellowed.

“Woah, what airs from the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall! I can tell candidly that you were allowed in here not because of your identity but that our hall master has ordered us to allow Chu Feng to enter the premises. You’re nothing more than an extra here,” an elder of the Law Enforcement Hall said.

“You!!!”

The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall gritted his teeth furiously. He didn’t dare to make a move on these elders not because he was afraid of them but he was worried about crossing the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Chief elder, let’s go,” Chu Feng said as he began taking his leave.

The chief elder quickly walked out too.

“Chu Feng, we have no evidence for this matter, so we won’t be able to go after Nangong Yuliu for this,” the chief elder said.

“I understand. The sectmaster has just sentenced me into the Hidden Dragon Prison, and her decision reflects the will of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It’s clear that I, Chu Feng, am a person detested by the sectmaster and the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

“On the other hand, Nangong Yuliu is a personal disciple whose grandmother is the great Nangong Chunyue, a Hidden Dragon Elder. He’s a person blessed from birth.

“Don’t worry, chief elder. I know my current position very well,” Chu Feng said with a bitter smile.

It looked as if he had come to a difficult compromise here.

After saying those words, he headed back to his residence under the escort of the chief elder. The chief elder could feel Chu Feng’s rage and helplessness, and he cursed his own powerlessness once more.

As the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, he should have been the one to stand up for Chu Feng and Song Xi, but he was unable to do so. He possessed neither the capability nor the courage for that.

...

Nightfall, in a grand palace in the East Dragon Hall, Nangong Yuliu was accompanied by many courtesans as they drank and made merry. These courtesans were dressed skimpily, but Nangong Yuliu wasn’t any better either.

It was an utter sight of debauchery. **nove/lb(In**

All of a sudden, the doors opened and a woman ran in. This woman had a seductive face and a voluptuous figure.

Nangong Yuliu would have surely threw a tantrum if anyone were to barge in while he was having fun, but when he noticed that it was this woman, he shot a glance at the courtesans around, and the courtesans quickly took their leave.

He rose to his feet and walked toward the woman.

“Jiaojiao, what brings you here?”

It turned out that the woman was no other than Li Jiaojiao, one of the culprits who landed Song Xi in his current state.

“Senior Nangong, I’m afraid. I heard that Chu Feng is still alive, and he wields the power of the Hellking from the Vicious Beast Hellworld,” Li Jiaojiao cried.

“Jiaojiao, how could you believe such rumors? It’s nothing more than an act of bravado from Chu Feng. There’s no need to pay any heed!” Nangong Yuliu replied with a disdainful smirk.

“But I heard that Chu Feng is a brazen man. If he finds out that it was Senior Nangong and I who have harmed Song Xi, he surely wouldn’t let us off!” Li Jiaojiao exclaimed worriedly.

“Jiaojiao, you’re my woman. You need not fear. No one will dare to bully you as long as you remain under my protection!” Nangong Yuliu said.

“B-but I’m still afraid. I won’t be a match for Chu Feng with my weak cultivation,” Li Jiaojiao cried.

“Don’t worry, Chu Feng doesn’t have long to live either,” Nangong Yuliu said.

“I-is that true, Senior Nangong?” Li Jiaojiao asked.

“When have I ever lied to you? I can tell you directly that other than Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang, there’s no disciple in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect whom I fear! Even Li Muzhi will soon be done in by me!” Nangong Yuliu said.

“You’re incredible, Senior Nangong,” Li Jiaojiao said.

“Of course! Shouldn’t you know better than anyone else as someone who has tasted my prowess? Heh, looks like you must have forgotten all about it. It’s time to jog your memory then!”

Nangong Yuliu took off his clothes in a flash before reaching forth to pull Li Jiaojiao into his embrace.

“Don’t move.”

However, Li Jiaojiao suddenly retreated. She flicked her wrist, and an orb appeared on her palm. This orb had a mirrorlike surface, reflecting Nangong Yuliu and the licentious look on his face.

Even Nangong Yuliu couldn’t bear looking at the current him that he immediately put his clothes back on. Perplexed, he asked, “Jiaojiao, what are you doing?”

“Jiaojiao? I’m afraid you might have gotten the wrong person here.”

Li Jiaojiao first stowed away the orb in her hand before taking out her Cosmos Sack. She reached her hand into it and pulled out a massive figure that landed right beside Nangong Yuliu.

It was a woman who had bloodied lacerations all over her body, seemingly having been struck again and again by a thorn whip. Despite her disfigurement, Nangong Yuliu was still able to identify her as Li Jiaojiao.

“Senior Nangong, save me.”

The real Li Jiaojiao moaned feebly as she began weeping pitifully.

Nangong Yuliu immediately turned his eyes toward the other ‘Li Jiaojiao’ and he questioned coldly, “You aren’t Li Jiaojiao. Who are you?”

“Nangong Yuliu, I warned you not to provoke me, or else I’ll make you pay dearly for it.”

The face of the fake ‘Li Jiaojiao’ grew increasingly cold as her appearance and clothes began to morph into someone who Nangong Yuliu was more than familiar with.

“Chu Feng, it’s you?!?!”

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4780: A Fate Worse Than Him - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4780: A Fate Worse Than Him

Chapter 4780: A Fate Worse Than Him

“Now that you know it’s me, you should be prepared for your death!” Chu Feng spat coldly as he directed a murderous look toward Nangong Yuliu.

“Hahahaha! Chu Feng, I’ve underestimated you. I never thought that you would resort to such means to make me reveal the truth about Song Xi! But what a pity it is that you have overestimated yourself. So what if you’ve found out about the truth?”

Shoosh!

Nangong Yuliu scrunched his fingers in the shape of an eagle talon as he swiped straight for Chu Feng’s throat.

His movements were far swifter than that of any rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator, for his body was shrouded by a green flame that seemed to be manifesting in the shape of a ferocious lion. It was a Divine Power!

There was a world of a difference between Utmost Exalted level and Martial Exalted level. Even if a pinnacle Utmost Exalted level cultivator were to use means to raise his cultivation, he would still be unable to bridge the gap with a Martial Exalted level cultivator.

That being said, Nangong Yuliu's Divine Power still greatly increased his fighting prowess.

He knew that Chu Feng, despite only being at rank seven Utmost Exalted level, possessed the means to raise his cultivation up to rank nine Utmost Exalted level. So, he chose to use his Divine Power straight away so that he could subdue Chu Feng with ease.

The moment that Nangong Yuliu made his move, Chu Feng began manifesting his Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor.

“Hmph!”

However, Nangong Yuliu simply smirked in response. No matter what Chu Feng did here, it was all futile. His strength had already surpassed that of any rank nine Utmost Exalted level cultivator, so he was confident that there was nothing Chu Feng could do to avoid his attack.

Pah!

But just as his talons were about to sever Chu Feng's throat, a hand suddenly grabbed his wrist and stopped his attack in place.

Chu Feng was actually able to stop his lightning-fast attack with ease!

“You...”

Nangong Yuliu was horrified.

The moment Chu Feng made his move, Nangong Yuliu realized that Chu Feng's base cultivation was not at rank seven Utmost Exalted level but rank nine. Coupled with his Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor, he found that he wasn't a match for the current Chu Feng!

Realizing that the situation had gone awry, Nangong Yuliu decisively chose to use other means to further enhance his fighting prowess.

Kacha!

However, Chu Feng had no intention of allowing him any respite. He exerted immense force down on Nangong Yuliu's wrist, crushing it into bits. At the same time, his other hand darted forth to stab into Nangong Yuliu's body like a dagger.

Pu!

Blood spurted from Nangong Yuliu's body as Chu Feng's hand plunged in and out of Nangong Yuliu's body.

It was such a horrifying sight that Li Jiaojiao couldn't help but shriek in utter fright.

In her years in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, this was the first time she had seen anyone daring to treat Nangong Yuliu in such a manner.

"Don't kill me, Chu Feng. Don't kill me... If you kill me, my grandmother will never let you off!"

Realizing that he might really die at this rate, Nangong Yuliu immediately begged for mercy.

However, Chu Feng paid him no heed as his hand darted toward Nangong Yuliu once more mercilessly. This time, it was aimed at his head. He didn't pop Nangong Yuliu's head, but the immense might behind his blow knocked out the latter.

Following that, Chu Feng shot a demonlike glare toward Li Jiaojiao. Under his overwhelming oppressive might, Li Jiaojiao fell unconscious too.

...

Nangong Yuliu woke up to a sharp pain. His eyes shot open as he quickly scanned his surroundings, only to find that he was still in his residence.

A shuddering Li Jiaojiao was seated next to him.

Chu Feng was present too, but he was sitting in the main seat in the room.

Nangong Yuliu swiftly recalled what had happened and shivered in fright. He had no idea why Chu Feng would knock him out, but he had a bad feeling about this.

His grandmother wasn't in the residence today, so he could only count on himself if he wanted to survive.

"Chu Feng, d-don't kill me. Give me a chance. I'll never dare to challenge you anymore," Nangong Yuliu cried.

"So, why did you target Song Xi?" Chu Feng asked.

"I-I was foolish! I knew that Song Xi was close to you, so I wanted him to suffer too. That's why I got Li Jiaojiao to seduce him!" Nangong Yuliu replied anxiously.

"Li Jiaojiao, tell me what happened that day," Chu Feng ordered.

Li Jiaojiao had already been put in place after the torturous suffering she went through under Chu Feng's hands, such that she dared not to hesitate at all. She quickly recounted the chain of events without daring to hide anything at all.

"Nangong Yuliu, is what Li Jiaojiao said true?" Chu Feng asked.

"Y-yes, it's all true! Junior Chu Feng, I let my hatred get ahead of myself. I'm worse than a beast. I shouldn't have envied your talents!

"B-but... isn't Junior Song Xi still alive? I can save him! I'll figure out a way to treat him! S-so, just give me a chance!" Nangong Yuliu exclaimed.

However, Chu Feng ignored his words and instead rose to his feet.

"Chief elder, elders, and fellow disciples of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, you have heard their words. Do you understand now that Song Xi has been framed?"

Nangong Yuliu and Li Jiaojiao immediately turned to where Chu Feng was looking at, but there was no one there at all. The next moment, however, the entire residence suddenly began to distort.

Everything dissipated with a wisp of smoke, dispelling the illusion.

Nangong Yuliu was stunned. He realized that he wasn't in his residence at all. Rather, he was sitting in the middle of a square, surrounded by countless elders and disciples. A huge portion of them was from the North Tortoise Hall, but there were people from the other three halls too.

"Y-you're despicable, Chu Feng! You schemed this!" Nangong Yuliu bellowed furiously.

He realized that he had been duped. It finally dawned on him why Chu Feng had chosen to knock him out instead of killing him outright.

Chu Feng had made use of the time that he was unconscious to bring him to this location before swiftly setting up a formation to disguise this place as his residence. This was all in order to make him lower his guard so that he would confess to his crimes before the crowd.

"Chu Feng actually managed to redress Song Xi's grievances!"

The elders and the disciples present were amazed by Chu Feng's feat, especially the elders of the North Tortoise Hall.

When they received a request from Chu Feng to bring as many people over as possible, they quickly called everyone they knew and rushed over. The first thing they noticed upon arriving was Chu Feng's bloodied hands, followed by the formation constructed in the center of the square.

In the first place, they were standing at the center region of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect which boasted the greatest crowd density, and Chu Feng's bloodied hands were simply too eye-catching to ignore. As a result, news swiftly spread and more and more people began gathering around the area.

However, Chu Feng didn't choose to drag things out and wait for more people to arrive. He knew that time wasn't on his side, and he had to get things done fast.

As soon as the chief elder arrived, he told the latter that he wanted to acquit Song Xi of his crimes and asked the crowd to testify on his behalf.

Initially, the crowd was still perplexed as to why Chu Feng would construct such an illusion formation in the middle of the square. The illusion formation was one-sided, meaning that only those standing within the formation would

be affected by the illusion. The crowd outside would only see a transparent barrier, allowing them to see and hear what was going on inside clearly.

Their questions were soon answered as Chu Feng pulled Nangong Yuliu and Li Jiaojiao out from a Cosmos Sack. He first shook Li Jiaojiao awake, followed by Nangong Yuliu.

All of this resulted in the earlier scene.

All it took was a question from Chu Feng to get Nangong Yuliu and Li Jiaojiao to confess.

Everyone knew that Nangong Yuliu and Li Jiaojiao had fallen for Chu Feng's ploy. They had no idea that everything they were saying was being heard by the crowd, and it was all too late by the time they noticed it.

"As you can see, Song Xi was framed. I need all of you to testify for Song Xi so as to acquit him."

Chu Feng stood up and bowed to the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the others. The chief elder nodded firmly in response.

No matter how weak the chief elder was, he knew that he had to step up right now. Chu Feng had already gone to the extent of delivering the evidence to his footstep, and if he were to still coward out right now, he would truly be unworthy of his position.

Shoosh!

However, a shocking sight happened right after.

Chu Feng raised his hand and struck Nangong Yuliu's head.

"Chu Feng, you..."

Everything happened so quickly that the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall didn't even have time to react. By the time realization struck them, it was already all too late. Nangong Yuliu's head had been smashed into bits.

"Chu Feng, that's too reckless!"

The chief elder was completely flustered to see that Chu Feng had killed Nangong Yuliu. However, Chu Feng calmly pointed at Nangong Yuliu's corpse before directing a sweeping gaze at the crowd.

"I, Chu Feng, have never provoked anyone ever since entering the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but time and time again, there are people who simply want to trample all over me. I'm willing to tolerate it once or twice on the grounds that we're all fellow disciples of the same sect, but there are always those who know not of remorse and come after me again and again, unwilling to give it a rest until I'm finally dead.

"What I want to say is that you should never take my kindness for granted. If you wish to come after my life, you should be prepared for a fate that's worse than Nangong Yuliu's."

Chapter 4781: The Infuriated Grandmother

The crowd was horrified not by Chu Feng's words but by his deed. By this point, there were few who were in a mood to listen to his words anymore.

Their minds were dominated by the knowledge that Chu Feng had killed Nangong Yuliu, the beloved grandson of Hidden Dragon Elder Nangong Chunyue.

"Chu Feng, even if Nangong Yuliu has framed Song Xi, his crime doesn't warrant death. How could you kill him just like that?" an elder from the East Dragon Hall cried out.

It was hard to tell whether he really thought that way or that he was making use of this opportunity to fawn on Nangong Chunyue, but he stood forward with a righteous look on his face, determined to punish Chu Feng for his actions.

"If Song Xi's grievances weren't redressed, he would be sentenced to death ten days after undergoing the torture of whips. Are you telling me that Song Xi's life means nothing at all?" Chu Feng asked.

"Even if Song Xi was framed, that is a matter between the two of them. Even if Nangong Yuliu was guilty, he ought to be punished by the Law Enforcement Hall. What rights do you have to kill him?"

More and more elders from the East Dragon Hall stood forward to chastise Chu Feng.

Chu Feng flicked his wrist and took out the orb that recorded Nangong Yuliu's true face, be it his ugliness, arrogance, or his attempt to kill Chu Feng. However, he tightened his grip and crushed it into bits.

He didn't want to bother arguing with those elders since he knew that it would be meaningless. Instead, he said, "Yes, I've killed Nangong Yuliu. What are you going to do about it? If you have an objection to that, come here and kill me then."

Chu Feng's attitude was so domineering that it left the elders of the East Dragon Hall maddened.

"You!!!"

But as infuriated as those elders were, they were also intimidated by his attitude.

Ever since Chu Feng had been sentenced to the Hidden Dragon Prison, he suddenly became incredibly imposing, be it him getting Zuoqiu Yanliang, Song Qian, and the others to kneel before him and admit to their mistakes or killing off Nangong Yuliu. nDvE)Lb/In

They suddenly recalled Chu Feng's claim that he was in control of the Hellking's power. If that was really true, they would have no choice but to take a step back in view of their safety.

Even if they wanted to please Nangong Chunyue, they had to weigh whether it was really worth doing it now.

"Li Jiaojiao, Song Xi will be the one to decide your fate."

Chu Feng shot Li Jiaojiao a glance before rising into the air and returning back to his residence in the North Tortoise Hall.

Seeing this, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall and the others quickly followed him.

“Chief elder, there’s no need to say anything else. I’ve killed Nangong Yuliu, and there’s no way to undo that anymore,” Chu Feng spoke up before the chief elder could say anything.

“Chu Feng, you... Haaa, you must not know just how much Nangong Chunyue dotes on Nangong Yuliu. I know of a passageway that’ll allow you to leave the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. You should leave and never come back,” the chief elder said.

“If I leave right now, you’ll be the one to suffer Nangong Chunyue’s fury,” Chu Feng pointed out.

“It’s my incompetence that put you through indignance after indignance. My conscience doesn’t allow you to die here in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. I’ll never allow that to happen!” the chief elder declared.

“I’m deeply grateful for your sentiments, chief elder, but I can’t leave just yet. There are still things I need to do here,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, this is not the time to be obstinate. Even if you want to...”

The chief elder still wanted to persuade Chu Feng, but before he could finish his piece, Chu Feng had already interjected right in.

“Chief elder, I didn’t kill Nangong Yuliu out of recklessness. I did it because I don’t fear Nangong Chunyue. You need not persuade me anymore. My mind is already made up.”

Looking at the determined look on Chu Feng’s face, the chief elder knew that it would be impossible for him to convince him, so he chose to simply escort Chu Feng back to his residence for now.

“What’s that?”

But before they could come close to Chu Feng’s residence, they were met with a massive plaque that towered over thirty thousand meters high. On it were the words: Those who dare to touch Chu Feng will die!

Everyone quickly hastened their movements, and they eventually found that the plaque was erected right in front of Chu Feng’s residence.

Something as huge as that naturally drew attention, so quite a few people from the North Tortoise Hall were already gathered in the area.

“Who is behind this?” the chief elder asked the elders who were already present on the scene.

“I’m not sure. It suddenly appeared out of nowhere half an incense’s time ago,” one of the elders replied.

“Chu Feng?”

The crowd turned to look at Chu Feng inquisitively.

“I was not the one behind it. I wouldn’t use this kind of method to intimidate others.”

Chu Feng was also perplexed by the appearance of this plaque. Honestly, he thought that the chief elder was behind this the first time he saw it, but the latter’s attitude made it clear that it had nothing to do with him.

“Who could it be then?” the chief elder murmured with a tight frown.

“It seems like someone in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect hopes for my survival. No matter who he is, I’m thankful to him for his sentiments. Chief elder, you should head back now. I’d like to take a rest.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng began making his way into his residence.

“Chu Feng, I’ll rip you into shreds!”

But at this very moment, a deafening roar echoed across the sky in the form of a devastating sonic boom that ravaged everything in its path.

Countless buildings in the North Tortoise Hall were torn to shreds, and many elders and disciples sustained severe injuries as a result of that. Some of the weaker disciples even began bleeding from their seven apertures as their souls popped from the pressure.

It was a mere roar, but it had already caused great casualties in the North Tortoise Hall.

“It’s Nangong Chunyue. She’s here!”

The surviving elders and disciples quickly darted off in all directions, attempting to escape from the calamity. The crowd that was gathered outside Chu Feng's house immediately dispersed, leaving behind quite the chief elder and a few others.

They were all escaping while they could. They knew that they wouldn't be able to withstand Nangong Chunyue's fury if they were to stay here.

Chapter 4782: Shocking the Crowd

"You all should leave too," the chief elder looked at the other elders behind him and said.

"Chief elder, there's no way to protect Chu Feng anymore."

The other elders tried to dissuade the chief elder from his decision.

They remained in the area not because they wanted to stand against Nangong Chunyue but that they didn't want to turn their backs on the chief elder. However, they knew deep well that their presence here served no meaning at all.

"I know we won't be able to stop Nangong Chunyue, but I am the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall. It's my job to protect the disciples and ensure that they are entitled to fair treatment. It's about time for me to fulfill my responsibility.

"It's the blessing of our North Tortoise Hall to have a prodigy like Chu Feng, and I promised him that I would ensure his safety. Yet, he had to overcome all sorts of trials along the way all by himself. I wasn't able to offer him any help at all, and I'm deeply ashamed by my powerlessness.

"He's currently facing his greatest crisis thus far. I won't be able to live with myself if I abandon him at this juncture."

As the chief elder said those words, he took out a token with the words 'North Tortoise' inscribed on it and pressed it to his chest.

"Chief elder!"

The elders of the North Tortoise Hall were astonished to see the token. They knew the significance of his action.

“Hurry up and leave. You have to live to hold the North Tortoise Hall together if I were to lose my life here today,” the chief elder said with a wave of his hand.

The elders knew that the chief elder had already made up his mind when they saw the token, so they quickly rose to their feet and left the area.

“Activate formation!”

With the token in hand, the chief elder began forming a series of hand seals.

Boom!

The ground beneath the North Tortoise Hall began trembling intensely as brilliant light shone from the earth. A massive formation was rising from underground, forming and contracting at a rapid pace...

Eventually, the massive formation contracted to a very small area that encompassed only Chu Feng’s residence.

This was a powerful defensive formation, but the chief elder looked as if he had aged decades immediately after activating the formation.

“Chief elder, you are...?”

Chu Feng’s eyes glistened. He knew that this formation was formidable, and that the chief elder’s rapid aging was the price he was paying in order to activate this formation.

“Chu Feng, since you refuse to live, I shall face this crisis together with you!”

Despite the aged look of the chief elder, he looked at Chu Feng with benevolent eyes.

“Chief elder, there’s no need for you to do this. I have a countermeasure against Nangong Chunyue,” Chu Feng replied.

“Even if you do have a countermeasure, I’m still determined to do everything I can to stop her. If Nangong Chunyue wants to take your life today, she’ll have to step across my dead body!” the chief elder bellowed.

“What arrogant words!”

A piercing voice echoed from the distance as a person flitted over at an incredible speed. It didn't take her long to arrive right outside Chu Feng's residence.

She was no other than Nangong Yuliu's grandmother, Hidden Dragon Elder Nangong Chunyue!

"The North Tortoise Defensive Formation? Chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall, does this mean that you're intending to side with Chu Feng here?" Nangong Chunyue questioned coldly.

"Chu Feng is a disciple of our North Tortoise Hall. I am obliged to..."

Nangong Chunyue impatiently cut off the chief elder's words and hollered, "Cut the crap and get straight to the point. Are you intending to interfere in this matter or not?"

The chief elder's body shuddered instinctively out of fear. How could he possibly not fear someone as powerful as Nangong Chunyue?

However, after taking a deep breath to calm himself, he nodded affirmatively in response.

"Since you're courting death, I'll fulfill your wish!"

Nangong Chunyue raised her hand and summoned a dense congregation of martial power to strike down on the residence where Chu Feng and the chief elder were in like a ferocious beast.

It was a powerful strike, the North Tortoise Defensive Formation managed to hold its ground. However, the corner of the chief elder's lips began to seep blood as his complexion grew more and more awful. Soon, his nose started bleeding, followed by his ears and eyes too.

"Elder Nangong, stop what you're doing. The chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall is weaker in terms of cultivation. He'll die if you continue bombarding the formation."

Three new figures suddenly appeared in the vicinity. Just like Nangong Chunyue, they were Hidden Dragon Elders too.

Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xiaotian.

“Don’t try to stop me. I’ll take the life of anyone who dares stand in my way today!”

However, Nangong Chunyue ignored their words and continued striking down on the formation.

Faced with the frenzied Nangong Chunyue, Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xiaotian looked at one another, but none of them stood forward to stop her. They knew just how much Nangong Chunyue treasured Nangong Yuliu, such that it could be said to be her ‘reverse scale’.

Given that Chu Feng had killed Nangong Yuliu, there was no doubt that Nangong Chunyue would avenge him even if she had to put her life on the line. At this point, it wouldn’t be an over exaggeration to call Nangong Chunyue a mad dog.

It would be unwise to get on her bad side at a time like this.

Not to mention, the sectmaster had told them to maintain friendly relations as far as they could during this period of time, so they dared not to make a move here recklessly.

They looked at Chu Feng with a mixture of helplessness, sympathy, and reproach.

They sympathized with Chu Feng for crossing such a Nangong Chunyue while blaming him for being so reckless as to kill Nangong Yuliu.

Under Nangong Chunyue’s furious assault, the chief elder’s skin began breaking apart. At this rate, he might really just explode and lose his life.

“Nangong Chunyue, I was the one who killed your grandson. Come for me instead!”

Chu Feng didn’t want the chief elder to die for his stead, so he decided to step out of his residence and the area of protection of the North Tortoise Defensive Formation so as to draw Nangong Chunyue’s attention.

However, as soon as he took a step away, a forceful power suddenly shrouded around his body and held him in place. The next moment, he was brought right to the chief elder’s side.

The chief elder was forcefully restricting Chu Feng's movements.

"Chu Feng, no one will harm you as long as I'm around!"

The chief elder's face was filled with blood, such that it was hard to perceive his facial features anymore. Yet, his eyes still remained as determined as ever.

His sentiments left Chu Feng deeply moved.

"Chief elder, I really do have..."

Chu Feng wanted to say something, but once again, before he could finish his sentence, another voice suddenly boomed from elsewhere.

"Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xiaotian, it's your responsibility as Hidden Dragon Elders to protect the sect. Yet, you stood idly as another person took away the lives of innocent disciples right before your eyes. Is this how the Hidden Dragon Elders of our sect should conduct themselves?"

A person came into appearance along with the booming voice, just that the familiar face left everyone present astonished.

As it turned out, that person was no one significant. On the contrary, he was a person who was looked down on by the disciples and elders.

He was no other than Chu Feng's brother, Duan Liufeng.

"Duan Liufeng, how dare you speak to the three Hidden Dragon Elders in such a manner?"

Before the three Hidden Dragon Elders could even speak, the spectating elders had already begun to criticize Duan Liufeng.

However, Duan Liufeng didn't pay them any heed. He leisurely walked toward Chu Feng's residence, but his sharp eyes remained focused on the four Hidden Dragon Elders in the sky.

"Personal Disciple Nangong Yuliu has framed 33 of his fellow disciples and murdered 203 of them. Of them, 150 are female disciples. They rejected Nangong Yuliu when he approached them for a fling, so he forced himself on them before killing them.

“These are all concrete evidence of Nangong Yuliu’s crime, so you’re free to take a look at it. Nangong Yuliu would have been put through an even more horrendous fate even if Chu Feng hadn’t killed him..”

Duan Liufeng tossed a Cosmos Sack into the air as he spoke.

Li Fengxian caught the sack and opened it to take a look, and there were indeed many articles of evidence of Nangong Yuliu’s crimes in there. He didn’t expect Duan Liufeng to have collated such comprehensive evidence of Nangong Yuliu’s misdeeds.

“Nangong Yuliu is a poisonous tumor to our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and the only reason why he’s able to live to this day is out of consideration of Nangong Chunyue.

“Nangong Chunyue, as a Hidden Dragon Elder, you share blame for your grandson’s crimes. You ought to be repenting over your failure to keep your own family members in check, yet you dare to march here and harm the innocent. Your actions are completely reprehensible and deserving of death.

“In view that you’re a Hidden Dragon Elder, I shan’t punish you and leave your sentencing to the sectmaster. However, if you continue acting obstinately, these words would be your outcome.”

Duan Liufeng gestured to the massive plaque erected in front of Chu Feng’s residence as he spoke.

“Duan Liufeng, you were the one who erected the plaque?”

Someone amidst the crowd asked.

“Indeed,” Duan Liufeng replied.

“This is insane. What’s becoming of this world?”

The crowd was rendered speechless. In truth, there were many people who were aware of the foul mess that was going on in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but cleaning it up was no easy task.

Even if Duan Liufeng had brought out concrete evidence, someone of his standing couldn’t hope to stand against Nangong Chunyue. It was as if a mere ant trying to stop a massive war chariot.

“Brother Chu, don’t worry. I’ll be shielding you today.”

Ignoring the crowd, Duan Liufeng turned around and directed a reassuring smile in Chu Feng’s direction.

Boom!

A powerful might suddenly gushed in Duan Liufeng’s direction.

Nangong Chunyue had made her move. Not even bothering with words, she struck her palm out at Duan Liufeng, intending to blast him into smithereens. The palm strike harnessed such immense prowess that even space collapsed in its face. Duan Liufeng vanished in the face of this attack. *novE-lb*-In

But just when everyone thought that he was dead, a voice suddenly sounded from above, “Nangong Chunyue, you’re asking for it.”

The crowd turned their gazes toward the source of the voice and gasped in astonishment.

Duan Liufeng was actually standing right next to Nangong Chunyue completely unharmed. He wielded a dagger in his hand, and it was directed right at Nangong Chunyue’s dantian.

It was utterly bewildering how someone as weak as Duan Liufeng could survive Nangong Chunyue’s attack and even sneak up to her.

“Scram!”

The infuriated Nangong Chunyue couldn’t be bothered to think about such logic. With a furious roar, she exerted her oppressive might on Duan Liufeng. The force was much greater than her earlier strike, such that it sent the three Hidden Dragon Elders standing by the side retreating.

But shockingly, her powerful oppressive might couldn’t push away the closest Duan Liufeng. No matter how she tried, she was unable to faze him.

A vicious glint flashed across Duan Liufeng’s eyes as he slowly pushed his dagger in.

Puchi!

Blood splattered all around as the dagger plunged into Nangong Chunyue's dantian.

"This!!!"

This sight shocked everyone, including Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xiaoting. They were horrified by what they saw.

One must know that Nangong Chunyue ranked amongst the forefront of the Hidden Dragon Elders, and that was why none of them were willing to interfere when she was going on a rampage. Yet, she was actually harmed by Duan Liufeng?

Not to mention, he was able to do it with such astounding ease!

Chapter 4783: Hidden Dragon Chief

"You!!!"

Nangong Chunyue stared at Duan Liufeng as the fury in her eyes turned into horror. She realized that she was completely helpless before him, which meant that his cultivation was far above hers.

"Elder Duan, please show mercy. Nangong Chunyue is a Hidden Dragon Elder. You mustn't kill her! You won't be able to escape death if you were to take her life!" Xia Zhicheng cried out.

In truth, they were also well aware of Nangong Yuliu's actions.

Putting aside Nangong Yuliu, just Nangong Chunyue's rampage today was more than enough to put her to death going by the rules of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

So why were they still leaving her alive?

That was because her tremendous strength was a great asset to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It was for that reason that the sectmaster turned a blind eye to her deeds.

Duan Liufeng might be powerful, but he wouldn't be able to escape punishment if he were to really kill Nangong Chunyue.

“I won’t be able to escape death? Very well, let’s see who dares to take my life then!”

With a disdainful look on his face, Duan Liufeng flicked his wrist and took out a token.

“That is!!!”

Even the Hidden Dragon Elders were shocked by the revelation of the token. It was the token of the Hidden Dragon Elders, just that Duan Liufeng’s one had a slightly different appearance. On top of the ‘Hidden Dragon Elder’, there was an additional ‘Chief’ word on it.

The crowd came to a realization upon seeing the token.

It was finally making sense why Duan Liufeng wielded such great strength.

There were ten Hidden Dragon Elders in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but the strongest one of them was granted a special token, and his standing and influence far exceeded the others too.

The Hidden Dragon Chief was a mysterious existence in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. No one except for the sectmaster knew of his true identity.

It was only when the sect was faced with difficult problems that he would make an appearance, but he would always be able to easily solve the issues that the other Hidden Dragon Elders stumbled at.

Naturally, Li Fengxian and the others had met the Hidden Dragon Chief before, but they, too, didn’t know of his true identity.

They thought that he was one of the more low profile elders in the sect, but who could have thought that he would actually be no other than Duan Liufeng?

“Aren’t you going to pay your greetings after seeing the token?”

Duan Liufeng shot a sweeping glance at the trio as he spoke authoritatively.

“Paying respects to the Hidden Dragon Chief!!!”

Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xioatian quickly bowed deeply.

They might be Hidden Dragon Elders, but they had to show their due respects to the Hidden Dragon Chief.

Seeing this, the rest of the crowd quickly bowed deeply. The disciples even went to the extent to kneel down and kowtow as a symbol of deep respect.

“Chu Feng, hurry up and kneel down.”

By this point, the chief elder of the North Tortoise Hall had already retracted his defensive formation and was currently bowing deeply to Duan Liufeng. When he noticed that Chu Feng was still standing upright, he quickly nudged the latter and urged him to show his respects too.

“Chu Feng is my younger brother. There’s no need for him to kneel to me,” Duan Liufeng said before directing his gaze back at the crowd.

“I know what you’re thinking. This situation must be unbelievable and hard to accept for you. You’re probably wondering how a trash whose cultivation has been regressing could possibly become the Hidden Dragon Chief. I reckon that some of you are afraid that I would exact vengeance on you too.

“Those who have been disrespectful to me thus far, there’s no need for you to worry. You wouldn’t have lived to this day if I truly intended to settle the score.

“That being said, I should make it clear that Chu Feng is my younger brother. I can still consider forgiving you for any offense against me. You can also scheme and fight all you want amongst yourself, and I won’t even bat an eyelid. However, if anyone dares to touch Chu Feng, don’t expect me to let you off!”

As Duan Liufeng made the declaration, he pushed his dagger along with his hand through Nangong Chunyue’s dantian.

Gah!

Nangong Chunyue wailed from the excruciating pain. Her terrifying appearance from earlier on vanished without a trace, replaced with a strained pale face.

Her warped face was enough to show just what kind of inhuman torture she was being put through at the moment. Duan Liufeng had done much more than just crippling her dantian.

“Elder Duan, this is enough.”

Another voice suddenly sounded as a skinny white-haired elder with benevolent eyes appeared on the scene. His hair and eyebrows were snowy-white, and he emanated a graceful air reminiscent of an immortal.

In truth, this elder was of extremely high standing in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect too.

“Paying respects to vice sectmaster!”

Everyone quickly paid respect to the elder. He was Zuoqiu Yanliang and Zuoqiu Youyu’s grandfather, but he was better known as the vice sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

What was worth noting was that Duan Liufeng didn’t lower his head. Despite so, the vice sectmaster didn’t lose his temper. Instead, he began persuading Duan Liufeng earnestly.

“Elder Duan, I can understand your anger. In truth, I have been here for a while now, and even if you didn’t make a move, I wouldn’t have allowed Elder Nangong to harm Chu Feng either. I also turned a blind eye to your aggression toward Elder Nangong so that you could vent your anger. However, there’s a limit to how far you should go.

“Even if Elder Nangong has done wrong here, her contribution toward the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is still inerasable. Neither you nor me have the right to punish her. This is a matter for the sectmaster to decide on,” the vice sectmaster said.

“Since the vice sectmaster has already said so, it’s only right for me to do as you have said. Nangong Chunyue, heed my words. If you dare to touch Chu Feng ever again, no one will be able to save you, not even the sectmaster.”

Leaving behind this threat, Duan Liufeng threw Nangong Chunyue toward the vice sectmaster casually, as if he was tossing aside an object. The vice sectmaster caught Nangong Chunyue before quickly heading off.

As for Duan Liufeng, he descended to the ground and headed straight toward Chu Feng’s residence.

“Not bad, you’ve finally manned up for once.”

Duan Liufeng shot a glance at the chief elder before casually tossing a pill over.

“Thank you for your compliment, Hidden Dragon Chief!”

The chief elder was both anxious and delighted, perhaps a little apprehensive even. However, there were those who were much more fearful than he was.

There were many people in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect who looked down on Duan Liufeng and bullied him. Even though Duan Liufeng had said that he wouldn't exact vengeance on them, it was still frightening for them to know that they had offended a behemoth that could crush them anytime he wanted.

How could they possibly not be afraid?

As for Chu Feng, there was only sheer happiness on his face.

“It looks like my older brother is the Hidden Dragon Chief,” Chu Feng remarked with a twinkling smile in his eyes.

“You brat, stop acting so smugly. Come, let's head into the residence. I'll explain things to you.”

Duan Liufeng chuckled heartily as he slapped Chu Feng's shoulders before heading into the residence.

“Chief elder, how are you feeling?” Chu Feng asked.

“I'm fine. You should hurry in,” the chief elder urged.

Chu Feng took a close look at the chief elder to confirm that he wasn't in a dangerous state before finally heading into his residence.

Weng!

A dense power gushed out from within the residence the moment Chu Feng stepped in. It swiftly formed a semi-translucent sphere that shrouded the entire residence.

Under the concealment of this sphere, not even a Hidden Dragon Elder would be able to see or hear what was happening inside. Naturally, this was Duan Liufeng's means.

“Those who aren’t from the North Tortoise Hall should quickly leave the area and do what you ought to do,” Li Fengxian ordered.

Mos of the crowd swiftly dispersed whereas the elders and disciples of the North Tortoise Hall headed over to the chief elder’s side. There was great reparation works to be done in the North Tortoise Hall after the devastation left in Nangong Chunyue’s wake.

Li Fengxian, Xia Zhicheng, and Huyan Xiaotian also descended to the ground, heading over to the chief elder’s side. They were intending to offer their help to the North Tortoise Hall for this matter.

While they were discussing the matter, Li Fengxian’s eyes couldn’t help but drift toward Chu Feng’s residence. He couldn’t see or hear what was going on within, but a faint smile lingered on his lips.

He knew that the days of suffering were finally over for Chu Feng now that he finally had strong backing in the sect.

Chapter 4784: The Sectmaster’s Past

Chapter 4784: The Sectmaster’s Past

Both Chu Feng and Duan Liufeng entered the room, and the latter began sharing his history.

Three thousand years ago, Duan Liufeng had indeed sustained severe injuries that resulted in the regression of his cultivation. However, the sectmaster didn’t ignore his plight. Instead, she did everything she could to treat him.

It turned out to be a blessing in disguise for Duan Liufeng, as he realized that he could use the ferocious energy in his body for his cultivation. Not only was he able to swiftly recover his cultivation, but he was also getting stronger with each passing moment.

However, Duan Liufeng was a peculiar person. Rather than to see the hypocritical front of others, he preferred to see the true face of others. By then, he had already been demoted to an outer hall elder, so he decided to just go along with it. He told the sectmaster that he would continue to serve the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but he wished to remain in his current position.

His obstinacy left the sectmaster with no choice but to accede to his request.

From then on, Duan Liufeng had two identities in the sect.

One was the fallen prodigy Duan Liufeng, and the other one was an enigmatic expert of the sect.

His hidden identity rose through the ranks, and he eventually became the Hidden Dragon Chief. It was just that no one else other than the sectmaster knew of his identity, and this included the vice sectmaster too.

“So, the vicious being I sensed in your dantian the other day really exists?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. The vicious being does exist, just that I’m gradually taming it over time. It’s not fully under my control yet, but I’m able to tap into its powers now. I controlled it to seal off my cultivation the other day, which was why you weren’t able to sense my true cultivation.

“Brother Chu, I hope that you won’t blame me for deceiving you. As the saying goes, ‘don’t judge a book by its cover.’ There are far too many people who tried to approach me over the years, but few of them harbor sincere goodwill,” Duan Liufeng replied with a smile.

“Brother Duan, I understand where you’re coming from. I don’t blame you for it,” Chu Feng said.

He had been through similar experiences as Duan Liufeng.

There were many kind people in the world, but the temptations of greed and power and the sufferings and trials along the way forced them to become pragmatic. The world of cultivation was highly competitive. In a bid for survival, many were left with no choice but to become cold-blooded and selfish.

“I’ve made you suffer. From now on, I promise that no one in the sect, other than the sectmaster, will be able to oppress you anymore,” Duan Liufeng said.

“What if the sectmaster intends to oppress me?” Chu Feng asked.

“You can only accept your misfortune then. The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect belongs to the sectmaster,” Duan Liufeng replied.

"I see. However, it seems like the sectmaster isn't too fond of me," Chu Feng replied.

Duan Liufeng's expression also turned grim upon hearing those words.
n.(OveℓbIn

"The sectmaster can be a little obstinate at times. She might not be perfect, but she's not an unreasonable person," Duan Liufeng said.

"Is that so?"

Chu Feng was skeptical to hear those words. After all of the injustices he had been put through, it was hard for him to think well of the sectmaster.

"Brother Chu, you should stop attempting to break Lord Dugu Lingtian's records," Duan Liufeng said.

"Why?" Chu Feng asked.

"What I'm going to tell you isn't a secret, but few in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect dare to speak of it. In truth, the sectmaster was ineligible to join the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at the start. She only managed to become a disciple due to Lord Dugu Lingtian's help.

"Back then, the previous sectmaster noticed Lord Dugu Lingtian and wanted to bring him into the sect. However, Lord Dugu Lingtian said that he would only join the sect if our current sectmaster could become a disciple of the sect too," Duan Liufeng said.

"Does that mean that our sectmaster is good friends with Lord Dugu Lingtian?" Chu Feng asked.

"I have no doubt that Lord Dugu Lingtian thinks of our sectmaster as a good friend given the care and concern he has shown for her, but our sectmaster was Lord Dugu Lingtian's servant," Duan Liufeng replied.

"Servant?"

Chu Feng was surprised to hear those words.

"Indeed. The culture of oppression in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect didn't come to be after our sectmaster took over. Rather, it had been this way for a

very long time now. You have seen just what kind of people there are in the sect, so you should be able to imagine just what kind of treatment our sectmaster was accorded for becoming a disciple despite being a servant,” Duan Liufeng said.

“She must have gone through many hardships,” Chu Feng said.

“Well, that would have typically been the case, but she had someone to protect her, and that person was Lord Dugu Lingtian. You can say that our sectmaster only rose to her current position due to Lord Dugu Lingtian.

“With this, you should be able to understand the position that Lord Dugu Lingtian has in our sectmaster’s heart. Even if he’s no longer in this world anymore, he’s still someone irreplaceable to our sectmaster. He’s the one who changed our sectmaster’s life for good.

“Lord Dugu Lingtian has been gone for many years now, and those memories have already started fading. Our sectmaster reminisces about Lord Dugu Lingtian through his names carved on those training grounds.

“However, you began breaking all of Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records as soon as you entered the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It did build up your reputation, and you’re also shattering the few remaining bits of Lord Dugu Lingtian’s existence in the sect,” Duan Liufeng said.

“Ah.”

Chu Feng gasped in realization. After hearing Duan Liufeng’s words, he was starting to be able to relate to the sectmaster a little.

Women tended to be more sentimental than men, such that they were willing to give their all for their loved ones.

“I didn’t know that there’s such a history behind the sectmaster and Lord Dugu Lingtian,” Chu Feng murmured.

“No one would dare to talk about the sectmaster’s past carelessly, especially if it’s unflattering. I reckon that only those of the older generation are aware of this matter. Besides, the sectmaster has never expressed her fondness for Lord Dugu Lingtian before, choosing to conceal her feelings deep in her heart. To be frank with you, I was also surprised when the sectmaster took such a

harsh attitude toward you, and this is mostly speculation on my part,” Duan Liufeng said with a smile.

“I think that there’s a good chance that your guess is spot-on,” Chu Feng said.

Chapter 4785: The Elder Hidden in the Seven Realms Galaxy

“It’s better not to jump so quickly to assumptions. That being said, it’s a fact that the sectmaster has contributed greatly to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so regardless of the true reason why she’s prejudiced toward you, it’s best for you to stop breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records in the future.

“You have already proved yourself, and that’s enough. Do it for my sake, alright?” Duan Liufeng said.

“I understand, Brother Duan. I’ll take note of it,” Chu Feng replied with a nod.

“There’s one more thing I need to tell you. I’ll be leaving the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect with the sectmaster for a while. I’ve tasked Protector Zhao to protect you, but it’ll be best for you to tread carefully too. Also, make sure that you don’t tell anyone about this,” Duan Liufeng said.

“You’re leaving with the sectmaster? Is it convenient for you to tell me where you’ll be heading to?” Chu Feng asked out of curiosity.

The sectmaster was the strongest expert in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, and Duan Liufeng was the Hidden Dragon Chief. Something that required two of such powerful experts moving in unison was likely to be momentous.

“The calamity in the sky this time around is different from those we have faced in the past. Usually, the vice sectmaster is able to resolve the calamity by himself, but the calamity we’re currently facing is at a scale where even the sectmaster might not be able to deal with it personally. n.(OveℓbIn

“It’s not a problem for me to tell you about it, but you have to make sure to keep mum on it. This matter must be kept absolutely confidential,” Duan Liufeng emphasized.

“Brother Duan, rest assured. I’m a person with tightly-guarded lips. I won’t say a word even if someone holds my life hostage,” Chu Feng promised.

“Brother Chu, I trust your character.”

Duan Liufeng patted Chu Feng's shoulder before continuing his story.

"This calamity is no small deal. Our sectmaster tried to resolve it after coming out of closed-door training, but she ended up sustaining injuries instead," Duan Liufeng said.

"The sectmaster is injured?"

Chu Feng was surprised.

He knew that the calamity in the sky was no joking matter when he first saw it, but he thought that the sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect should still be able to resolve it.

However, it turned out that he was still underestimating the scale of the calamity.

"What will happen if we aren't able to put a halt to the calamity?" Chu Feng asked.

"The sect founder has left behind a scroll in case something like that happened. However, we aren't to open the scroll unless we're really in a desperate position, so we're still trying out other possibilities for the time being. That's also the reason why the sect master and I are heading to the Seven Realms Galaxy."

Duan Liufeng's voice was nonchalant, but his words stirred huge waves in Chu Feng's heart.

The Seven Realms Galaxy was ruled by the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion, as well as the place where his mother was imprisoned. It was a place where he would eventually head to, just that he didn't have the strength to do so yet.

"How are you intending to head to the Seven Realms Galaxy?" Chu Feng asked.

"There's a teleportation formation in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect that was set up by the sect founder. We're able to head to the Seven Realms Galaxy directly through the teleportation formation, so the journey wouldn't take too long.

“You seem quite interested in the Seven Realms Galaxy. Are you intending to head there?” Duan Liufeng asked.

“I’m indeed interested in the Seven Realms Galaxy, just that... Can I really go?”

Chu Feng was moved. The Seven Realms Galaxy was one of his goals. He knew that he wasn’t strong enough for it yet, but if he could tag along with Duan Liufeng and the sectmaster, it wouldn’t be a bad thing to take a look around in advance so as to gain some understanding of the place.

“I’ll bring you there if an opportunity allows in the future, but not this time,” Duan Liufeng replied.

The two of them continued chatting for a while longer.

Duan Liufeng really thought of Chu Feng as his brother, telling the latter everything without reservations.

The sectmaster of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was already thirty thousand years old, which was incredible considering that the limit of most cultivator’s lifespan was only ten thousand years. It showed that her body was in excellent condition.

However, there was one person in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect who was even older than the sectmaster, but he had already washed his hands clean of the sect’s affairs and was currently cultivating in the Seven Realms Galaxy.

The sectmaster knew where the elder was currently residing, so she wanted to ask for his help in resolving this crisis.

“Brother Duan, do you know who that elder is?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

An elder who was worthy of the sectmaster to personally pay a visit to was definitely an incredible figure, so he couldn’t help but be interested.

“I didn’t know that there was such a person in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect either. I only learned about it from the sectmaster not too long ago. She didn’t inform me of the elder’s identity, so I’m afraid that I don’t know much about him either. I’ll tell you more about it once I return from the Seven Realms Galaxy,” Duan Liufeng replied.

The conversation continued for a little longer before Duan Liufeng took his leave. Chu Feng also stepped out of his residence to gaze at the sky above.

Due to the massive congregation of storm clouds above, he hadn't seen a blue sky ever since entering the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. He had an ominous premonition about the calamity right from the start, but Duan Liufeng's words further drove in that feeling.

He had a feeling that if this calamity couldn't be resolved, it might just lead to complete annihilation.

On the whole, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect had left a bad impression on Chu Feng given all of the incidents he had faced along the way, but there were still many predecessors whom he respected here, such as the sect founder and Dugu Lingtian.

He didn't hope to see the destruction of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect if possible.

It was just that this was a calamity which even the sectmaster couldn't do anything about. Before something of this scale, Chu Feng couldn't help but feel insignificant. He hated this feeling of powerlessness.

He had to become stronger as soon as possible.

He had indeed grown significantly as compared to before, but he was still far too weak.

Chapter 4786: The Sect Founder's Tomb

Chapter 4786: The Sect Founder's Tomb

"Brother Chu Feng."

While Chu Feng was lamenting his weakness, a familiar voice sounded not too far away. He glanced over and saw Tu Yuanyuan standing at a distance away.

"Why are you standing so far away?" Chu Feng asked.

Tu Yuanyuan was one of the few people who didn't distance herself from Chu Feng despite knowing that he was disliked by the sectmaster. On this fact itself, he felt that she was someone worth befriending.

“Can I... go over?” Tu Yuanyuan asked carefully.

“Of course. Why wouldn’t you be welcomed in my residence?” Chu Feng asked with a chuckle.

Seeing this, Tu Yuanyuan immediately hopped over delightfully.

“What’s with your sudden cautiousness? I didn’t think that a day would come where you dare not even enter my residence,” Chu Feng remarked.

“Is Lord Hidden Dragon Chief gone?” Tu Yuanyuan took a sweeping glance before asking warily.

It was only then that Chu Feng realized that she was intimidated by Duan Liufeng. It was understandable since the means Duan Liufeng had displayed were indeed astonishing.

“Brother Duan had matters to attend to, so he left in advance,” Chu Feng said.

“I really envy you for becoming a brother to the Hidden Dragon Chief. This works out well too. No one will dare to bully you anymore,” Tu Yuanyuan said.

“As long as I’m around, no one will dare to bully you too,” Chu Feng added.

“That sounds particularly reassuring coming from you.”

Tu Yuanyuan’s eyes curled in a crescent smile, but she soon thought of something else and said, “Senior Chu Feng, I came here because there’s something I need to discuss with you.”

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Yinyang Withered Well Realm will be opening in a few days’ time. Have you heard of the place?” Tu Yuanyuan asked.

“I’m afraid not. Is it a place to cultivate at?” Chu Feng asked. *no ve-18-In*

“You can think of it that way, but it’s not entirely the case. It’s quite a mysterious place in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Those who enter the place will have a chance to stumble upon some fortuitous encounter, but it’s also possible for one to gain nothing at all too. It’s all by chance.

“However, there’s a condition to entering the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. It’s shrouded by special energy that disallows any man or woman to enter individually. Only a pair consisting of a man and woman tied together with a Yinyang Shackles will be able to enter the location. So...”

“You must be Junior Tu, right?”

Tu Yuanyuan was in the midst of her words when a voice suddenly sounded. Chu Feng and Tu Yuanyuan turned their heads over and saw Xia Yan walking over.

“Paying respects to Senior Xia.”

Tu Yuanyuan quickly greeted Xia Yan with a bow.

“There’s no need to be so courteous with me. A friend of Chu Feng is a friend of mine too.”

Xia Yan quickly supported Tu Yuanyuan up, not putting on airs at all. There was an amicable smile on her face. It was just that the things she said right after were rather peculiar.

“Junior Tu, I’m intending to enter the Yinyang Withered Well Realm together with Junior Chu Feng. I can introduce someone to you if you don’t have a pair yet. I think Song Xi is a good choice. What do you think of it?”

In the first place, Tu Yuanyuan was already intimidated by Xia Yan, so she didn’t hesitate to go along with the latter. “Thank you, Senior Xia. It would be my pleasure to head there together with Senior Xi.”

Chu Feng could tell right away that this was a fight between the two women as he had never made such an agreement with Xia Yan. In fact, it was just moments ago that he learned about the existence of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

However, he was more concerned with Song Xi at the moment.

“Senior Xia, has Song Xi been released?” Chu Feng asked.

“Senior Xia? You make us sound so distant. I’ve even bared my body to you once before,” Xia Yan remarked.

“What?”

Xia Yan's abrupt words left both Tu Yuanyuan and Chu Feng dumbfounded.

While there weren't that many people around Chu Feng's residence anymore, there were still plenty of elders and disciples walking to and fro the area in order to repair the North Tortoise Hall. On top of that, Xia Yan's voice was not exactly soft.

As soon as those words were spoken, everyone immediately froze in place and turned their eyes toward Chu Feng and Xia Yan.

Chu Feng has seen Xia Yan's body? What's the relationship between them?

"Are you going to deny it now?"

Yet, Xia Yan showed no embarrassment at all. Instead, she even glared at Chu Feng with a forceful gaze.

"I... That is..."

Chu Feng was put in an extremely awkward position, not knowing whether he should admit to it or not. He was not someone who would shy away from such matters, but he was concerned about Xia Yan's reputation.

"Hahaha, what's with your expression? I'm joking! Surely you can't really be thinking about it? How could you have possibly seen my body before? Were you actually dreaming of it?"

Xia Yan suddenly burst into hearty laughter.

Her response made the crowd think that she was joking, so they turned their attention back to their work. Only Chu Feng was left sweating profusely due to Xia Yan's fickleness.

After all, he had really seen Xia Yan's body before.

"I'm sorry, Chu Feng. I wasn't able to protect you or your brother. However, you can be assured that Song Xi is alright now. My grandfather is currently treating him, so you should be able to see a healthy Song Xi soon," Xia Yan said with a guilt-ridden look on her face.

"What are you apologizing for? I should be the one to take the blame here. I was the one who implicated all of you in my private affairs."

Chu Feng knew that Xia Yan's hands were tied, so he didn't blame her for not being able to help him.

"Alright, let's not talk about the past anymore. Tell me more about the Yinyang Withered Well Realm instead. What kind of place is that?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

He wanted to know if it was possible to raise his intelligence by entering that place so that he could further decipher the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor.

After Xia Yan's explanation, he was able to get a more thorough understanding of the place.

The Yinyang Withered Well Realm could be said to be a separate realm of its own in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It was not exactly a place for cultivation, but there were many fortuitous encounters one could stumble on there.

There were records of sect members obtaining martial skills, Incomplete Exalted Armaments, and even Exalted Armaments in there. The one who had benefited the most from it was no other than the current sectmaster.

While the sectmaster was still a disciple, she had managed to achieve a breakthrough of five ranks in her cultivation within a single day in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

It was just that the chances of stumbling upon a fortuitous encounter in there weren't related to one's cultivation. Take Lord Dugu Lingtian for example, even though he had also left his name in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm too, he didn't obtain any benefits from it.

In any case, the Yinyang Withered Well Realm was quite an enigmatic place that couldn't be explained using logic.

"Ah right. There's also a rumor saying that the Yinyang Withered Well Realm is the grave of the sect founder," Xia Yan said.

"The grave of the sect founder? Is that for real?"

Chu Feng was surprised to hear those words.

He carried a great deal of respect for the founder of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect after witnessing his amazing prowess through the formations he left behind.

However, the sect founder was an enigmatic figure whom hardly anyone in the sect knew anything about. It was peculiar that there would be rumors that his grave was in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm when no one even knew whether he was alive or dead.

Chapter 4787: Mysterious Coffin

“There’s hardly anyone who knows of the identity and the trail of the sect founder. In fact, no one even knows whether he’s alive or dead. However, the rumors that the sect founder’s grave is located in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm isn’t completely unfounded,” Xia Yan said.

“Tell me more about it,” Chu Feng said curiously.

“The Yinyang Withered Well Realm is a peculiar place. It contains 99 forbidden areas that bring about certain death to those who dare tread on their grounds. There were a few who were confident in their abilities and tried challenging the forbidden areas, but none of them came out alive.

“However, our predecessors found that the vicinity around the forbidden areas granted the highest chance of stumbling upon a fortuitous encounter. However, out of fear of the forbidden areas, most people dared not to even come close to them. Only the bravest of souls would dare to venture into those treacherous places. Some of them happened to stumble upon a phenomenon,” Xia Yan said.

“What kind of phenomenon is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“One predecessor saw an inexplicable procession consisting of giant humans that towered over a thousand meters, terrifying armored worms that boasted a length of over ten thousand meters, and thousands of armored humans who formed a massive army. They were all traveling alongside one another. It was just an illusion, but the world seemed to tremble at their presence.

“There were monstrous beasts and humans amongst them. Some of their auras felt inviolable and divine, but there were also those who were oozing with malevolence. Such contrasting dispositions shouldn’t have been able to co-exist in the same space, but they were traveling together.

“However, it didn’t look like they were comrades. They felt more like guardians tasked to protect an object, and that object was a coffin,” Xia Yan said.

“Coffin?”

Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed.

“Yes, a coffin. The procession was filled with many terrifying beings, but they were ultimately all illusions. However, the coffin is something that tangibly exists. It’s made entirely out of wood that appears to have rotten with time. However, all of the predecessors who have set their eyes on it all agree that it contains some kind of quality that induces deference in them.

“Due to that, many speculate that the person lying in the coffin is our sect founder. It was hard to imagine that anyone else would be able to stir such a huge phenomenon after his death, especially in the mysterious Yinyang Withered Well Realm,” Xia Yan said.

“There’s actually such a thing?”

Chu Feng was starting to look forward to paying the Yinyang Withered Well Realm a visit. Given what Xia Yan had said, there was indeed a good chance that the person lying in the coffin was no other than the sect founder.

While there was no evidence to back up the claim that the sect founder was dead, it also seemed unlikely that the sect founder would be able to live to this day no matter how powerful he might be.

“Chu Feng, ask her if the access to the Yinyang Withered Well Realm is only limited to the juniors,” Yu Sha suddenly said.

Chu Feng quickly posed the question to Xia Yan, asking, “Xia Yan, is the Yinyang Withered Well Realm only open to us juniors, or are the other seniors able to enter too?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course it’s only limited to the juniors! Chu Feng, you mustn’t miss this opportunity. Let me put it in this way for you. There are many things in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect that can’t be explained with common sense, but the most mysterious one of them all that all disciples look forward to is no other than the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

“The Yinyang Withered Well Realm only opens once every three hundred years, and it’s only open to the juniors. Due to that, there are many seniors and elders who were unable to enjoy its benefits. It’s a huge stroke of luck that we’re able to enter it, and you won’t get a second chance if you were to miss it,” Xia Yan said earnestly, fearing that Chu Feng would refuse this opportunity.

Chu Feng was surprised to hear that the Yinyang Withered Well Realm only opened once every three hundred years. Considering that juniors were defined to be within a hundred years of age in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, those who were born in the wrong years would be unable to enter the location.

“It looks like we’re indeed lucky,” Chu Feng remarked.

“Indeed. To be honest with you, the last time the Yinyang Withered Well Realm opened was 179 years ago, so it should have been another hundred years before it opened once more. However, while you were being punished in the Hidden Dragon Prison, a disturbance suddenly occurred with the gates leading to the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. After careful inspection, the elders realized that it’s a sign that the Yinyang Withered Well Realm would be opening prematurely,” Xia Yan said.

“It’s opening prematurely? Has such a thing happened before?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, this is the first time it has ever happened. Everyone is bewildered by it as well. However, regardless of the cause, it’s a blessing to all of us. Had it not been for this disturbance, those in our generation wouldn’t have the chance to enter the Yinyang Withered Well Realm at all,” Xia Yan replied.

“I see.”

Chu Feng nodded his head contemplatively. He felt that there was more to this premature opening than what appeared on the surface.

“Chu Feng, why do I feel that there’s something amiss with the Yinyang Withered Well Realm?” Yu Sha suddenly spoke up.

“What makes you think so?” Chu Feng asked.

Yu Sha might be a world spiritist, but she did accrue a fair amount of world experience in the Asura Spirit World. She might know of things that Chu Feng knew not of.

“It’s clear that the current Hidden Dragon Martial Sect isn’t able to truly control the formations within the sect, such that it could be said that the current sectmaster isn’t in full control at the moment. It’s just that the sect founder’s formations are still working to this day.

“It’s one thing if the formations were to collapse. It would be a huge loss, but at least it wouldn’t cause any damage. However, there appears to be some terrifying being lurking in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, especially with the existence of the forbidden areas. It would be one thing if the lifeforms are innate to the formation, but what if they are independent?

“If these lifeforms really exist, the danger wouldn’t just be limited to the Yinyang Withered Well Realm but the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. On top of that, it’s suspicious that the realm is opening in advance. I have a feeling that it has something to do with you,” Yu Sha said.

“Something to do with me? You think so too?”

Even though it might sound narcissistic, Chu Feng shared the same thoughts too.

“Yes. I also believe that the Yinyang Withered Well Realm is under someone’s control. That person probably determines when the realm opens. Could it be possible that the person has noticed you and opened the realm in advance so that he could make use of you?” Yu Sha asked.

“This... I don’t think it’s too likely. Someone like the sect founder wouldn’t leave such a threat lying in the sect,” Chu Feng disagreed with Yu Sha’s speculation.

He felt that the sect founder ought to be in control of everything. Even if he wasn’t around, it was unlikely for his formations to go haywire.

“Chu Feng, you shouldn’t forget about the oddities occurring in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. Just take the calamity for example, isn’t that already beyond the sectmaster’s means to resolve? In any case, I have a bad feeling about the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. I don’t think you should go in,” Yu Sha said.

Chapter 4788: Yinyang Withered Well Realm

“Yu Sha, I know that you’re saying all of this for my own good, but I have to enter the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. I don’t know what kind of person the sectmaster is, but I can’t count on pleasing her in order to save Zi Ling. More than that, I need to have sufficient strength as leverage. This is a rare opportunity for me,” Chu Feng said.

“I knew that I wouldn’t be able to sway your decision, but in any case, make sure to tread carefully,” Yu Sha said.

Not too long later, Li Muzhi and the others, who had just been released from their grounding, also ran over to meet Chu Feng. They heaved a sigh of relief upon learning that Chu Feng had Duan Liufeng’s backing now before proceeding on to discuss their plans for the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

Though to be frank, the Yinyang Withered Well Realm was far too enigmatic of a place, and none of them had entered the area before. As a result, the only thing they could really prepare for was to secure a partner to be tied with using the Yinyang Shackles.

Chu Feng didn’t idle while waiting for the opening of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. He tried looking for other ways to decipher the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor, but the deciphering only got harder at the later stages.

It was not that he couldn’t decipher it himself, but he would need a considerable amount of time.

Soon, it was time for the opening of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. All juniors were granted entry into the realm. Those who had already chosen their partners could proceed straight to the shackling whereas those without a partner would be randomly paired by the elders.

Of course, it was much better to personally choose a partner. Due to that, the clearing outside the Yinyang Withered Well Realm was filled with huge crowds, and discussions could be heard here and there.

Those who hadn’t found a partner yet were still looking around, attempting to negotiate with the others. It felt almost like a market.

The men seemed to be more inclined to choose prettier ladies whereas the ladies favored stronger men. After all, they were about to enter the enigmatic

Yinyang Withered Well Realm. They could meet with fortuitous encounters there, but it was possible for them to meet with danger too. Naturally, it would be beneficial to have a strong partner.

“Look, it’s Senior Li Muzhi and Senior Xia Yan!”

“Chu Feng! Chu Feng is here too!”

Despite the bustle, the appearance of Chu Feng and his group still stirred a huge commotion amongst the crowd. It wasn’t surprising since Chu Feng was one of the most notable figures in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect at the moment.

By this point, everyone had learned about his feat of breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian’s record and achieving what no one had ever done. Most importantly, he managed to get away scot-free after killing Nangong Yuliu whereas Nangong Chunyue ended up being locked up and punished.

Of course, this was only possible with the backing of the Hidden Dragon Chief, Duan Liufeng.

Chu Feng had both the talent and the backing of the strongest individual beneath the sectmaster. It seemed like his rise through the ranks was almost inevitable at this point.

“I wonder who Chu Feng will be partnering with. It’d be great if I could partner with him.”

The female disciples directed looks of anticipation in Chu Feng’s direction.

“Is this the entrance to the Yinyang Withered Well Realm?”

Ignoring the discussions of the crowd, Chu Feng began assessing the empty clearing. However, there was nothing worthy of notice. It looked perfectly ordinary from a distance away.

“Look, Senior Zuoqiu and the others are here too!”

Another exclamation sounded as another group arrived at the scene.

There were familiar faces such as Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian, but there was another person whom Chu Feng was meeting for the first time. This

person shared a similar appearance to Zuoqiu Yanliang, such that even without anyone's introduction, he could tell that he was Zuoqiu Youyu.

If not for the elusive figure brought back by the sectmaster, Zuoqiu Youyu would have been the number one amongst the juniors.

Zuoqiu Youyu appeared to be a proud person.

Even Zuoqiu Yanliang and the others couldn't help but direct a look in Chu Feng's direction upon arriving at the clearing, but Zuoqiu Youyu refrained from glancing over despite knowing that Chu Feng was there.

It wasn't just Chu Feng whom he refused to look at. He wasn't looking at anyone on the square at all, as if they were all unworthy of his notice.

Chu Feng wasn't too surprised by Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian's arrival. Under normal circumstances, they should have been undergoing punishment for their crimes of attempting to frame Chu Feng, but the opening of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm was a rare opportunity presented to all of the disciples. There would be no second chances if they were to miss it.

So, the sectmaster made an exception and allowed them to enter the Yinyang Withered Well Realm too. Of course, at the end of it all, they still have to return to face their punishment.

It was only after Zuoqiu Youyu and the others arrived that the elder guarding the area took out the Yinyang Shackles and passed them to Chu Feng and Zuoqiu Youyu's groups.

It was worth noting that only the elders only personally handed the Yinyang Shackles to their groups. All of the other disciples had to queue up in order to collect their Yinyang Shackles.

This highlighted the difference between the two groups and everyone else.

Despite its name, the Yinyang Shackles wasn't a lock. If anything, it looked and felt more like a vine. However, this vine possessed sentience, such that it automatically wrapped itself around Chu Feng's wrist upon contact.

At Chu Feng's will, it would dart forth and bind him together with another individual.

After everyone had been paired up with the Yinyang Shackles, all that was left to do was to wait. There was no way to control the opening of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, so they could only wait for it to open on its own accord.

From daytime, they waited all the way till nightfall.

As soon as the first glimmer of light floated into the sky, the crowd suddenly began murmuring in excitement. A massive spirit formation gate that shone like the brilliant sun was starting to form in mid-air.

Even Chu Feng couldn't help but feel deeply excited.

He thought that the entrance to the Yinyang Withered Well Realm would be located underground, but the entrance to the well presented itself as a massive spirit formation gate in the sky. **novel**(In

Most importantly of all, Chu Feng found himself feeling a deep feeling of anticipation for the Yinyang Withered Well Realm upon seeing the spirit formation gate.

He had seen many powerful formations after joining the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but harnessed within the spirit formation gate before him was the most profound use of spirit power he had ever seen.

Just by looking at the spirit formation gate, he could understand why everyone in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect had such a high evaluation of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

Chapter 4789: A Monster We Have to Face

As soon as the spirit formation gate was formed, two silhouettes darted in. They were no other than Zuoqiu Youyu and Song Qian, who were bound together by the Yinyang Shackles.

Following them were Chu Feng and Xia Yan, Li Muzhi and Zhao Shi, and many others.

All of the disciples standing in the clearing rose into the air and rushed into the spirit formation gate leading into the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. The massive spirit formation gate was radiating blinding light, making the disciples look like moths leaping into blazing flame from afar.

They didn't arrive in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm right away after passing through the spirit formation gate. Instead, they were first brought into a spirit formation passageway.

There was a mysterious power suffusing the passageway. This power felt like an invisible beast with keen senses, coiling tightly around the crowd as if to search for openings. If anyone were to reveal a gap, they would be immediately assaulted by this power.

It was fortunate that the Yinyang Shackles finally showed their prowess here. It amalgamated Chu Feng and Xia Yan's auras together so as to allow them to circumvent the mysterious power's detection.

However, Chu Feng soon realized that it wasn't necessary to use the Yinyang Shackles to hide from this mysterious power. In truth, as long as an individual was able to control his aura and achieve a balance of yin and yang, he would be able to avoid the aggression of the mysterious power.

Of course, pulling something like that off was no easy feat, but it wasn't too hard for world spiritists of Chu Feng and Xia Yan's levels.

Chu Feng reckoned that the mysterious energy suffusing this passageway was more of a selection to filter off the unworthy ones. Only those who had passed the test were qualified to enter the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

This left him wondering if the use of the Yinyang Shackles to circumvent the test was really a good idea or not. He could be missing out on something if he didn't clear the test with his own capabilities.

"Chu Feng, have you noticed it too?" Xia Yan asked.

"Looks like you have noticed it too," Chu Feng replied.

"Indeed. Shall we try releasing this? Something of this caliber shouldn't pose a problem to you and me," Xia Yan glanced at the Yinyang Shackles as she spoke.

"I'm fine with it," Chu Feng replied.

So, Xia Yan released the Yinyang Shackles on their hands and accelerated forward. Chu Feng did the same too.

The others in the passageway were traveling in pairs, so Chu Feng and Xia Yan's act of traveling independently immediately caught their attention.

"T-they released their Yinyang Shackles? Why are they fine after removing it?"

The crowd was bewildered.

"There's no need for the Yinyang Shackles as long as one is able to maintain a balance of yin and yang in the body. However, those who aren't confident in their abilities should keep the Yinyang Shackles on. Otherwise, you might risk coming under the assault of the mysterious power suffusing in this passageway."

Chu Feng was worried that someone amidst the crowd would emulate his actions, so he explained the matter to them.

His words did enlighten the crowd. Basically, those who were strong enough were able to travel alone without the restraints of the Yinyang Shackles.

At his reminder, Zuoqiu Youyu and Song Qian quickly did the same too. With their capabilities, they were able to easily maintain a balance of yin and yang without much of an issue.

Many began to follow suit, especially the other Hidden Dragon Disciples and personal disciples. They were eager to prove themselves.

However, some of them quickly revealed looks of pain on their faces, such as Li Muzhi and Zhao Shi. Li Muzhi was still able to achieve a balance of yin and yang with a bit of effort, but Zhao Shi was clearly having difficulties.

Left with no choice, Li Muzhi had to quickly put on the Yinyang Shackles on him and Zhao Shi.

They were already some of the better faring ones. There were some who fared even worse than them.

Most of the other disciples didn't dare to remove the Yinyang Shackles after seeing the difficulties faced by the stronger disciples, but there were always some fearless ones who thought that they could do it despite their lacking skills, and their blind confidence only resulted in a tragedy.

Those disciples who were unable to achieve a balance of yin and yang after removing the Yinyang Shackles ended up getting assaulted by the mysterious power. Their veins swelled up as blood began to flow from their seven apertures. Soon, they exploded with a bam, and their blood splattered all around in a mess.

They didn't even get a chance to put the Yinyang Shackles back on before meeting their end.

It was only upon seeing casualties that the remaining disciples realized the danger lurking in the passageway and halted their recklessness.

Other than this mishap, it was still relatively peaceful in the spirit formation passageway.

They continued flying for around an incense's time before they were met with another massive spirit formation gate at the other end of the passageway. Passing through the spirit formation gate, they found themselves arriving in a brand new world.

A blue sky above them, beautiful flowers beneath their feet; it was a beautiful world of nature.

It had been a long time since the disciples had seen a clear blue sky due to the calamity looming over the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, so they felt their moods lifting upon seeing this change in scenery.

Despite the terrifying reputation of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, their immediate surroundings didn't look too dangerous. Nevertheless, there were those who wondered if this was all an illusion and continued scanning the surroundings warily.

No one dared to make a move recklessly yet. They were still in the midst of observing the situation.

Boom!

A loud explosion suddenly sounded from the distance as the earth began to tremble.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

A series of thunderous explosions followed, and the trembling of the earth grew more and more intense. Dust could be seen rising in the distance, and upon taking a closer look, one could vaguely see a massive shadow rushing in their direction.

The mountains in the distance had to be at least ten thousand meters in height, but that massive shadow was several times taller than the mountains.

As the massive shadow approached, the disciples were finally able to get a look at its appearance. It was a black-skinned giant with a slightly plump physique and ferocious eyes. A pair of tusks reminiscent of an elephant extended from its mouth.

Rather than a human, it looked more like a gigantic monster. It was so huge that it could probably trample even the ten thousand meters tall mountains under its feet with ease.

Even the clouds in the sky only reached up to its knees. The giant had to be at least a hundred thousand meters in height.

It was still possible to see its face from a distance away, but up close, they would probably only be able to see up to its knees. Even a strand of its leg hair on it was likely to be taller than a tree.

However, the disciples were in no mood to marvel at its size, for they had realized that the giant was currently charging toward them.

“W-what is that?”

Many of the disciples flew into a state of panic as they shuddered out of fear.

This was not the first time they had seen a massive being, but the giant was simply too terrifying. While they couldn't sense its cultivation, the pressure it exerted on them was more than enough to hint at its formidable prowess.

They felt insignificant in the giant's presence. It felt like a spit from it could drown them, and a sneeze could tear them into shreds.

Some of the more timid disciples immediately turned tail to flee.

“Don’t move!”

However, Chu Feng sensed that something was amiss and bellowed an instruction to the disciples. It was just that the disciples were too intimidated by the approaching threat that they ignored his instruction and escaped.

Unfortunately for them, they didn’t manage to get far before being assaulted by multiple rays of light. These rays of light emerged from the spirit formation gate they had just left, and it bound their bodies tightly before dragging them back into the spirit formation gate.

Just like that, those disciples disappeared from the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. No one could tell what became of them, but there was no doubt that they had been eliminated from the trial.

The remaining crowd immediately realized that fleeing wasn’t the correct answer here and quickly headed back.

“Junior Chu Feng, did you notice something?”

The crowd asked.

After all, it was Chu Feng who tried to stop them from escaping earlier, so they thought that he might have noticed something that they had overlooked.

“I’m not entirely certain, but I can sense the formation inside the spirit formation gate eyeing us. Escape is not an option here, so we can only stand our ground... That monster is probably something which we’ll have to face,” Chu Feng said.

“Something which we have to face? You mean that we have to defeat that monster there? B-but... that’s different from what is stated in the predecessors’ records!”

While this was the first time all of them were entering the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, they chose to ask their seniors about their experiences in hopes of learning from them.

Little did they know that each batch of disciples entering the Yinyang Withered Well Realm would have different encounters.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 4790: Above Chu Feng - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 4790: Above Chu Feng

Chapter 4790: Above Chu Feng

The massive size of the monster only became more apparent the closer it approached, leaving the disciples feeling even smaller and more powerless. At the same time, the pressure they felt seemed to be intensifying.

They weren't sure that it was a good idea to allow such a terrifying monster to get close to them, but they knew that running wasn't an option. They didn't know what was the fate that had befallen those who had been dragged back into the spirit formation gate. For all they knew, they might have been killed.

So, they decided to trust Chu Feng here.

Nevertheless, their cowardice still led to them slowly backing away. Even Xia Yan had chosen to take cover behind Chu Feng, grasping onto his robe tightly.

However, Chu Feng glanced at Xia Yan and rolled his eyes. It was possible for the others to get scared, but as for Xia Yan... he had a feeling that she was just feigning it.

Other than Chu Feng, the only one who didn't retreat at all was Zuoqiu Youyu. He hadn't shown the slightest hint of fear all this while.

While his cultivation was on the same level as Zuoqiu Yanliang, his guts made him more worthy of the title as the strongest disciple.

Boom!

The earth trembled for one last time before everything gradually settled down.

The massive giant stopped at a distance of around thirty thousand meters away from the disciples.

Grar!

While it had stopped its footsteps, it suddenly opened its massive mouth, releasing a nasty stench. At the same time, the pressure crushing down on the crowd intensified.

Many disciples closed their eyes fearfully, thinking that it was all over.

However, they soon realized that despite the increasing pressure, the giant didn't launch any attack against them. They slowly opened their eyes to take a peek, only to be surprised by what they were seeing.

The giant had opened its mouth, revealing a tongue filled with inverted spikes. At the very tip of its tongue sat an old man.

The old man shared a striking resemblance with the giant, but his size made him seem more like a human. In fact, he was even shorter than Chu Feng and the other youths present in the area.

The giant only had a cloth concealing his crotch whereas the old man sitting on top of the tongue was fully clothed. His clothes were a little tattered, but it made him look a bit more dignified.

"To be able to draw me out of my mountain, it looks like a great prodigy stands amongst you. It surprises me that not only is there someone who managed to enter this place with his own capability, but there are also multiple people who have released the Yinyang Shackles on their own volition.

"Those who have proven their guts will be rewarded. I shall bestow upon you a fortuitous encounter, but it'll be up to you whether you're able to get anything good out of it."

The monstrous elder reached for his chest and took out a horsetail whisk. Despite his tattered clothes, the horsetail whisk in his possession was clearly an exceptional tool. It had a smooth appearance that looked as if it had been sculpted out of white jade, and it emanated a powerful spirit power and the scent of the ancient era.

If Chu Feng had to make a comparison, his Celestial Master's Horsetail Whisk was nothing before this white jade horsetail whisk.

In fact, he had never seen such a formidable world spiritist treasure before. It was to the extent where every single disciple present could sense its immense prowess.

The gazes of the disciples changed upon laying their eyes on the horsetail whisk. Some were amazed by the immense power of the horsetail whisk, but there were also those whose eyes reddened with greed.

They didn't expect to see such invaluable treasure in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

Shoosh!

The monstrous elder flicked his horsetail whisk and pointed it at Song Qian. A divine ray of light gushed forth and shrouded her. It seemed to morph rapidly around her, and if one were to take a closer look, one could actually see a map amidst it.

It was just that the ray of light was changing far too quickly for anyone to interpret it.

“My deepest gratitude, elder.”

Frenzied joy broke out on Song Qian's face as she quickly kneeled onto the ground and kowtowed deeply.

Chu Feng guessed from Song Qian's response that the map had already been imprinted into her mind. Curious, he activated the Heaven's Eye in an attempt to discern it, and the map that was blurry a moment ago immediately sharpened right before his eyes.

However, what he didn't notice was that the monstrous elder subconsciously shot him a glance as soon as he activated Heaven's Eye. There was a peculiar gleam in his eyes.

Following that, the monstrous elder continued to flick the horsetail whisk in his hand. With every flick from him, a ray of light would fall upon an individual.

Soon, the crowd realized that the ones who were bestowed with the ray of light were the ones who had released the Yinyang Shackles and passed through the spirit formation passageway with their own prowess.

On top of that, there was a difference in the divinity in the ray of light they were bestowed with.

Weng!

It was finally Chu Feng's turn.

“This aura... Incredible!”

“As expected of Chu Feng. He’s indeed unlike the others!”

The crowd directed envious looks in Chu Feng’s direction upon seeing the ray of light he was shrouded in. The ray of light around him gushed into the sky, and the silhouette of a massive beast could be vaguely seen behind him. It was hard to tell what beast that was, but it was clear that it was no ordinary being.

It was to an extent where it felt more appropriate to call it a phenomenon.

“Thank you, elder.”

Chu Feng didn’t kneel down and kowtow as Song Qian did, but he still lowered his head to express his gratitude.

It bewildered the crowd that Chu Feng’s ray of light only had a beast and no map, but in Chu Feng’s mind, he could see a clear map inscribed on the back of the beast.

This was likely to be the fortuitous encounter he had to look for.

“Incredible! He’s even more amazing than Chu Feng!”

But while Chu Feng was still checking out the map, the crowd suddenly flew into a commotion. It turned out that Zuoqiu Youyu had received a ray of light as well, and his was even more blinding than Chu Feng’s. His ray of light morphed into the form of a massive beast as well, but it looked even more complete and divine than Chu Feng’s.

Putting all things aside, the light ray shrouding Zuoqiu Youyu had already surpassed Chu Feng’s.

This was beyond the crowd’s expectations. After all, Chu Feng was a prodigy who had broken Lord Dugu Lingtian’s records multiple times.

Could this mean to say that Zuoqiu Youyu’s skills surpassed Chu Feng when it came to world spiritist techniques?

Chapter 4791: Milord

After the ray of light fell upon Zuoqiu Youyu’s body, the giant monster finally closed its mouth, turned around, and left in the direction where it came from, leaving just the monstrous elder’s voice echoing in the surroundings.

“The man of great talents, please do not let my Milord down.”

Those words weren't particularly loud, but they seemed to echo right within the hearts of the crowd.

“Milord? That elder possesses such terrifying powers, so what kind of incredible figure could his lord be? Why would there be such an existence in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm?”

“I've never heard of this from the predecessors!”

“Could there really be other lifeforms in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm?”

The disciples discussed fervently amongst themselves.

The clues dropped by the monstrous elder hinted at several terrifying possibilities.

If there were only doubts that there were other existences in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, the monstrous elder's words effectively verified those claims. To make things worse, these existences appeared to be far more formidable than they had expected.

Putting all things aside, just the monstrous elder they met earlier was already an unfathomable expert. If so, the 'Milord' he mentioned was likely to be even more terrifying.

If such existences were to leave the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, could the current Hidden Dragon Martial Sect really be able to stop them?

The disciples suddenly felt an impending sense of danger.

“Chu Feng, is that person really not the manifestation of the formation but a real person?” Xia Yan asked.

She initially thought that the giant and the monstrous elder were beings created by the formation, but they appeared so real that she couldn't help but think twice about it.

Unable to confirm the matter, she could only turn to Chu Feng for clarification.

“I guess so.”

However, Chu Feng's response was a little perfunctory. His eyes were focused on Zuoqiu Youyu, such that he didn't even turn to look at Xia Yan while answering the question.

Or to be more exact, he was focused on the light shrouding Zuoqiu Youyu's body.

"Oh? Chu Feng seems to be concerned about that matter."

"How could he possibly not be? After breaking Lord Dugu Lingtian's record so many times, he must have thought that he is the prodigy the elder spoke of earlier, only to realize that it was referring to Zuoqiu Youyu instead. He must be feeling horrible at the moment."

The disciples gossiped.

Hearing those words, Xia Yan made a comparison between the light shining on the two of them once more. They were indeed far brighter than the rest of the crowd, but Zuoqiu Yanyu's was visibly brighter than that of Chu Feng's.

"Could there be a mistake here?" Xia Yan murmured.

"Xia Yan, what do you mean by that?"

Zuoqiu Youyu didn't speak a word, but Zuoqiu Yanliang had already spoken up in displeasure.

"A criminal like you should know his place. Was it enough for you to force the other disciples to do your bidding, so you're intending to control my mouth now too? Who do you think you are? The vice sectmaster?"

Even though Xia Yan was weaker than Zuoqiu Yanliang, she didn't fear the latter at all. In fact, she didn't hesitate to mention Zuoqiu Yanliang's grandfather when insulting him.

This was the first time Chu Feng had seen a disciple daring to speak to Zuoqiu Yanliang in such a manner. Yet, Zuoqiu Yanliang couldn't do anything about it at all. He could only glare at Xia Yan lividly.

It was at this moment that Zuoqiu Youyu finally spoke up.

“Xia Yan, you’re born with a golden spoon in your mouth, and you’re blessed with great talents too. Someone like you should be careful when choosing your friends.”

It was clear that he was referring to Chu Feng through his words.

“Senior Zuoqiu, you have my gratitude for your concern. However, I believe that it’s none of your business whom I befriend?”

Xia Yan spoke those words with a bright smile on her lips, but the hostility in her voice was clear.

“I wish you all the best.”

Zuoqiu Youyu didn’t want to bother arguing with Xia Yan, so he rose into the air to leave the area.

“Wait a moment.”

However, Chu Feng suddenly called him out.

“What’s wrong?” Zuoqiu Youyu asked.

“Ah, never mind,” Chu Feng replied before turning his gaze toward Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“Chu Feng, what are you up to?” Zuoqiu Yanliang asked.

“I’m not up to anything. Just some words of advice from me, it’ll be best for you to stay put,” Chu Feng said.

“What’s wrong with that fellow? Was he triggered or something?”

The other disciples were perplexed by Chu Feng’s peculiar behavior.

As for Zuoqiu Youyu, he shot a glance at Chu Feng before leaving the area. He didn’t bring Song Qian together with him.

By this point, the crowd had already realized that they could remove the Yinyang Shackles once they were out of the spirit formation passageway and move freely.

Shortly after Zuoqiu Youyu left, Zuoqiu Yanliang also began to take his leave too.

“Didn’t I tell you to stay put?” Chu Feng suddenly spoke up.

This time around, he spoke with a tone that was reminiscent of a command.

“You!!!”

Zuoqiu Yanliang’s complexion turned awful, but he dared not to disobey Chu Feng’s command. In truth, everyone knew what he was afraid of.

Chu Feng had obtained the power of the Hellking in the Vicious Beast Hellworld, and he even killed a couple of personal disciples before the crowd just a few days ago.

Zuoqiu Yanliang and Song Qian also had a portion of the Hellking’s powers imbued in their bodies, so their lives were in Chu Feng’s grasp. As long as Chu Feng willed it so, he could take both of their lives whenever he wished.

Of course, Chu Feng himself knew that he wasn’t in possession of the Hellking’s power, but the latter didn’t know of this.

This was also the reason why Zuoqiu Yanliang was so frightened of Chu Feng.

Boom!

All of a sudden, a powerful force smashed down from the sky onto where Chu Feng was standing. It stirred powerful shockwaves that forced Xia Yan and the others standing next to Chu Feng to retreat.

All that was left in Chu Feng’s wake was a crater. Chu Feng’s body had vanished entirely, leaving behind just a small tinge of his aura.

It was an attack from a Martial Exalted level cultivator. n--o-(v(-E()l-)b.)l.-n

“Zuoqiu Youyu, how dare you assassinate Chu Feng? I’ll kill you!” Xia Yan howled furiously.

Her face warped in agitation as she glared at Zuoqiu Youyu with seething hatred.

Her roar snapped the crowd out of their daze.

Someone had assaulted Chu Feng, and the most likely suspect was no other than Zuoqiu Youyu. But what was queer about the situation was that Chu Feng had completely vanished from sight, not even leaving a droplet of blood behind.

They couldn't tell if Chu Feng was really dead or not.

Chapter 4792: Massacre

“Zuoqiu Youyu, scam out here!”

The frenzied Xia Yan released her full prowess as a rank two Martial Exalted level, ravaging the surroundings with her aura. At the same time, she drew her weapon too.

It was a white jade sword that commanded an imposing presence. It was an Exalted Armament!

Both Xia Yan's airs and might were indeed one to behold. It looked like she was ready to get into a huge fight with Zuoqiu Youyu.

“Xia Yan, stop slandering my brother! If you wish to accuse my brother of killing Chu Feng, bring out some evidence then. We're currently in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, the most enigmatic place in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. It wouldn't be surprising for anything to happen here. Those who have guts to come here ought to be ready to meet their end, so stop yapping away there!”

However, Zuoqiu Yanliang wasn't intimidated by the furious Xia Yan. Instead, he began criticizing her angrily.

He looked sincerely angry, such that the crowd was left wondering if Xia Yan had really wronged Zuoqiu Youyu or not.

“Stop putting on an act there. Everyone knows about your grudge with Chu Feng. Since Zuoqiu Youyu dares not to come out, you'll be the one to repay the debt then!”

Xia Yan pointed the Exalted Armament in her hand at Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“Hmph!

With a cold harrumph, Zuoqiu Yanliang released an even more powerful aura that immediately suppressed Xia Yan.

It was the oppressive might of a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator.

“You wish to kill me? Hah, know your place! Xia Yan, it’s on the account of your two grandfathers that I’ve been tolerating you thus far. Do you think that I’m really afraid of you?” Zuoqiu Yanliang sneered coldly.

Boom! *no v E-lb*-In

A red aura billowed ceaselessly into the sky, and Xia Yan’s aura immediately rose to rank three Martial Exalted level. At the same time, the red aura manifested into the form of a giant crimson wolf.

This crimson wolf spanned over tens of thousands of meters, covering the entire sky. As it slowly descended to the ground, Xia Yan’s aura rose once more to rank four Martial Exalted level.

“You actually mastered your Divine Powers to such a level?”

Zuoqiu Yanliang was astonished by what he was seeing. His eyes that were dripping with disdain a moment ago immediately turned grim.

While he had known that Xia Yan had achieved significant advancement in his Divine Powers, he didn’t think that she had already reached such a level. It was beyond his imagination that she would actually be able to use her Divine Powers to raise her cultivation level by two ranks despite only being at Martial Exalted level.

It was common knowledge that Zuoqiu Yanliang was a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator possessing a powerful Heavenly Bloodline. While he was still an Utmost Exalted level cultivator, he was able to summon both the Lightning Mark and Lightning Armor.

However, his Heavenly Bloodline was limited upon reaching Martial Exalted level, such that he could only summon his Lightning Mark now.

So, even though Zuoqiu Yanliang was only a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator, he was only able to raise his cultivation rank by a single level to reach rank four Martial Exalted level. This meant that Xia Yan stood a chance against Zuoqiu Yanliang.

Weng!

All of a sudden, the space around Xia Yan distorted, and she disappeared without a trace.

Following Xia Yan's disappearance, the space continued to distort, and Li Muzhi, Zhao Shi, Song Xi, Tu Yuanyuan, and the others also vanished as well.

The crowd was horrified by this development, wondering if some kind of calamity was upon them. However, there were no other victims after Zuoqiu Yanliang vanished as well. Slowly, the nervous hearts of the crowd calmed down a little.

In truth, Zuoqiu Yanliang was simply transported to another place by someone else. In this place were Xia Yan, Li Muzhi, Song Xi, Tu Yuanyuan, and the others who had vanished.

Of course, Zuoqiu Youyu was present too.

There was a Lightning Mark on his forehead, but it carried not a 'Heavenly' character but a 'Divine' character, similar to Chu Feng.

Zuoqiu Youyu had practiced the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique too!

On top of that, there was a Lightning Armor crackling around him too.

Due to that, his cultivation was raised two ranks all the way up to rank five Martial Exalted level even though his base cultivation was the same as Zuoqiu Yanliang.

This was also why Zuoqiu Youyu surpassed his older brother in terms of ranking and reputation despite the two of them being of the same cultivation rank. In terms of talent and strength, Zuoqiu Youyu was indeed the strongest junior in the present Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

Given that Xia Yan's limit was only rank four Martial Exalted level, she was completely helpless before the rank five Martial Exalted level Zuoqiu Youyu, similar to Li Muzhi, Zhao Shi, Song Xi, Tu Yuanyuan, and the others.

All it took was an instant for Zuoqiu Youyu to bind them with his treasure.

“Zuoqiu Youyu, what did you do to Chu Feng?”

Despite being all tied up, Xia Yan still glared at Zuoqiu Youyu with murderous eyes.

However, the latter didn't even bother sparing a glance at Xia Yan. Instead, he turned to Zuoqiu Yanliang and asked, “Big brother, do you feel any discomfort?”

“None at all. Youyu, why did you ask that? Could it be that Chu Feng managed to escape?” Zuoqiu Yanliang asked in astonishment.

“I'm not certain, but there's a good chance that he didn't die in the earlier attack,” Zuoqiu Youyu replied..

“He was actually able to slip through your fingers?” Zuoqiu Yanliang was surprised.

“He must have some kind of escape means on him. However, the fact that he chose to escape instead of fighting with us shows that he's weaker than us. If he's truly alive, there's no way he wouldn't be able to figure out that I was the one who attacked him. Since you're fine, it would mean that he was lying all this while and that he isn't in control of the Hellking's powers.

“He might have been able to kill those personal disciples, but he doesn't have the means to dictate Song Qian and your life and death. So, you need not fear him anymore,” Zuoqiu Youyu said.

“That bastard! How dare he lie to me! If he's still alive, I swear that I'll end him with my own hands!” Zuoqiu Yanliang spat.

“Chu Feng seems to possess quite some means. It'll be best for you to tread carefully if you encounter him. I'll leave these people to you so that you can hold them hostage against Chu Feng.”

Naturally, Zuoqiu Youyu was referring to the bound Xia Yan and the others.

“Youyu, you should just end their lives right away. If they were to escape from this place...”

Zuoqiu Yanliang glanced at Xia Yan and the others worriedly.

“Big brother, what are you talking about? They have already met with their demise due to the earlier distortion of space. How could they possibly escape from this place?” Zuoqiu Youyu said.

Those words shocked not just Xia Yan and Li Muzhi but Zuoqiu Yanliang as well.

They didn't think that Zuoqiu Youyu would really intend to take their lives!

Chapter 4793: An Opportunity none(ℓb).ln

“Zuoqiu Youyu, do you take the others as fools? If you dare to kill us, my grandfathers definitely won't let you off!”

Sensing that they were in a bad position here, Xia Yan immediately brought out her grandfathers to intimidate Zuoqiu Youyu.

Zuoqiu Youyu didn't say a word. Instead, he walked up to Xia Yan, raised his fist, and punched straight into her abdomen. It was a powerful strike that sent Xia Yan spurting blood, and she fell onto her knees weakly.

However, Zuoqiu Youyu didn't just stop right there. He grabbed Xia Yan by her hair and lifted her up into the air.

Xia Yan glared at him furiously, but the earlier punch was so strong that her body couldn't stop trembling. She could only stare helplessly at Zuoqiu Youyu's cold face, and for some reason, it was striking fear in her at this very moment.

“Are you threatening me with your two grandfathers? Let's make a bet this time around then. We'll see if your two grandfathers will be able to do anything to me after I kill you.”

After saying those words, Zuoqiu Youyu grabbed Xia Yan by her hair and smashed her head onto the ground.

Zuoqiu Yanliang watched as Zuoqiu Youyu tortured Xia Yan, but there was no pity in his eyes at all. Instead, he was more than gleeful at the turn of events.

All along, the two of them had to tolerate Xia Yan due to her identity and her talent, but in truth, they already had a lot of pent-up frustrations against her.

After dealing with Xia Yan, Zuoqiu Youyu turned to Zuoqiu Yanliang and said, "This is a rare opportunity for us as well, so let's part ways and seek our own fortuitous encounters. If you stumble upon Chu Feng, just go ahead and end his life."

"What if we aren't able to find Chu Feng before the trial comes to an end?" Zuoqiu Yanliang asked as he shot a glance at Xia Yan and the others.

He was asking how they should deal with Xia Yan and the others if they couldn't find Chu Feng.

"Didn't I already tell you? Big brother, you can't be feeling sorry for them right now, are you?" Zuoqiu Youyu asked.

"Why would I? I'm just afraid that we would put our grandfather in a spot," Zuoqiu Yanliang said.

"You're wrong. What we're doing now is solving a huge problem for our grandfather."

Leaving those words behind, Zuoqiu Youyu turned away and left the area. Despite his departure, the rope tying down Xia Yan and the others still remained as tight as ever, leaving them utterly helpless to retaliate.

Zuoqiu Yanliang took out a Cosmos Sack and stuffed Xia Yan and the others into it before heading off in a different direction as Zuoqiu Youyu.

He was going to seek his own fortuitous encounter too.

...

At the same time, at another area in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, Chu Feng was currently rushing forth with his presence concealed. He had activated the Lightning Mark, Lightning Armor, and even the Four Symbols Divine Power, putting out everything in order to raise his speed.

"Chu Feng, where are we going? Are you going to look for Xia Yan and the others?" Yu Sha asked.

"No, we can't head back," Chu Feng replied.

"But you got assaulted earlier. Wouldn't Xia Yan and the others be in danger if you don't head back?" Yu Sha asked.

“It’s unlikely that they’re in danger. Besides, I’m not a match for Zuoqiu Yanliang and Zuoqiu Youyu yet. If I were to head back, I would be really putting them in danger,” Chu Feng replied.

“Are you certain that it was Zuoqiu Youyu who tried to kill you?” Yu Sha asked.

“He was definitely the one who made the move,” Chu Feng replied confidently.

“Then... how did you manage to get away? I didn’t understand what was going on at all.”

Even though Yu Sha was by Chu Feng’s side all along, she wasn’t able to see how Chu Feng made his escape. She only sensed danger for a brief moment before Chu Feng was suddenly transported elsewhere.

Right after that, Chu Feng began rushing in a certain direction without any hesitation, as if he had already determined his destination.

“The aura bestowed upon us represents an opportunity, but luck has a huge part to play as to whether we’ll be able to realize this opportunity or not. To put it simply, even if we manage to find the location and complete the trial, there’s no guarantee that we’ll be able to get the prize.

“Of course, the denser the aura is, the greater the chances of acquiring the prize. In other words, Zuoqiu Youyu and I are the ones who are most likely to benefit the most from this fortuitous encounter.

“However, aside from what I’ve just mentioned, there’s actually another separate fortuitous encounter to be obtained from the bestowed auras. In truth, each of the auras we have obtained is a part of a map. This map reveals the location of an ultimate fortuitous encounter, and as long as one successfully clears the trial there, one will be able to acquire the treasure lying there for sure..

“The reason why I could escape from Zuoqiu Youyu’s assault earlier was due to the benefit I obtained from the aura. This benefit would save me once when I’m in grievous danger, but I ended up wasting it as soon as I obtained it. But it did save my life after all. If not for it, I would have already been dead by now.”

Rage began to flurry in Chu Feng’s eyes.

He didn't have any grudge with Zuoqiu Youyu, but the latter sought to claim his life right away. This was a grudge that he was determined to repay.

"I see..."

Upon learning that Chu Feng had used up his only escape means, Yu Sha dared not to ask Chu Feng to return to look for Xia Yan and the others anymore. She didn't hope for any danger to fall upon Chu Feng.

"Are you heading to the destination reflected on the complete map formed by the auras now?" Yu Sha asked.

"That's right. I have to obtain the treasure lying there by hook or by crook. This is the only way I can stand against Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang," Chu Feng replied.

"Is the treasure there similar to the Hellking's power?" Yu Sha asked curiously.

"I'm not sure what lies there, but I know for sure that the auras that everyone else has received would dissipate once I obtain the treasure. If so, Zuoqiu Yanliang and Zuoqiu Youyu would lose their chances with the fortuitous encounter," Chu Feng replied.

"Is that so?"

Yu Sha was excited to hear those words. However, she soon thought of something else and asked, "What about Xia Yan and the others?"

"I can only find a way to repay them in the future. But no matter what, I can't allow Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang to benefit from this trial," Chu Feng said.

Chapter 4794: That Is a Tombstone!

Chu Feng rushed as fast as he could in a single direction. The fortuitous encounter he was seeking for was likely to be the greatest opportunity lying in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, and it was profoundly related with all other opportunities here too.

Once he claimed that greatest opportunity, all other opportunities here would automatically disappear.

Similarly, if someone else were to claim that greatest opportunity ahead of him, Chu Feng would be unable to gain anything out of this trial too.

It was basically a competition where the winner took everything and the loser returned with empty hands.

While Chu Feng's action would be taking away the opportunities bestowed upon Xia Yan and the others too, he felt that he still had to do it. He couldn't allow Zuoqiu Youyu to get away after making an attempt on his life without paying the price.

If not for his Heaven's Eye allowing him to see through the crux of the bestowed auras, Zuoqiu Youyu would have likely been the greatest winner from this trial. Considering the enigmatic nature of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, this could very well be something huge.

There was no way Chu Feng could allow Zuoqiu Youyu to benefit from it.

Soon, Chu Feng was finally starting to approach the location marked on the complete map. By this point, he had already entered a desert, and his destination was just beyond this desert.

"Something is wrong."

But all of a sudden, Chu Feng suddenly came to a halt.

"What's wrong?" Yu Sha asked.

"I did see this desert on the map, but judging by the distance, I should have already passed through it and arrived at the destination by now. Yet, there's still no end in sight to this desert," Chu Feng said.

"Could this be a formation?" Yu Sha asked.

"I already checked the area with the Heaven's Eye, but I couldn't sense any spirit power in the area," Chu Feng said.

"Then... why don't you try heading forward a bit more? Maybe we're already about to reach the end of the desert?" Yu Sha asked.

Chu Feng nodded contemplatively before setting off once more, but instead of flying ahead, he turned around and headed back where he had come from.

He had spent half an incense's time in this desert so far, so he should be able to fly out of it in half an incense's time too. Yet, as time ticked beyond half an incense's time, Chu Feng found that he was still stuck in the desert.

Heck, he couldn't even see the end of the desert by the horizon!

So, he tried flying as high as he could, hoping to see as far as possible. He traveled so high up that even the white clouds were far beneath him. Yet, even from such an altitude, all he could see below was yellow sand. It was as if he was trapped in a world that was made out of nothing but the desert.

"It looks like we're really trapped. If this isn't a formation, what else could it possibly be?" Yu Sha asked.

"There's no need to panic. I have a way out."

Chu Feng tried flying forward for a while in the air, but it wasn't making much of a difference. So, he changed his mind and swooped down instead.

Whoosh!

The yellow sand gushed into the air like a magnificent geyser.

Chu Feng had darted beneath the sand, heading underground. The sand layer turned out to be much thicker than he had expected, but he chose to continue digging downward till he finally saw soil.

Relieved that he was making progress, he continued digging deeper and deeper until he stumbled upon an underground stream.

He was deep underground, but he could still discern his directions. He broke through the dirt layer and determinedly headed in a specific direction.

But not too long later, his footsteps halted once again.

"What's wrong?" Yu Sha asked concernedly.

She was sharing vision with Chu Feng, but she wasn't able to see anything that justified Chu Feng's sudden halt.

"Success or failure; it all depends on this."

Without any hesitation, Chu Feng began to dive upward. He swiftly left the underground and reappeared on the surface.

Yu Sha was amazed by what she saw right after.

Typically speaking, Chu Feng had only traveled for a short moment underground before heading out, so he ought to still be in the desert. Yet, they were no longer surrounded by yellow sand anymore; the desert was now behind Chu Feng.

Instead, they were standing before a forest of stones. This forest of stones was massive, and every single stone was of different sizes and was inscribed with unique complicated runes.

While there was no conspicuous light or anything of that sort, Chu Feng could tell right away that this forest of stones was no ordinary place. The fortuitous encounter he was looking for was right inside.

“Chu Feng, how do you know that you have to dive underground in order to pass the desert?” Yu Sha asked.

“Every formation has its own weakness. However, that desert wasn’t a formation. I can’t tell what it is either, but hoping to escape from it just by blindly running around clearly wouldn’t work. So, I tried traveling beneath the desert to see if it would make a difference, and it worked out,” Chu Feng replied.

Yu Sha felt impressed with Chu Feng’s wits.

All it took was a change of perspectives, but it was no easy feat to attempt to think out of the box when stuck in a quandary. At the very least, she hadn’t thought of such a solution.

Had she been in his place, she would have probably continued charging aimlessly around the desert, hoping that it would somehow make a difference. She believed that many people would do the same as her when placed in the same position too.

It was precisely due to this that she felt earnest respect for Chu Feng.

“The real difficulty lies here,” Chu Feng remarked.

Despite having arrived at the destination marked on the map, he couldn't help but frown in the presence of the forest of stones. As a world spiritist, he knew deep well that breaching this stone forest was no easy feat.

The trial would have likely come to an end by the time he was done.

Boom!

All of a sudden, the earth began to tremor as a massive hand rose from the forest of stones. The hand was pitch-black and spanned a hundred meters wide. Upon rising from the ground, it smacked down on the forest of stone.

To Chu Feng's astonishment, instead of causing devastation to the forest of stone, the two actually overlapped with one another instead.

Soon, another massive hand rose from the ground as well. A humongous humanoid monster was gradually climbing its way out from the forest of stone.

Towering at a height of a thousand meters, it wasn't too impressive compared to the monster carrying the monstrous elder they had encountered right after arriving at the Yinyang Withered Well Realm, but the pressure it exerted was equally frightening.

As long as this monster willed so, it could probably kill Chu Feng with just a glance.

And what made the situation even more frightening was that there were multiple of such monsters. By this point, there were already more than a dozen of them standing amidst the forest of stone, and the number was still increasing!

Looking at the forest of stone and the monsters amongst them, realization finally dawned on Chu Feng.

"Those are not stones but tombstones!!!"

Chapter 4795: World Spirits That Almost Reached the Level of a God

The forest of stones was massive, and there were countless stones in it. However, when those monsters started appearing, Chu Feng realized that the stones had begun shimmering with a faint radiance.

Taking a closer look, he realized that the number of shimmering stones tallied with the number of monsters. As more monsters rose from the ground, the number of shimmering stones increased correspondingly as well.

It felt like the two of them were related to one another, which led to Chu Feng guessing that he wasn't in a forest of stones but a cemetery filled with tombstones.

Every stone was a tombstone, and the monsters were beings that had been buried here.

It was just that these monsters were rather special too.

Every single one of them wielded devastating prowess, but their bodies were half-translucent, making them resemble a soul instead. Chu Feng couldn't tell for sure, but they did feel a little peculiar.

Grar!

There was a flash of golden radiance, and yet another figure rose from the ground. But this time, it wasn't a monster but a human.

No, they weren't exactly humans. Every single one of them looked incredibly beautiful, and their stature was far taller than that of an ordinary human. They were dressed in graceful robes, and they gave off an air of divinity that couldn't have come from a human.

"World spirits... They are all world spirits," Chu Feng blurted out loud.

"World spirits?"

Yu Sha was surprised to hear that.

She was a world spirit too, but she couldn't sense the aura of world spirits from these beings.

"There's no way I could be mistaken. They are all world spirits from the Fairy Spirit World and Monstrous Spirit World," Chu Feng spoke affirmatively.

More beings were still rising from the forest of stones, and they came in different races. Slowly, Yu Sha began to believe what Chu Feng had said.

While these beings looked a little different from normal world spirits, they did have the unique traits that fitted to the different categories of world spirits, be it Ghost World Spirits, Beast World Spirits, Demon World Spirits, Buddha World Spirits, Demon World Spirit, and Fairy World Spirits.

It was just that their aura was a little off. They didn't feel like world spirits. Instead... they felt like beings who were born in this very world of cultivation.

Had it not been for Chu Feng's words, Yu Sha would have never thought that they could possibly be world spirits.

Chir chir chir.

A mysterious rumble suddenly sounded from beneath the ground.

Soon, a humongous beetle that spanned a length of ten thousand meters rose from the ground. It wore a heavy armor filled with sharp spikes, looking rather imposing. Its size was one thing, but the aura it emanated was far stronger than that of every other world spirit present.

Yet, it turned out that there were more than one of these beetles. They were rising from the ground one after another. In the blink of an eye, there were already more than fifty of them.

"Yu Sha, if these are world spirits too, do you think that they are Monstrous World Spirits or Beast World Spirits?" Chu Feng asked.

He couldn't really tell what species these beetles were from.

"If we have to categorize them, they are more likely to be Insect World Spirits," Yu Sha replied.

"Insect World Spirits?"

This was the first time Chu Feng was hearing of such a classification, but he wasn't too surprised by that. The Seven Spirit Worlds only referred to the seven more famous and powerful spirit worlds, but the truth was that the world spirits that could be liaised with extended beyond just the Ghosts, Beasts, Monsters, Buddhas, Demons, Fairies, and Asuras.

There were also Dao World Spirits, Elf World Spirits, Snow World Spirits, Flower World Spirits, and so on. It was just that they were much rarer and weaker, so world spiritists didn't acknowledge their existence.

There were even some who went as far as to claim that world spiritists who didn't contract with the Seven World Spirits weren't qualified to be called world spiritists.

What he was surprised about was these Insect World Spirits commanding a presence that subdued all of the other world spirits present in the area, changing his perception of the power rankings of the world spirits.

It turned out that it was not that all world spirits outside of the Seven World Spirits were weak. It was just that very few world spiritists were able to contract with the truly powerful ones.

At the very least, these insects that had appeared were already powerful beyond imagination. The pressure they emanated left Chu Feng feeling asphyxiated.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

But all of a sudden, a series of thumps echoed. It sounded like the organized marching of a human army.

As expected, a huge army walked out of the stone forest. They were Fairy World Spirits, just that they were dressed in uniform armor and were wielding weapons. Their footsteps were also surprisingly harmonized.

They looked like an elite army prepared for war.

Their appearance immediately suppressed the imposing presence of the Insect World Spirits. It was clear that these Fairy World Spirits were the stronger ones here. Any single one of them could bring about a calamity.

Watching this unbelievable scene made Chu Feng feel utterly awestruck. His mouth went dry as cold sweat wouldn't stop flowing from his forehead.

Putting all things aside, even the Monstrous World Spirits already wielded strength beyond his imagination, but everything that came afterward topped that. It made Chu Feng realize just how insignificantly weak he was before the real experts.

Compared to these powerful world spirits, he couldn't even be considered as a weed; just a mere speck of dirt in the air.

After the emergence of the army of Fairy World Spirits, there were even more powerful world spirits from the Ghost Spirit World, Beast Spirit World, Monstrous Spirit World, Buddha Spirit World, and Demon Spirit World appearing. They were all stronger than the Insect World Spirit, possibly even reaching the height of the gods.

Chu Feng was utterly dumbfounded by the sight before him.

He had seen truly strong experts before, but even they were nothing compared to the unimaginably powerful line-up standing before him.
n.)OveℓbIn

“Just what kind of place is the Yinyang Withered Well Realm? Why are there so many powerful world spirits here? Wait a moment, that is...”

Chu Feng was in the midst of his thoughts when he noticed something.

A coffin had risen out of the stone coffin under the encirclement of the powerful world spirits. The moment the coffin came into appearance, all of the world spirits present suddenly appeared incomparably small.

Chapter 4796: Someone Who Had Reached the Peak

Chu Feng's heart skipped a beat upon seeing the coffin. He could feel unprecedentedly powerful energy coming from it. Even those world spirits who had made him feel like a speck of dust earlier suddenly became insignificant in the face of the coffin.

This powerful energy wasn't martial power but spirit power. It was spirit power that Chu Feng had never felt before.

He immediately came to a realization.

“Disciple Chu Feng pays respect to the sect founder.”

Chu Feng bowed deeply to the coffin.

Astonishingly, the moment Chu Feng made such a movement, the coffin that floated out of the forest of stones suddenly halted its movement, and all of those powerful world spirits also stopped their footsteps to look at him.

Their gazes placed an unimaginable amount of stress onto Chu Feng. Even Yu Sha, who was in the World Spirit Space, could feel the frightening weight of their stares.

She quickly closed her eyes, not daring to look back.

However, Chu Feng didn't back down here. He looked straight ahead, facing the gazes of the world spirits head-on. It was not that he couldn't feel the pressure coming from them—on the contrary, the pressure he felt far exceeded that of Yu Sha—but he didn't want to back down. He had a feeling that this was a test.

Even though he stared back at those powerful world spirits, there was no disrespect in his eyes at all. All that could be seen was admiration and respect.

Kacha!

Kacha!

Kacha!

A weird sound echoed from the coffin, and a ray of light suddenly burst out and shrouded Chu Feng. It sealed off Chu Feng's line of sight, leaving him unable to see anything but brilliant white light.

But soon, the white light dissipated, and he found himself transported into another space.

Everything in this space was white in color, be it the land, the sky, the trees, the mountains, and even the waterfalls as well.

“Where are we?”

As the feeling of pressure vanished, Yu Sha finally opened her eyes once more. However, when she saw the scenery before her, she felt a peculiar emotion welling up inside of her.

Everything in this world was pure and immaculate, but it didn't feel divine. There was no feeling of inviolability here. Nevertheless, Yu Sha was still very fond of this clean environment, though the happiest one of all was Chu Feng.

"It's a success! I've managed to trigger the fortuitous encounter! The auras bestowed upon Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang would soon dissipate. Even if they reach the destination pointed out to them, they wouldn't be able to obtain the treasure. Perhaps, Zuoqiu Youyu might even meet with danger!" Chu Feng said.

"Would Xia Yan and the others be in danger too?" Yu Sha asked.

"They won't. The only one who is in danger is Zuoqiu Youyu. I saw the map of his aura, and the place he'll be heading to is a treacherous land," Chu Feng replied.

"That's a good thing. Speaking of which, Chu Feng, how did you know that the person inside the coffin is the founder of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?" Yu Sha asked.

It was only after Chu Feng bowed to the coffin that the latter came to a halt and bestowed a ray of light upon Chu Feng. While it might be a bit simplistic to think of it in such a manner, Yu Sha had a feeling that this had something to do with the power behind Chu Feng.

"The moment the coffin appeared, I didn't just feel spirit power. I also sensed a familiar aura too," Chu Feng replied.

"A familiar aura? What's that?" Yu Sha asked.

"It's the aura of the formations in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. I thought that these formations had been sustained by their respective formation cores to this day, but the moment I saw the coffin, I realized that the source of energy in the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect is no other than that coffin.

"I've no idea how it was done, but the spirit power inside the coffin was being transmitted to all of the formations in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect in some way. Considering that the one who set up all of the formations is the sect founder, it would stand to reason that the person inside the coffin is him," Chu Feng said.

“Does that mean that there’s a powerful treasure hidden inside the coffin?” Yu Sha asked.

“It could be a treasure or the sect founder’s own power,” Chu Feng replied.

“The sect founder’s own power? Does that mean that the sect founder isn’t dead yet?” Yu Sha remarked in astonishment.

“It’s likely that he’s already dead,” Chu Feng said.

“Dead? How could a dead person have such powerful spirit power?” Yu Sha asked.

“It sounds illogical, but I’m not making a blind guess over here. It was a thought that surfaced in my mind the moment I saw it, as if the coffin was relaying it to me,” Chu Feng replied.

“If he retains such great power after his death, just how powerful could he be when he was still alive?” Yu Sha asked in bewilderment.

Yu Sha was usually a composed person, but the current situation far surpassed her imagination that left her unable to remain calm.

Even those world spirits were powerful existences that could easily become powerhouses anywhere they went, but all of them chose to lower their heads before that coffin. If what was within the coffin was really just a corpse...

Yu Sha shuddered to imagine just how powerful the sect founder was.

It would be no exaggeration to say that the sect founder was someone who had reached the very peak of the world of cultivation!

Chapter 4797: Massacre Forbidden Art

“Could all those world spirits belong to the sect founder? That would mean that... he has contracted with so many world spirits all at once?”

Yu Sha found this incredibly hard to believe.

Typically speaking, a world spiritist would only be able to contract a single world spirit. Even amongst the talented, it was rare to see a person contracting two world spirits at once. Furthermore, those who managed to do

so would usually have extremely weak world spirits who weren't from the Seven Spirit Worlds.

However, in the army around the coffin, there were world spirits from all of the Seven Spirit Worlds except for the Asura Spirit World. On top of that, they were all frighteningly powerful too. Most likely, they were powerhouses even in their respective spirit worlds.

"I was already surprised by the fact that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect towered above the Holy Light Clan, but it seems like I'm still underestimating it after all. Now that I look at it, it's obvious that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect has already fallen into decline," Chu Feng said.

He wasn't able to meet the sect founder in person, but just through the coffin itself, he could safely say that the sect founder was the most powerful person he had met to date. If even a supposedly powerless corpse was able to wield such great power, he must have been a tremendous figure alive.

Just thinking about it made Chu Feng's blood gush rapidly. He was starting to feel a little hot-blooded.

It was his goal to reach the level of someone like the sect founder. No, to be more exact, he wanted to surpass the sect founder. That was his ultimate aim.

He was still weak at the moment, but he had confidence in himself. He believed that he could eventually reach the sect founder's level and surpass him. Just imagining himself wielding such great power in the future was enough to send a rush of exhilaration through his body.

If he could reach such a height, he would definitely be able to protect everyone he cared about.

However, he didn't lose sight of his true aim here. He might have triggered the fortuitous encounter, but he hadn't obtained it yet.

So, he started searching around the area.

However, despite putting all of his means into action, he wasn't able to sense any anomalies.

Boom boom boom!

Just as Chu Feng was starting to feel a little helpless, the ground began to shudder. This trembling wasn't just limited to the ground—to be more exact, the whole world was shaking.

This shaking was growing stronger with each passing moment, as if this world was on the verge of destruction.

“This feeling!!!”

The sudden change brought a look of fright onto Chu Feng's face. He could sense an extremely dangerous aura appearing inside the world. He had maneuvered his way around many treacherous places before but never had he felt an aura as dangerous as this.

Even the powerful world spirits weren't able to evoke such a feeling in him.

He felt like he was coming incomparably close to death. Just the smell was enough for him to see the utter devastation of the world.

“Chu Feng, what's wrong? Did you notice something?” Yu Sha asked worriedly.

“There's something very dangerous in here,” Chu Feng said.

Yu Sha started to feel a bit nervous. She could hear the fright in Chu Feng's voice.

She had known Chu Feng for some time now, and the two of them had gone through quite a few perils together. In her perception, Chu Feng was someone who could remain calm regardless of the adversity standing before him. This was the first time he had shown such deep fear.

Without a doubt, whatever that was lingering in the air was definitely a terrifying existence.

Hu!

A furious gale began stirring, and a spatial crack began appearing at the heart of the tempest. This crack swiftly glowed brightly as a blood-red aura leaked through it.

This blood-red aura carried a strong stench of blood. Chu Feng took only a slight whiff, but he felt that he was smelling condensation of the blood of billions instead.

More blood-red aura oozed out as the crack grew bigger, as if demons were descending upon the world. They swiftly diffused around the pure white world, dyeing everything red.

It was as if a terrifying era of darkness had fallen upon the world. A pure white world had turned into the state of a living hell.

Grar!

An even more terrifying voice that was reminiscent of the cries of billions of demons echoed in the air. Those who heard the voice would feel utterly creeped out, for this voice was able to directly affect one's mental state.

Even someone with a steadfast mind like Chu Feng also felt the impact of the voice. His heart began beating in a fluster, and he felt like he was going insane. **novel**(In

What was even more horrifying was the countless blood-red monsters that had started rushing out of the cracks. There were humans, monsters, and beasts amongst them, but all of them had their skin tore off, revealing the bloody horror that lay beneath their cover. They were all stitched together to form a humongous behemoth.

It was impossible to gauge the size of the behemoth, but as soon as it crawled through the cracks to enter this world, it immediately turned its sights toward Chu Feng and rushed over.

Sensing that things were going awry, Chu Feng immediately turned tail and ran. However, he was still under the effects of the monster's voice, which left him feeling so jittery that he couldn't even control his body properly.

Grar!

The monster released a terrifying cry that swiftly morphed into a blood-red aura before seeping into Chu Feng's body. Due to its humongous size, it took a while for it to fully seep in,

By the time Chu Feng slowly regained his consciousness, the world around him had already reverted back to its initial pure white color. The red aura and the terrifying monster were already nowhere to be seen. Even the spatial cracks created by the monster had vanished too.

Chu Feng quickly checked his own condition and saw that he was completely unharmed.

“Was that really just an illusion?” Chu Feng murmured under his breath.

“Chu Feng, look! W-what’s that?”

All of a sudden, Chu Feng heard Yu Sha’s horrified voice coming from the World Spirit Space. He quickly turned his attention to the World Spirit Space, only to freeze in shock.

A humongous blood-red scroll had appeared in his World Spirit Space. It palpated as if it was a living benign with a heartbeat. There were three words written on it.

Massacre Forbidden Art!

Chapter 4798: Bonus Reward

“Massacre Forbidden Art?”

Chu Feng quickly projected his consciousness into the World Spirit Space to examine the blood-red scroll carefully. Thankfully, it seemed to just be a scroll. Other than its peculiarities, it didn’t feel dangerous at all.

It was certain that something was recorded on it, just that Chu Feng couldn’t open and read it. He also didn’t dare to handle it carelessly either. Given the huge phenomenon earlier on, there was no way this blood-red scroll was anything ordinary,

“Come out and receive your reward.”

All of a sudden, Chu Feng heard a familiar voice calling for him outside.

He quickly headed out and saw the massive monster and the monstrous elder he had met at the starting point of the Yinyang Withered Well Realm. They, too, had entered this pure white land.

It was just that Chu Feng couldn't help but think that there was something really unusual with the monstrous elder right now.

"Lad, congratulations on receiving the Massacre Forbidden Art. You should make sure not to reveal this to anyone, or else you'll surely lose your life," the monstrous elder said.

"Elder, what's the Massacre Forbidden Art? Why would it enter my Spirit World Space? Is it a martial technique or a world spiritist technique?" Chu Feng asked.

The phenomenon he had witnessed earlier was simply too massive that he couldn't rest at ease without knowing what the blood-red scroll was.

"Don't worry, it won't hurt you. It's nothing more than a formation. That being said, it goes without saying that it's no ordinary formation either. If you ever manage to assimilate it one day, you'll find that there are few in this world of cultivation who can hope to match you.

"However, you ought to know that it won't be easy to assimilate this formation too. Right now, you don't even have the qualification to comprehend it. In any case, the fact that you have gained its recognition means that my lord has recognized you as well," the monstrous elder said.

"Elder, does the esteemed person you speak of refer to the founder of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's not wrong, but it isn't exactly right either. Well, it's of little importance so you need not probe further. Just make sure not to tell anyone that the Massacre Forbidden Art is within you. This includes even the people whom you have absolute trust in. Otherwise, it'll bring harm not just upon yourself but those around you too," the monstrous elder said.

"Elder, what kind of formation is the Massacre Forbidden Art?" Chu Feng asked.

He could tell that it was a powerful formation based on what the monstrous elder was saying, and that only made him even more curious about it.

"Didn't I tell you that you would be almost unrivaled in the world of cultivation as long as you assimilate it? If such a day ever comes, you should remember to use it wisely. Here, this is a bonus for you," the monstrous elder said.

He took out his powerful horsetail whisk once more and flung it lightly. A ray of light shot out and pierced right into Chu Feng's head.

Chu Feng immediately crossed his leg and sat down on the floor.

The reward was a temporary increment in his intelligence. Knowing that the time he had was limited, Chu Feng was determined to make full use of this opportunity to unseal the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor and make a breakthrough.

As long as he could break just one more seal, he would be able to reach Martial Exalted level.

Looking at Chu Feng's earnest attitude, the monstrous elder smiled to himself before retracting his horsetail whisk. His figure flickered for a moment before vanishing along with the wind.

...

By this point, the aura Zuoqiu Yanliang had been bestowed with had already vanished for a while. Nevertheless, he still continued heading toward the location of the fortuitous encounter based on his memory.

Finally, he arrived at the destination.

It was a plain filled with runes on the ground, and a powerful aura lingered in the area. Other than these, there was nothing else of note here.

Despite so, Zuoqiu Yanliang was still confident that the fortuitous encounter was lying in wait for him here, and he was determined not to allow such an opportunity slip through his fingers.

However, there were simply no clues for him to work with here. No matter how he racked his brain, he was unable to figure out a way to bring out the fortuitous encounter. n)(0vEl&In

Soon, two hours had already passed, but he was still without gains. This left Zuoqiu Yanliang incredibly frustrated.

He had no idea that the fortuitous encounter he was looking for had already vanished due to Chu Feng.

Boom!

A loud rumbling suddenly echoed amidst empty space. Zuoqiu Yanliang quickly turned his head over to take a look, only to see ominous clouds crackling with lightning settling into the vicinity.

This was not ordinary lightning but Nine-colored Divine Lightning. It swiftly intersected with one another to form nine humongous lightning beasts that coiled amidst the storm clouds, shaking the surroundings with their deafening roar.

Their sheer size was so great that it was impossible to make out anything else in the sky except for these nine lightning beasts. Everything else looked insignificant in its presence, including Zuoqiu Yanliang.

“W-what are those? Is this a lightning phenomenon?”

The more Zuoqiu Yanliang assessed the nine beasts, the more terrified he became. His heart wouldn't stop palpating in unease.

As someone who possessed the Heavenly Bloodline, he would have to face a lightning tribulation every time he made a breakthrough. Thus, he was extremely familiar with the nine-colored lightning.

However, the nine-colored lightning that was in the sky at this very moment was something he had never seen before. To be exact, he had never seen such terrifying nine-colored lightning before.

He wasn't even sure if this was a lightning tribulation induced by the breakthrough of a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. The phenomenon was simply too frightening that it felt like the entire world was going to be destroyed in its face.

Zuoqiu Yanliang was certain that as long as the nine lightning beasts willed so, it would only take a mere instant for it to destroy the entire realm.

At the same time, the other disciples in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm also noticed the phenomenon in the sky too. Compared to how the other disciples were reacting, Zuoqiu Yanliang's response could already be described as calm.

Everyone else was basically shivering in utter fear, and some of them even peed their pants.

Everyone knew that the nine-colored lightning was the power wielded by possessors of the Heavenly Bloodline, but the knowledge of this fact did little to allay their fears. They felt that the world would really be destroyed at this rate.

Chapter 4799: Rank One Martial Exalted

Boom!

The terrifying nine-colored lightning soon fell from the sky and smashed a certain location in the Yinyang Withered Well Realm.

“It really is a lightning tribulation! Is it Chu Feng? Did he manage to make a breakthrough again? Goddamnit, did he manage to obtain his fortuitous encounter?”

Zuoqiu Yanliang’s complexion turned incredibly awful. He looked at the ground beneath him, where a fortuitous encounter was potentially waiting for him, but in the end, he gritted his teeth and quickly headed in the direction where the lightning bolt had fallen.

He was going to rush there to find Chu Feng. He felt that Chu Feng was the only one who could induce something of this scale.

Not even his younger brother was capable of something of this feat.

He was starting to get afraid of how quickly Chu Feng was making breakthroughs. Based on what he knew, Chu Feng was still incredibly weak when he first entered the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, but at this rate, it wouldn’t be long before he overtook him and his younger brother.

So, he had to get rid of Chu Feng right now so as to avoid any future problems.

Even though the nine-colored lightning had fallen very far away from him, he could still feel its terrifying energy even from where he was. The energy seemed to linger in the air, not dissipating at all.

It didn't take long for Zuoqiu Yanliang to arrive at the desert, but surprisingly, the desert didn't halt his advancement as it did with Chu Feng. It acted like a perfectly normal desert, allowing him to pass through it soon enough.

Soon, Zuoqiu Yanliang arrived at the stone of forests.

Just the lightning that was still crackling above, he could tell that Chu Feng was still in the area and had yet to leave. However, he could tell that there was something amiss with the forest of stones. He examined the area, but he was unable to decipher the forest of stone or figure out where Chu Feng was.

So, he decided to let Xia Yan, Li Muzhi, and the others out to bait him.

At this point, Xia Yan and the others still didn't know what was going on. As soon as Xia Yan was released, she began hurling insults at Zuqoiu Yanliang.

However, Zuoqiu Yanliang unhesitatingly wielded his Exalted Armament and stabbed it right into Xia Yan's shoulder.

"Zuoqiu Yanliang, what are you doing?!"

Seeing this, Li Muzhi immediately bellowed furiously.

While he knew that Zuoqiu Yanliang wouldn't let them off, he still felt incredibly angry upon seeing the latter make a move. They were disciples of the same sect here!

The next moment, Zuoqiu Yanliang pulled out his Exalted Armament and stabbed the sword directly into Li Muzhi's throat. This scene made everyone's face turn pale in horror.

They thought that Zuoqiu Yanliang was really intending to end their lives till he started shouting at the forest of stones.

"Come out, Chu Feng. I'll take their lives if you continue hiding in there!"

By this point, Xia Yan finally understood the reason behind Zuoqiu Yanliang's sudden aggression. It turned out that Chu Feng was hiding in the forest of stones, and Zuoqiu Yanliang was intending to use them to lure him out.

...

Chu Feng was still inside the pure white world. He had successfully made a breakthrough to rank one Martial Exalted level by this point, and he found that he could finally open his World Spirit Space and borrow Yu Sha's powers now.

Nevertheless, his eyes still remained tightly shut because the intelligence boost granted to him by the monstrous elder was still present. He wanted to make use of this opportunity to further unseal the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor and raise his cultivation to rank two Martial Exalted level.

He was very clear on what he had just gone through, and the energy definitely didn't just increase his enlightenment. What he had undergone earlier wasn't just any ordinary lightning tribulation but the terrifying Divine Lightning Tribulation.

Chu Feng had been through a Divine Lightning Tribulation once, and it took him a great deal of effort in order to overcome it. But this time around, things had gone much more smoothly. It was not due to Chu Feng's strength but that the energy in his body had helped him neutralize it.

It was just unfortunate that as the energy dissipated, he was still unable to unseal the next layer of the Hidden Dragon Soul Armor. His cultivation had stopped at rank one Martial Exalted level.

"Ah, what a pity."

Chu Feng sighed deeply before opening his eyes. Overall, he was still overjoyed by his gains. Not only did he manage to enter Martial Exalted level, but he could also sense that the Lightning Mark, Lightning Armor, and Four Symbols Divine Power were still present.

In other words, he could still raise his cultivation level by three ranks despite having reached Martial Exalted level, meaning that he could rival a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator.

Putting aside the experts of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, there were very few experts of this level in the entire Holy Light Galaxy. He had already grown to become a figure who would tower over the entire Holy Light Galaxy.

Hu!

All of a sudden, Chu Feng's surroundings began to distort. He knew that this was a sign that he was about to be teleported out of the pure white world.

The area around him began to shatter, and he found himself brought back to the real world.

He was still standing in the same position as before, staring straight ahead at the forest of stones.

"That is..."

But soon, Chu Feng noticed Zuoqiu Yanliang, Xia Yan, Li Muzhi, Song Xi, Tu Yuanyuan, and the others. Zuoqiu Yanliang was holding onto a sword, bellowing for him to come out.

At the same time, there were many injuries on the bodies of Xia Yan, Li Muzhi, and the others too.

"Zuoqiu Yanliang, you're really courting death!" Chu Feng roared furiously.

Those words caught not just the attention of Zuoqiu Yanliang but Xia Yan and the others too. They had no idea where Chu Feng had appeared from, but the latter was standing not too far away from them.

"Run, Chu Feng!" Xia Yan shouted.

However, there was no way Zuoqiu Yanliang would give Chu Feng the chance to escape. He swung the Exalted Armament in his hand down upon Chu Feng, seeking to claim his life.

Shoosh! *no ve*)Lb-In

However, Chu Feng's silhouette suddenly vanished. When he reappeared once more, he was already standing right in front of Zuoqiu Yanliang.

He thrust his palm straight into Zuoqiu Yanliang's head.

"You!!!"

Zuoqiu Yanliang was utterly dumbstruck by Chu Feng's incredible speed. Taking a closer look, he could see the Lightning Mark, Lightning Armor, and a powerful Divine Power wrapping around Zuoqiu Yanliang's body, enhancing his prowess.

Right now, Chu Feng's cultivation was at rank four Martial Exalted level.

"Zuoqiu Yanliang, I gave you a chance but you didn't know how to cherish it."

Chu Feng abruptly tightened his palm, and a terrifying 'pop' sound echoed. Chu Feng had actually popped Zuoqiu Yanliang's head.

Zuoqiu Yanliang's body fell over and plopped onto the ground. He was dead.

Chapter 4800: Aligning the Testimonies

"Chu Feng, you!!!"

Song Xi, Zhao Shi, Tu Yuanyuan, and the others were stunned by that sight.

That was Zuoqiu Yanliang, the grandson of the vice sectmaster! Even though they agreed that Zuoqiu Yanliang deserved death, they didn't think that Chu Feng should have killed him because of the consequences.

Zuoqiu Youyu and the vice sectmaster would never let this matter go.

Zuoqiu Youyu was already frightening as he was, but the vice sectmaster was the second-in-charge of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, beneath only the sectmaster herself. They were completely helpless against such an existence...

In comparison, Chu Feng looked much calmer. Despite having killed someone, he looked completely fine as if nothing had happened. After popping off Zuoqiu Yanliang's head, he began channeling his spirit power to set up a recovery formation.

After that, he fed Song Xi and the others recovery medicine. It was only after their injuries and suffering alleviated by a fair bit did he finally begin to release them from their ropes.

While the rope was a powerful treasure, its binding effect was only effective on those who were being tied up. Due to that, Chu Feng was able to easily release it from the outside.

"This rope seems like quite a valuable treasure."

Chu Feng pocketed the rope without much hesitation. Following that, he moved on to stow away all of the treasures in Zuoqiu Yanliang's Cosmos Sack.

He made sure to disguise the treasures before concealing them under multiple layers of barriers. It wouldn't be easy for anyone other than himself to find all of the treasures on him.

He had to be additionally careful in case Zuoqiu Youyu insisted that he was the one who killed Zuoqiu Yanliang and wanted to search his body. If these items were really found on him, it would be incriminating evidence enough to warrant his death.

But at the same time, there was simply too much good stuff on Zuoqiu Yanliang that Chu Feng didn't want to let it go to waste. Besides, he was confident in his hiding ability too.

So, while what he was doing was dangerous, it was a calculated risk.

"Chu Feng, you sure are formidable. Not only do you possess the Heavenly Bloodline, but you also have a Divine Power. On top of that, you're able to unleash those powers to such an extent at Martial Exalted level. It's mind-blowing for me to see a rank one Martial Exalted level cultivator like you defeating a rank three Martial Exalted level cultivator," Xia Yan said.

As Chu Feng's cultivation had reverted back to rank one Martial Exalted level after killing Zuoqiu Yanliang, Xia Yan was able to figure out that this was Chu Feng's current cultivation level.

However, that only made them even more impressed with Chu Feng.

"I finally understand why you were able to consecutively break Lord Dugu Lingtian's records. You're really amazing!"

Even though Xia Yan hadn't fully recovered from her injuries, she looked like she had completely forgotten about her pain. Her compliment for Chu Feng wouldn't stop, and her eyes looked like they were gleaming with admiration.

"That's too scary! Is there such a huge gap between us? If I think back to the time that I first saw you in the Dragon Clan... Eyy, it looks like I'll never be able to defeat you anymore."

Li Muzhi looked at Chu Feng with complicated feelings. While he did lose to Chu Feng in a battle of spirit power back at the Dragon Clan, his cultivation was at least far above that of Chu Feng. Even after Chu Feng joined the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, he was still the stronger one here.

Yet, in the blink of an eye, Chu Feng had already surpassed him.

The incredible speed of his growth made Li Muzhi doubt his own talents as he wondered if he was really worthy of being deemed a prodigy or not.

"You're flattering me. I'm not as formidable as you're putting me out to be. If I really was, I wouldn't have to flee after being assaulted by Zuoqiu Youyu, putting all of you in such a dangerous position," Chu Feng said.

“It was indeed Zuoqiu Youyu’s doing! I knew he was the culprit! Speaking of which, Chu Feng, it looks like you’ve managed to obtain your fortuitous encounter. For some reason, the auras bestowed upon us dissipated some time ago,” Xia Yan said.

“My apologies.”

Chu Feng took a step back and clasped his fist at Xia Yan.

“What are you doing? You just saved us! Why are you suddenly apologizing to me now?”

Xia Yan was confused.

“The fortuitous encounter I obtained here has something to do with the rest of you. Once I obtain it, your fortuitous encounters would disappear correspondingly,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah! Does that mean that Zuoqiu Youyu would be leaving this place empty-handed too?” Xia Yan asked.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng replied with a nod.

“Hahaha! It’s no wonder why Zuoqiu Yanliang was unable to figure out where the fortuitous encounter was despite having arrived at the destination. It turns out that you were the one pulling the strings! Isn’t this good news? There’s no need for you to apologize to me!” Xia Yan exclaimed with a smile.

“But your fortuitous encounter...”

Before Chu Feng could finish his words. Xia Yan burst into laughter once more.

“Hahaha, what are you so worried about? You dumbo! We were captured by Zuoqiu Youyu right after you were assaulted. Even if you weren’t around, I wouldn’t have a chance to obtain the fortuitous encounter. Oh yeah, how did you manage to avoid Zuoqiu Youyu’s assault?” Xia Yan asked.

“It has something to do with the fortuitous encounter too.”

Chu Feng began filling Xia Yan and the others in on the details.

“Woah, you sure are incredible. It turns out that the talented person the ugly old man spoke of was referring to you! That really scared me! I thought that he was talking about Zuoqiu Youyu!” Xia Yan remarked.

Boom!

All of a sudden, the surroundings began to tremble. The clouds billowed as a massive gate surfaced in the sky.

“That’s the gate to leaving this realm. It looks like time’s up. We’re going to be forcefully evicted from the grounds.”

Chu Feng and the others could feel a force coming from the gate pulling them in.

“Li Muzhi, Zhao Shi, Song Xi, and Tu Yuanyuan, listen to me. We need to align our testimonies. It was Zuoqiu Youyu and Zuoqiu Yanliang who captured us first, but later on, Zuoqiu Yanliang stumbled upon a fortuitous encounter that disallows him from bringing anyone else with him, so he was forced to let us out. He was intending to kill us, but he was unexpectedly swooped away by the power of the fortuitous encounter. So, we don’t know whether he’s still alive or dead right now,” Xia Yan told Li Muzhi and the others.

“You’re right. We have to align our testimonies. We have to insist that it was Zuoqiu Yanliang who let us down first, and whatever that happens to him has nothing to do with us,” Li Muzhi said.

Sogn Xi and Tu Yuanyuan also quickly nodded in agreement.

“It was Chu Feng who saved our lives today. I’m just going to put it out here. Anyone who dares betray Chu Feng and reveal the fact that he was the one who killed Zuoqiu Yanliang, I’ll make sure that he dies a tragic death!” Xia Yan emphasized.

There was murderous intent in her eyes.